9503 bb 35

A BRIEF

HISTORY

OF

ENGLAND,

BOTH IN

CHURCH *and* STATE;

By way of

QUESTION and ANSWER:

Faithfully extracted from

The moſt Authentic HISTORIES and RECORDS:

Now carefully reviſed and improv'd, in a

SECOND EDITION

By JOHN LINDSAY,

———*Juvat integros accedere fonteis*
Atque haurire. LUCRET.

LONDON:

Printed for T. GARDNER, at *Gowley*'s Head in the *Strand*; W. OWEN at *Homer*'s Head near *Temple*-Bar; and J. FULLER, at the *Bible* in [illegible]



PREFACE.

IT was not an Affectation of appearing in the great Herd of Modern Authors, nor any Inclination to engage in Diſputes with other Writers, that firſt induced me to imploy my Pen on this Subject. But, obſerving with what Eagerneſs

the Hiſtory of *England* had been call'd for, of late Years, by People of all Ranks and Conditions, as if they had a more than ordinary Deſire to be inform'd of the Tranſactions of their Forefathers, which had raiſed the Reputation of this Country ſo high in the Annals of Fame, I thought it a neceſſary Piece of Service to my Fellow-Subjects, to give them as full and clear an Account of this Hiſtory, as they can reaſonably expect to receive within the Compaſs of ſo ſhort an *Abridgement*.

What a Multitude of large Volumes our many Hiſtorians have publiſhed, is generally complain'd

plain'd of: But the juſter Cauſe of Complaint is, that ſuch a Vein of Affection or Prejudice, or ſome unhappy Byaſs of Party, ſo generally runs through the moſt of them, that, the beſt Judges of our true *Britiſh* Conſtitution are ſenſible, there is room enough ſtill left for an able, diſintereſted, and faithful Hand, to compile a new Body of *Engliſh* Hiſtory, from our authentic Records, and other Vouchers, to out-ſhine the faireſt of thoſe which have yet appeared! For, among ſuch a Variety of Authors, where the Characters of the moſt eminent Perſons are painted in different Colours, and the moſt momentous Tranſactions repreſented with a Train of Circumſtances

frequently contradictory; to find out the Truth between them, and form a juſt Judgment of the Matter, requires not only a competent Capacity, but much better Opportunities of Information, than the Multitude of common Readers are ordinarily bleſt with.

Hence, it evidently proceeds, that ſo many of our People, by reading only ſome one favourite *Hiſtory-Monger*, have been unwarily (if not deſignedly!) drawn into falſe Notions, not only of Hiſtorical Facts, but even of the very Nature of our CONSTITUTION itſelf.

Towards the preventing theſe Miſtakes, it muſt therefore be of

of general Uſe, to draw the moſt material Tranſactions into ſo narrow a Compaſs, that every Reader may, as it were in one View, conceive a clear Idea of them, without the Expence and Trouble of purchaſing and peruſing many large Books, interrupting his Thoughts with impertinent Digreſſions, or burthening his Memory with Matters of leſs conſiderable Importance. And no Method can be more proper for the doing this, than by Way of *Queſtion* and *Anſwer*; whereby our Youth may be early introduced, and even *Catechized*, into a competent Knowledge of their own Country; (the want of which has often expoſed them to the Ridicule of the more learned

Foreigners, in their Travels abroad!) And, at the ſame Time, thoſe of deeper Reading, may uſe the ſame, as a brief Remembrancer of what they have formerly made themſelves acquainted with.

I am not inſenſible, that ſomething of the ſame Kind has already appeared, from another Hand: But, as I have no Inclination to depreciate another Man's Labours, ſo neither has that Author (while the Public Good is his principal Aim) any Reaſon to be offended with me for treading in the ſame Steps: Eſpecially if I have any way made an Improvement of it, for the Benefit of thoſe to whom both

both of us expreſs our Ambition to be ſerviceable.

Whether I have made any Improvement or not, others are now to judge. But I muſt beg Leave to advertiſe the Reader, that, in order to that End, I have not only conſulted the now *moſt celebrated*, but alſo the moſt Authentic, *Engliſh Hiſtorians*, Ancient and Modern; and, wherever I met with any material Diſagreement in their Relations, have extracted That only which I found ſupported by the beſt Authority: And as, for Brevity Sake, I have not collected any thing that is light, trivial, or impertinent; ſo neither have I omitted any thing that is of Importance, towards

a competent Knowledge of the Hiſtory of our Country.

I have therefore, throughout the whole, intermixed a general View of the Hiſtory of the CHURCH with that of the STATE; the one having ſuch a near Relation to the other, that, without a competent Underſtanding of both, it will be difficult to attain the Knowledge of either: Eſpecially with regard to our *Reformation*; which is one of the moſt important Paſſages in all the *Engliſh* Hiſtory.

And, to render this Performance, (ſhort as it is) ſtill more eaſy to the Peruſal and Memory of every Reader, I have not only prefix'd the *Contents* of the ſeveral

ral Sections, with a *Chronological Table* of the moſt remarkable Events, (ſhewing in one View, their reſpective Diſtance in Time, down to the preſent Year 1763) but have alſo added a very large and compleat *Alphabetical Index*; which will explain the Titles and Names of the principal Perſons, as well as point to the moſt material Things, herein treated of.

Upon the whole, I muſt beſpeak the Reader's Juſtice, as well as Candour, that, if he finds any thing here not exactly agreeable to the Notions he may have imbibed, from the Peruſal of any particular Writer (how celebrated ſoever) on the ſame Subject, he will be pleaſed to ſuſ-

pend his Cenſures, 'till he has thoroughly informed himſelf, which of us is ſupported with the beſt Authority.

And now, as I have had the Comfort to ſee my former Attempts in the Service of my Country, look'd upon with no ſmall Degrees of Favour, and particularly with regard to this of the true *Engliſh Conſtitution*: (a large Impreſſion of which, has been generouſly diſpoſed of, and promoted by thoſe, whoſe Judgment and Approbation, I have the moſt Reaſon to eſteem:) So I am thereby the more encourag'd to offer up to the Public, this New Edition of the ſame, (which has been frequently and importunately call'd for) with

with ſuch occaſional additions and Improvements, as were thought proper on a freſh Review; not forgetting the good old Rule for the faithful Relation of Hiſtorical Facts, *Ne quid falſi dicere audeat, ne quid veri non audeat.* CICERO.

17 *Jan.* 1763. *J. L.*

THE

CONTENTS.

Page

OF ENGLAND in general — 1
Of the antient Government under the *Romans.* — — 3
——— under the *Saxons* — 6
Of the Monarchs of *England* — 10
—— of the SAXON Line
I. Egbert — — *ib.*
II. Ethelwulf — — 11
III. Ethelbald — — 12
IV. Ethelbert — *ib.*
V. Ethelred — — *ib.*
VI. Alfred — — 13
VII. Edward, *the elder* — 14
VIII. Athelſtan — *ib.*
IX. Edmund — — — *ib.*
X. Edred — — — 15
XI. Edwy — — — *ib.*
XII. Edgar — — — 16
XIII. Edward, *the younger* *ib.*
XIV. Ethelred II. — 17
XV. Edmund, *Ironſide* — *ib.*
—— of the DANISH Line — 19
XVI. Canute — — — 21

XVII.

XVII. Harold — — 22
XVIII. Hardicnute — *ib.*
— of the SAXONS again
XIX. Edward, *the Confeſſor* 23
XX. Harold II. — — 24
— of the NORMAN Line
XXI. 1 William, *the Conqueror* 25
XXII. 2 William, *Rufus* — 30
XXIII. 3 Henry I. — 32
XXIV. 4 Stephen — — 36
— of the Family of PLANTAGENET
XXV. 5 Henry II. — 38
XXVI. 6 Richard I. — 42
XXVII. 7 John — — 46
XXVIII. 8 Henry III. — 52
XXIX. 9 Edward I. — 60
XXX. 10 Edward II. — 65
XXXI. 11 Edward III. 73
XXXII. 12 Richard II. — 85
XXXIII. 13 Henry IV. — 96
XXXIV. 14 Henry V. — 105
XXXV. 15 Henry VI. — 110
XXXVI. 16 Edward IV. - 124
XXXVII. 17 Edward V. - 132
XXXVIII. 18 Richard III. 135
— of the Family of TUDOR
XXXIX. 19 Henry VII. - 141
XL. 20 Henry VIII. — 149

XLI. 21 Edward VI. — 170
XLII. 22 Mary — — 179
XLIII. 23 Elizabeth — 191
— of the Family of STUART
XLIV. 24 James I. — — 220
XLV. 25 Charles I. — 230
XLVI. 26 Charles II. — 280
XLVII. 27 James II. — 324



A brief

A brief CHRONOLOGICAL COMPUTATION of the principal Events mention'd in this *Abridgement*; ſhewing in one View, their reſpective Diſtance in Time, down to the preſent Year, 1763.

Years.

SINCE the firſt landing of the *Romans* here, under *Julius Cæſar* 1818

Since the *Romans* Abdicated the Government of *Britain* 1353

Since the firſt Settlement of the *Saxons* in *Kent* 1306

Since the Arrival of *Auſtin* the Monk, to convert the *Saxons* here 1166

Since the Eſtabliſhment of the *Saxon* Monarchy in *England* 936

Since the Foundation of the Univerſity at *Oxford* 877

Since the Maſſacre of the *Danes* in *England* 761

Since

	Years.
Since the Conqueſt of *England*, by *William* the *Norman*	697
Since the Acceſſion of *William* II.	676
Since the Acceſſion of *Henry* I.	663
Since the Acceſſion of *Stephen*	628
Since the Acceſſion of King *Henry* II.	609
Since his Conqueſt of *Ireland*	592
Since the Foundation of *London-Bridge* with Stone	587
Since the Acceſſion of King *Richard* I.	574
Since *London* was incorporated	574
Since the Acceſſion of *John*	564
Since his vile Submiſſion of the Crown to the Pope	550
Since his *Magna Charta*	548
Since the Acceſſion of *Henry* III.	547
Since *Wales* ſubmitted to *England*	526
Since the ſolemn Confirmation of *Magna Charta*	510
Since the Commons were firſt admitted to Parliament	499
Since the Acceſſion of King *Edward* I.	491
Since the Creation of the firſt *Engliſh* Prince of *Wales*	462

Since

	Years.
Since the Acceſſion of King *Edward* II.	456
Since the Acceſſion of King *Edward* III.	436
Since *Berwick* was annex'd to *England*	430
Since our Kings firſt aſſumed the Title and Arms of *France*	423
Since the Inſtitution of the Garter	413
Since the Acceſſion of King *Richard* II.	386
Since the Acceſſion of *Henry* IV.	364
Since the Acceſſion of *Henry* V.	351
Since the Acceſſion of *Henry* VI.	341
Since the Acceſſion of King *Edward* IV.	303
Since the firſt Uſe of Printing, in *England*	299
Since the Acceſſion of King *Edward* V.	280
Since the Uſurpation of *Richard* III.	280
Since the Acceſſion of King *Henry* VII.	278
Since the Diſcovery of *America* by *Columbus*	271

Since

Years.

Since the Acceſſion of King *Henry* VIII. 254

Since the Pope's Power in *England* was aboliſh'd 229

Since *Wales* was incorporated with *England* 229

Since the Riſe of the *Jeſuits* and *Preſbyterians* 223

Since *Ireland* was made a Kingdom 221

Since the opening the Council at *Trent* 218

Since the Acceſſion of King *Edward* VI. 217

Since the Acceſſion of Queen *Mary* 210

Since the Acceſſion of Queen *Elizabeth* 205

Since the Queen of *Scots* flew to her for Protection 195

Since that Queen was put to Death here 177

Since the Defeat of the *Spaniſh Armada* 175

Since the Acceſſion of King *James* I. 160

Since the Gun-powder Treaſon 158

Since

	Years.
Since the firſt Inſtitution of Baronets	152
Since the *New-River* Water was brought into *London*	149
Since the *Dutch* maſſacred the *Engliſh* in *Amboyna*.	140
Since the Acceſſion of King *Charles* I.	138
Since the *Iriſh* Maſſacre	122
Since the Commencement of the open Rebellion in *England*	122
Since the Martyrdom of Archbiſhop *Laud*	119
Since the Martyrdom of King *Charles* I.	115
Since the Acceſſion of King *Charles* II.	115
Since the Martyrdom of the great *Montroſe*	113
Since the fatal Battle at *Worceſter*	113
Since *Oliver* was made Protector	110
Since his Death	105
Since King *Charles* the 2d's Glorious Reſtoration	103
Since the great Plague in *London*	98
Since the great Fire in *London*	97
Since *Oates*'s Plot	85

	Years
Since the *Rye-house* Plot	80
Since the Acceſſion of King *James* II.	78
Since the Revolution	75



ERRATA.

In the HISTORY.

PAGE 73, l. 26, *read*, 1326, l. 27, *read*, 1327.
p. 89, l. 12 and 13, *read*, and *Lancaſter*'s Son, the Earl of *Derby*.
p. 102, l. 27, *read*, the young Heir.
p. 111, l. 23 and 24, *read*, *Scotland* aſſiſted.
p. 218, l. 18, *read*, Parity.
p. 252, l. 21. *read*, once in three.
p. 253. l. 16, *read*, from the Houſe.
p. 306, l. 23, *read*, to waive.

In the INDEX.

Covenanters] to be a diſtinct Paragraph, and the References to follow in order.
Judas] inſtead of *Judias*.

A BRIEF HISTORY OF ENGLAND.

Of ENGLAND *in general.*

Q. WHAT is the Country which is called *England?*

A. The Southern and more conſiderable Part of the famous Iſland of *Great Britain*; the chief City of which is *London.*

Q. How is *England* ſituated?

A. Between the Degrees of Longitude 16 and 22, parallel with *Britany* and *Normandy* in *France*: And between 50 and 56 of Northern Latitude, parallel with *Flanders*, *Zealand*, *Holland*, *Lower Saxony*, and *Denmark.*

Q. Of what Shape is *England?*

A. Triangular; the Points of which are *Berwick* to the North, *Sandwich* to the Eaſt, and the *Land's End* to the Weſt.

Q. What is the Dimenſion of it?

A. Its longeſt Side, from *Berwick* to the *Land's-End*, is about 386 Miles; from thence to *Sandwich* 279; from thence again to *Berwick* 280; and the Perpendicular, from *Berwick* to *Portſmouth* 320. So that the Compaſs of the whole (by reaſon of the many Bays and Promontories) is computed about 1300 Miles. but much more by Meaſure.

Q. What Proportion does *England* bear to other Countries?

A. It is reckoned five Times as big as the *Spaniſh Netherlands*; almoſt ten Times as big as the *Dutch Netherlands*; leſs than all *Italy* by almoſt one Half; in proportion to *France*, as 30 is to 82; and about a Thouſandth Part of the whole Globe.

Q. What Seas are its Boundaries?

A. The *German* Ocean on the Eaſt, towards *Flanders*, *Holland*, *Germany*, and *Denmark*; the *Iriſh* Sea on the Weſt, towards *Ireland*; and the Channel on the South, towards *France*.

Q. How is it bounded on the North?

A. By the Rivers *Tweed* and *Solway*, and the *Chiviot* Hills; by which it is divided from *Scotland*.

Q. Whence had *England* its Name?

A. From the *Angles*, a People of the *Lower-Saxony*; who poſſeſſed themſelves of the greateſt Part of it, about the Year 585.

Q. Then theſe *Angles* were not the firſt Inhabitants of this Country, nor *England* its original Name?

A. No.

A. No. The Country had of old been called ſometimes *Albion*, but more commonly *Britain*: From which latter the principal Inhabitants were generally denominated *Britons*; though their proper Name, in their own Tongue, was *Cumri*, as their Deſcendants, the *Welſh*, do call themſelves to this Day.

Q. How then did the *Angles* get ſo much Footing here?

A. Frequent Quarrels between the *Britons* and their Neighbours, (the *Scots* and *Picts*, who inhabited the Northern Parts of this Iſland,) together with their unhappy Diviſions among themſelves, gave Occaſion to *Julius Cæſar* to tranſport his Army from *Gaul* into *Kent*, about 55 Years before *Chriſt*'s Birth; where he got ſuch Footing, as enabled the *Romans* afterwards to ſubdue the greateſt Part of this Iſland. But, upon the Decline of that Empire, the *Britons*, being grevioufly harraſſed by the *Scots* and *Picts*, and quite deſerted by the *Romans*, unadviſedly called in the *Saxons* to their Aid: Who, bringing over ſeveral Bodies of *Saxons*, *Angles*, and *Jutes*, from the Northern Parts of *Germany*, drove the poor *Britons* out of their own Country.

Of the ancient Gorvernment of of BRITAIN *under the* ROMANS.

Q. WHAT was the Government of the ancient *Britons?*

A. It is impoſſible to give any clear Account of thoſe dark Times. The firſt certain Notice we have of them is from *Cæſar* himſelf; who informs us, that the *Britons* were then divided into ſeveral petty Kingdoms, inſomuch that he

was encountered at once by four Kings in *Kent*: But they had here no Notion of a Republic or Commonwealth so early.

Q. Were they all Sovereign Princes, or had they not some one Supreme Head over all?

A. They all seem to have had Sovereign Authority in their respective Dominions, as other Princes had at first by the mere Light and Law of Nature. But, when they were attacked by a Foreign Enemy, they agreed to unite their Forces under the Conduct of *Cassibeline*, or *Cassivelaun*) a warlike Prince among the *Trinobantes*.

Q. Where was his Dominion?

A. On the North Side of the *Thames*, opposite to *Kent* and *Surry*. But, in truth, he had no proper Dominion of his own there. For 'tis said, he had murdered his own Brother *Lud* (or *Immanuentius*) and usurped the Throne, in prejudice of his surviving Sons.

Q. How was this resented among the *Britons*?

A. With just Indignation. For, it caused continual Wars against him: And, upon *Cæsar*'s Approach, with Success, the *Trinobantes* were glad to put themselves under his Protection; desiring his Assistance against the Usurper, in favour of their Prince *Androgius* (or *Mandubratius*) then in Exile.

Q. And how did *Cæsar* act?

A. Cæsar's other Affairs not allowing him to pursue the Advantages he had obtained, he was forced to leave *Britain*, after he had reduced *Cassibeline* to the Condition of paying a Tribute, and securing the Succession to the right Heir.

Q. Did he succeed accordingly?

A. Androgius accompanied *Cæsar* to *Rome*, and was slain at *Pharsalia*. But *Theomantius*, his

his Brother and next Heir, was received as their undoubted Sovereign, on the Death of *Caſſibeline*.

Q. And how was the Succeſſion continued?

A. The *Britons*, for ſome Time, being free from Foreign Invaſions, their Kings ſucceeded, in a direct Line, without Interruption, 'till the Emperor *Claudius* reduced moſt of them under the Government of *Roman* Lieutenants, (in which State they continued about 400 Years; though not without various brave Struggles for their ancient Liberties;) and *London* was made a Colony by the *Romans*.

Q. What was the State of Religion here in thoſe Times?

A. In the earlieſt Ages they were mere Pagan Idolaters. Their Directors, in Matters of Religion, were the *Druids*; who were not only their Prieſts and Prophets, but the Judges and Arbiters alſo of their Civil Rights and Properties.

Q. When was the Goſpel firſt preached among them?

A. Undoubtedly, ſoon after the Apoſtolical Age; if not in Perſon by St. *Paul* himſelf.

Q. Who was the firſt Chriſtian King?

A. Lucius, a *Briton*; who, though not ſo early as is commonly ſuppoſed, was yet for certain before the Converſion of the Emperor *Conſtantine*.

Q. What Countenance did Chriſtianity meet with here, under the *Romans*?

A. It did not meet with any Oppoſition from them here, 'till the Emperor *Dioclefian*'s Time: When, a terrible Perſecution being every where ſet on foot, there were many eminent Martyrs in *Britain*; the firſt of whom was *St. Alban* of *Verulam*, near the Town now called by his Name.

Q. What elſe happened remarkable in this Period?

A. The *Romans* being forced to recal their Legions, for the Defence of the Empire againſt the *Goths*, and other Invaders, and the Uſurper *Maximus* having drawn out the beſt of the *Britiſh* Soldiers, to ſupport him in his Deſigns on the Continent, the reſt were expoſed to the Inſults of the *Scots* and *Picts*, and other Foreigners. Upon which they applied to *Rome* for Succour; but were plainly told, there was none to be had from thence: And, at laſt, the Emperor *Honorius*, having by a proper Abdication, freely diſcharged them of their Allegiance, *A. D.* 410. they were expoſed to the freſh Incurſions of all their Neighbours.

Of the Government under the Saxons.

Q. DID the *Saxons* come at firſt into this Iſland as Friends?

A. No. They had made ſeveral hoſtile Deſcents upon *Britain*, before they were invited over as Auxiliaries.

Q. What then could ſo infatuate the *Britons*, as to put themſelves into the Power of ſuch dangerous Enemies?

A. Vortigern, an aſpiring Prince of the *Silures*, is ſaid to have unjuſtly obtained the Kingdom of the *Dammonii*, (that is now called *Devonſhire* and *Cornwall*) in prejudice of *Ambroſius*: And, rather to ſtrengthen himſelf in his Uſurpation, than to guard his Country againſt the Incurſions of their Neighbours, he reſolved upon this deſperate Courſe. He calls to the *Saxons*, for Aid againſt the *Scots* and *Picts*: And theſe ravenous Foreigners, coming over, at firſt with a ſmall Body, under the Command of *Hengiſt* and *Horſa*, were ſettled in *Kent*, about *A. D.* 452. And, being

being ſoon reinforced, out of *Germany*, by great Numbers of their barbarous Countrymen, they drove the Enemy before them; and thereupon had larger Territories aſſigned them. Thus, by Degrees, growing more powerful, they ſecretly made a Peace with the *Scots* and *Picts*, and (as might reaſonably be expected, being Aliens both to their Religion and Property,) from Auxiliaries became themſelves the worſt of Enemies to the *Britons*; whom they now continually harraſſed with Fire and Sword, 'till at laſt they got their whole Country into their own Hands.

Q. What became of the poor *Britons*.

A. They retired partly Southward to *Bretagne* in *France*, and partly Weſtward, into the mountainous Country now called *Wales*.

Q. Did they not ſtruggle, at leaſt, for their Liberty and Property?

A. Yes, very vigorouſly. For, *Ambroſius* recovering his Sovereign Power, the *Britons*, under his Conduct, made Head againſt the Enemy, and defeated them in ſeveral Engagements; ſo that their Affairs ſeemed to take a happy Turn, under him, 'till he loſt his Life in a Battle: And ſo they continued to do afterwards, for ſome Time, under his great Succeſſor *Arthur*; though the *Saxons* prevailed at laſt, chiefly, by Means of the Traytor *Modred*'s invading his Uncle's Throne, *A. D.* 542. and thereby dividing the *Britons* among themſelves, to the Ruin of their Country.

Q. How did the *Saxons* ſettle themſelves here?

A. They divided the Country into an Heptarchy, or Seven Kingdoms: Which were, I. That of *Kent*, founded by *Hengiſt*, *A. D.* 457, whereof the chief City was *Canterbury*. II. That of the *South-Saxons*, (containing the Counties now called *Suſſex* and *Surry*) founded by

Ella, *A. D.* 490; its chief City *Chicheſter*. III. That of the *Weſt Saxons*, (containing *Berkſhire*, *Hampſhire*, *Wiltſhire*, *Dorſetſhire*, *Somerſetſhire*, *Devonſhire*, and *Cornwall*) founded by *Cerdic*, *A. D.* 519; its chief City *Wincheſter*. IV. That of the *Eaſt-Saxons*, (containing *Eſſex*, *Middleſex*, and Part of *Hertfordſhire*) founded by *Ercenwyn*, *A. D.* 527; its chief City *London*. V. That of the *North-Humbrians*, (containing *Yorkſhire*, *Lancaſhire*, *Weſtmorland*, *Cumberland*, *Durham*, *Northumberland*, and the South Part of *Scotland*, to the Firth of *Edinburgh*) founded by *Ida*, *A. D.* 547; its chief City *York*. VI. That of the *Eaſt-Angles*, (containing *Norfolk*, *Suffolk*, *Cambridgeſhire*, and the Iſle of *Ely*) founded by *Uffa* or *Offa*, *A. D.* 575; its chief City *Bury*. And VII. That of *Mercia*, or the *Middle-Angles*, (containing the Counties of *Oxford*, *Glouceſter*, *Hereford*, *Worceſter*, *Warwick*, *Stafford*, *Salop*, *Cheſter*, *Derby*, *Nottingham*, *Lincoln*, *Rutland*, *Leiceſter*, *Northampton*, *Bucks*, *Bedford*, *Huntingdon*, and Part of *Hertford*) founded by *Crida*, *A. D.* 584; the chief City of which was *Lincoln*.

Q. Did theſe ſeveral petty Princes continue long in Peace among themſelves?

A. No. Ambition, and other ſlight Cauſes of Offence, ſoon gave Occaſion to Wars among them; which put an End to the *Heptarchy*, and reduced all the Seven Kingdoms into one, about *A. D.* 827.

Q. What was the State of Religion here in thoſe Times?

A. The *Saxons*, being barbarous Idolaters, the Chriſtian Churches within their Reach were all deſtroyed; and the Prieſts, and other pious Chriſtians, cruelly maſſacred: So that Religion was

was driven with the *Britons*, into *Wales*; where it continued in its Purity. But the *Saxons* themſelves being afterwards happily converted, they became as zealous Aſſerters, as they had before been Perſecutors, of it; and as famous for their Foundation of Churches and Religious Houſes, as they had been infamous for their former Deſtruction of them.

Q. How was their Converſion effected?

A. Ethelbert, the fifth *Saxon* King of *Kent*, having married *Bertha*, a Chriſtian Princeſs of *France*, ſhe brought over *Litharde*, Biſhop of *Soiſſons*, as her Spiritual Guide, and had St. *Martin*'s Church near *Canterbury* aſſigned her by the King, for Divine Service: The exemplary Piety of which Congregation not only laid a Foundation of Chriſtianity there, but rendered many of the People, and even the King himſelf, well diſpoſed to profeſs it; as they did ſoon after, on the Arrival of *Auſtin*.

Q. Who was he?

A. A Monk, ſent from *Rome*, by Pope *Gregory*, *A. D.* 597, on purpoſe to convert the *Saxons*, after they had been here about 147 Years.

Q. How was he received?

A. With unexpected Kindneſs. For the King furniſhed him, and his Companions, with all Neceſſaries, and allowed them free Liberty to exerciſe their Miſſion; which they did, with the reſt, in St. *Martin*'s Church, 'till the King himſelf was converted; after which *Auſtin*, being conſecrated at *Arles* in *France*, became the Metropolitan of the *Engliſh* Nation, and had his Metropolitical See fixed at *Canterbury*.

Q. Did Chriſtianity from hence ſoon extend itſelf over the whole Nation?

A. No. The *Britons*, having been converted

in (or ſoon after) the Apoſtolical Age, had the true Church ſtill continued among them in *Wales*; on the Borders of which no fewer than Seven of their Biſhops met at a Conference with *Auſtin* at one Time. The *Scots* had alſo received the Faith very early; and had *Palladius* their Biſhop, long before *Auſtin* was born. The *Picts* were partly converted by *Columbanus* from *Ireland*, about 30 Years before *Auſtin*'s Arrival; and partly by *Ninian*, a *Britiſh* Biſhop. As to the reſt, the *Eaſt-Angles* owed their Converſion to *Felix*, a *Burgundian*; the *Mercians*, to *Finanus*, a *Scot*: Nor were any of the other *Saxon* Nations here converted, 'till ſome Time after the Death of *Auſtin*; unleſs, perhaps, the *Eaſt-Saxons*, about *A. D.* 604; on whoſe Converſion St. *Paul*'s in *London* was built for their Cathedral.

Q. How long did the *Saxon* Heptarchy continue?

A. The Kingdom of the *South-Saxons* fell under that of the *Weſt-Saxons*, about * *A. D.* 725: That of the *Eaſt-Saxons* under the *Mercians*, *A. D.* 747: As did alſo that of the *Eaſt-Angles*, *A. D.* 792: That of *Mercia* fell under the *Weſt-Saxons*, *A. D.* 823: As did that of *Kent* the ſame Year; and that of *Northumberland*, *A. D.* 827. Upon which the whole became united into one Kingdom.

Of the MONARCHS *of* ENGLAND.

Of the SAXON *Line.*

I. EGBERT.

Q. WHO was the firſt Monarch of *England*?

* *N. B.* The more curious Reader may conſult the Tables of the reſpective Kings, during the *Saxon* Heptarchy, in Mr. *Carte*'s Hiſtory, Vol. I. Fol. 208. *&c.*

A. Egbert,

A. Egbert, King of the *Weſt-Saxons*; who ſucceeded in that Kingdom, *A. D.* 800, and became Monarch in 827; though ſeveral of the Tributary Kings held their Titles many Years longer.

Q. What was the moſt remarkable in his Life?

A. Being lineally deſcended from, and the only Survivor of, the Royal Family of *Weſt-Saxony*, *Brithric* a remote Relation, (who injuriouſly poſſeſſed that Throne) became jealous of his prior Title and noble Qualities, and baſely deſigned to diſpatch him. But *Egbert* eſcaped, firſt to *Offa*, King of the *Mercians*, and afterwards from him to the Emperor *Charlemaine*; with whom he continued, in *France* and *Rome*, twelve Years, (to his great Improvement) 'till *Brithric*'s Death; when he was honourably called Home by his Subjects.

Q. What Actions was he famous for?

A. He conquered the *Britons* in *Cornwall*, ſubdued one Province of thoſe in *Wales*, and united the *Saxon* Kingdoms here under his own Dominion, in the common Name of ENGLAND.

Q. Was the reſt of his Reign peaceable?

A. Yes: Except only ſome Bickerings with the *Danes*, who about this Time began to be troubleſome Neighbours.

ii. ETHELWULF.

Q. Who ſucceeded *Egbert*?

A. His eldeſt Son *Ethelwulf*, *A. D.* 836.

Q. What was remarkable in his Reign?

A. Two ſucceſsful Encounters with the *Danes*, who had taken and plundered *London*. In Token of Gratitude for which, he made a Voyage to

Rome; where he ſubjected his Kingdom to a Benefaction, which has been commonly miſtaken for the Tax of *Peter-Pence*. In the mean time, ſome of his diſaffected Nobles had concerted an unnatural Conſpiracy, to ſet up *Ethelbald* in his Father's Throne: But the King returning, prevented the Revolution, by freely putting his Son into the immediate Poſſeſſion of great Part of his hereditary Kingdom, and leaving him the reſt, ſoon after, at his Death.

iii. ETHELBALD.

Q. How did *Ethelbald* now govern?

A. As ungraciouſly as he had aſpired to it. But the beſt of it was his ſhort Reign: For it commenced *A. D.* 857, and he died, without Iſſue, *A. D.* 860.

iv. ETHELBERT.

Q. Who then ſucceeded *Ethelbald*?

A. His next Brother, *Ethelbert*.

Q. What was remarkable in his Reign?

A. The *Danes*, landing unexpectedly, ſurprized and burned *Wincheſter*; but were repulſed with great Loſs. However, this good King was prevented from any other great Exploits, by his Death, *A. D.* 866.

v. ETHELRED, or ÆTHERED.

Q. Who ſucceeded *Ethelbert*?

A. His next Brother *Ethelred*, or *Æthered*.

Q. Was his Reign peaceable?

A. No: Rather one continual Scene of War. For though he, and his Brother *Alfred*, in concert,

cert, fought ſeveral Battles, with various Succeſs, againſt the *Danes*, he was at laſt, fighting bravely againſt them, mortally wounded, *A. D.* 872.

vi. ALFRED.

Q. Who ſucceeded *Ethelred?*

A. His next Brother, *Alfred.*

Q. Had he the like Difficulties to encounter?

A. Yes; and in a more extraordinary Degree. For he was continually in a State of War with them, for nine Years together; and is ſaid to have been preſent in fifty-ſix Engagements, and to have defeated them in eight pitched Battles fought in one Year. However, the *Danes* being continually recruited from abroad, he was ſometimes reduced to ſuch Extremity, that ('tis reported) he once ventured himſelf, in the Diſguiſe of a Fidler into the Enemy's Camp; and diſcovering the Poſture of their Affairs, ſuddenly fell on, and entirely defeated them, *A. D.* 878.

Q. How did he ſpend the reſt of his Reign?

A. In framing a Body of excellent Laws, and ſeeing them duly executed; ſo that there was no ſuch thing as a Robbery then heard of: fitting out a powerful Fleet, and making other wiſe Proviſions, for the Government and Security of of his People; whereby he deſervedly obtained the Title of *Alfred the Great:* and, to complete his moſt excellent Character, he was a great Encourager of Learning; as appears by his Royal Foundation at *Oxford*, *A. D.* 886.

Q. How long did he reign?

A. Twenty-Eight Years. For he died, *A. D.* 900.

vii. EDWARD,

vii. EDWARD.

Q. Who ſucceeded *Alfred?*

A. His eldeſt ſurviving Son, *Edward*, ſurnamed *The Elder.*

Q. What is remarkable in his Character?

A. He poſſeſſed all his Father's good Qualifications, except his Learning: But was ſomewhat more ſucceſsful in the Field, againſt the *Danes*, *Scots* and *Welch*; having never been repulſed in any of his Battles, where he fought in Perſon.

Q. When did he die?

A. In *A. D.* 925.

viii. ATHELSTAN.

Q. Who ſucceeded *Edward?*

A. His Son, *Athelſtan.*

Q. Was he the eldeſt Son?

A. Yes, the eldeſt then ſurviving; though ſome have falſely reported him to have been illegitimate: However, even theſe tell us, that he accepted the Crown, only upon Condition, that after his deceaſe it ſhould revert to the legitimate Children of his Father, who were then Minors.

Q. What remarkable Actions did he perform?

A. He gained ſeveral Victories over the *Scots* and *Welſh*, as well as over the *Danes*; and died with the Character of *a very Great Prince*, *A. D.* 941, without Iſſue.

ix. EDMUND.

Q. Who ſucceeded *Athelſtan?*

A. His Brother *Edmund*, the undoubted next Heir.

Q. What

Q. What is remarkable of him?

A. He recovered *Northumberland* from the *Danes*, and gave up *Cumberland* and *Weſtmorland* to the King of *Scots*, on Condition of Homage and Aſſiſtance. But he was treacherouſly aſſaſſinated at a Feaſt, by one *Leof*, *A. D.* 946, leaving two Infant Sons, *Edwy* and *Edgar*: Both of whom did afterwards ſucceed, though not immediately.

x. Edred.

Q. Then who did obtain the Crown before them?

A. Their Uncle *Edred.*

Q. What is remarkable of him?

A. He being a great Benefactor to *Dunſtan*, and the Monks, thoſe Hiſtorians blanch his Character, for his Exploits againſt the *Scots* and *Danes*; und particularly for his Piety; endeavouring (on account of his Nephew's Minority) to acquit him of any Uſurpation! However, he held it not long: For he died *A. D.* 955.

xi. Edwy.

Q. Did Right then take place?

A. Yes, *Edwy* was then admitted to his Right of Inheritance, without regard to the two Sons of the Uſurper *Edred.*

Q. What Character do the Monkiſh Hiſtorians give *Edwy*?

A. He was not ſuch a Friend to them as to the Secular Clergy: And therefore thoſe *puritanical* Spirits load his Memory with the moſt groundleſs Calumnies; pretending thereby to make his Mal-Adminiſtration a Warrant for the Revolution which enſued.

Q. What

Q. What was that?

A. His Subjects of *Northumberland* and *Mercia* encouraged thereto by *Otho* and *Dunſtan* (Monkiſh Saints!) revolting from him, ſeized his Dominions Northward from the *Thames*, and tranſferred them to his younger Brother *Edgar*, then but 13 Years of Age.

Q. And what was the Effect of this?

A. The Country was miſerably harraſſed by Civil Wars, 'till King *Edwy*'s Death, *A. D.* 959.

xii. EDGAR.

Q. Did *Edgar* then become peaceably poſſeſſed of the Kingdom?

A. Yes. For the elder Brother dying without Iſſue, the Younger who before had been thus made a Rebel, and Uſurper of a great Part, did then commence rightful Sovereign of the Whole, as being the next Heir to his Brother.

Q. What Figure did he make after this?

A. So great, that eight Princes, at one Time, are boaſted to have rowed his Barge croſs the River *Dee*, in token of their Subjection or Homage: He, by his Fleets, protected the *Engliſh* Fiſhery and Commerce: He took care to have good Laws duly executed; and, in a word, made his Subjects enjoy the Fruits of a long and happy Peace; though he died at the Age of 32, in the Year 975.

xiii. EDWARD *the Younger.*

Q. Who ſucceeded *Edgar?*

A. There was ſome Debate about it; the late King having left two Sons by different Venters, and

and the Partizans of the Younger pretending the Elder was illegitimate. But, this being only a Scandal, the Loyaliſts adhered to the right Heir, *Edward*.

Q. What was his Character?

A. A Prince of great Hopes, and an admirable Diſpoſition: But, while he was yet a Youth, of about 15 Years, he was barbarouſly aſſaſſinated, by the Procurement of his ambitious Step-mother, to make way for the Succeſſion of her own Son, *Ethelred*, *A. D.* 979.

XIV. ETHELRED II.

Q. What was moſt remarkable in his Reign?

A. The Country was continually harraſſed by the *Danes*: And the King imprudently buying his Peace of them, encouraged thoſe ravenous Foreigners to make freſh Depredations, from time to time, and to raiſe the Market ſtill higher. At length, it was contrived to maſſacre all the *Danes* in *England* at once, *A. D.* 1002. But this barbarous Expedient only ſerved their King, *Swayn*, for a more juſt Occaſion to return, with a revengeful Army, by which the King was driven out of his own Kingdom.

Q. And what became of him afterwards?

A. He fled to his Brother-In-Law, the Duke of *Normandy*: But, hearing of the Death of *Swayn*, he returned with his Son *Edmund*, and had various Engagements with *Canute*, the Son of *Swayn*; but died, ſoon after, in *A. D.* 1016.

XV. EDMUND IRONSIDE.

Q. Who ſucceeded him?

A. His eldeſt Son *Edmund*, ſurnamed *Ironſide*, becauſe

becauſe of his extraordinary Strength of Body, and Hardneſs of Conſtitution.

Q. What Exploits did he perform?

A. He gained ſeveral Victories over *Canute*, and forced him to raiſe the Siege of *London*: But afterwards, being betrayed by *Edric*, (a moſt execrable Traytor, always in concert with the foreign Invaders!) the Face of Affairs turned againſt him. However, *Edmund* appearing again at the Head of a good Army in *Glouceſterſhire*, the two gallant Chiefs agreed to decide the Conteſt by ſingle Combat; wherein, each being charmed with the other's Valour, they dropped their Swords, and divided the Kingdom between them by mutual Conſent.

Q. Did this Compromiſe of Partition laſt long?

A. No. The brave *Edmund* was baſely aſſaſſinated by the Procurement of the Traytor *Edric*, before he had reigned a whole Year, *A. D.* 1017, and his two Sons, *Edwin* and *Edward*, were ſent abroad; where the Elder died, but the Younger married, and had a Son named *Edgar Atheling*: And thus became the whole Kingdom in the Power of *Canute*, the *Dane*.

Q. What was the State of the Church here, during the *Saxon* Monarchy?

A. In the Reign of *Ethelwulf*, the King confirmed the Tithe of all the Crown-Lands to the Church, *A. D.* 854; which was extended to the whole Kingdom, the Year following, with ſeveral Immunities to the Clergy. In the Reign of *Alfred*, that pious Prince rebuilded the Churches, and Religious Houſes, ruined by the *Danes*; and publiſhed ſeveral excellent Laws in favour of the Church, about *A. D.* 879. After which, the Monks gained Ground of the Secular Clergy;

and

and particularly, by the Intereſt of *Dunſtan*, their Patron, in the Reigns of *Edred* and *Edgar*. Yet, it is evident, from the many good Conſtitutions and Canons paſſed in thoſe Days, that the *Engliſh* Church was far from coming up to the Doctrines of the modern Church of *Rome*, before the *Norman* Invaſion, or owning any Papal Supremacy, during this Period.

Of the Government of ENGLAND *under the* DANES.

Q. WHO were thoſe you call *Danes?*

A. A Colony of all the Rabble of the Northern Nations, next to the *German* Ocean and the *Baltic*, addicted to Lazineſs, Barbarity, Piracy, and Robbery; ſo that they were the moſt frightful Enemies that ever infeſted this Iſland; and a dreadful Scourge to the *Saxons*, for the Outrages they had formerly committed, in the Conqueſt of the poor *Britons*.

Q. What enabled them to gain ſuch Advantages over the *Engliſh?*

A. Chiefly their Fleets; by which they ſhifted the Scene of Action, and kept the Inhabitants under the continual Fatigue of Marches and Counter-marches, deſtroying the Country wherever they found it moſt unguarded.

Q. What particular Outrages did they commit, before they became Maſters here?

A. Their firſt conſiderable Deſcent was upon the Iſle of *Shepey*, which they plundered, *A. D.* 832, in the Reign of King *Egbert*: The next in *Dorſetſhire*, *A. D.* 833; and two Years after, a third in *Cornwall*; where their united Forces were almoſt all cut off. In the Reign of *Ethelwulf*, they renewed their Invaſions ſeveral Times, and

and plundered *London*, *A. D.* 851. In the Reign of *Ethelbert*, they made two freſh Deſcents, and plundered *Wincheſter*, *A. D.* 860. In the Reign of *Ethelred*, they repeated their Depredations in a barbarous Manner; but ſtill were bravely reſiſted: But the Tributary Kings of *Mercia* and *Northumberland*, unhappily taking the Advantage of King *Ethelred*'s being ſo preſſed by the *Danes*, revolted from him, and ſet up for themſelves.

Q. Was not this Revolt of ill Conſequence to the common Cauſe?

A. Yes. For thoſe Revolters, out of Jealouſy of the King's Power, let the *Danes* get ſo much Ground, that they over-ran not only thoſe two Kingdoms of the former Heptarchy, but that of the *Eaſt-Angles* alſo; burning, ravaging and deſtroying all before them, as *York*, *Nottingham*, *Peterborough*, *Ely*, &c. and putting the pious King *Edmund* to Death, with a particular Barbarity, *A. D.* 870, ſubdued that whole Country.

Q. How was that?

A. They are ſaid to have tied him to a Stake, and ſhot him to Death with Arrows.

Q. Who was he?

A. The King of the *Eaſt Angles*, but tributary to King *Ethelred*; and was buried at *Bury* in *Suffolk*; thence called by his Name.

Q. Did the *Danes* then keep the Ground they had got?

A. Yes. For, getting Reinforcements from time to time, they had maſtered almoſt the whole Kingdom, before they were defeated by King *Alfred*, *A. D.* 878.

Q. What was the Conſequence of this Victory?

A. Their

A. Their King *Guthrun*, with the moſt of his People, on Condition of their Converſion to Chriſtianity, were Naturalized, or made Denizens of *England*, and had a Grant of the Kingdoms of the *Eaſt-Angles* and *Northumberland*, under a Tribute and Homage. The reſt, who refuſed the Conditions, reimbarked, under the Command of one *Haſtings*, and made ſeveral Deſcents upon the Coaſt of *France*: And thoſe who had ſettled here, becoming, after their King *Guthrun*'s Death, very troubleſome, were reduced to Obedience by King *Edward*, about *A. D.* 921.

Q. But ſtill they were not quiet?

A. No. They had many repeated Encounters with the ſeveral ſucceeding Kings, with various Succeſs: 'Till at laſt it came to the Compromiſe and Partition between the two Chiefs; which ended in the treacherous Murder of the brave King *Edmund Ironſide*, by the Traytor *Edric*, *A. D.* 1017, whereby *Canute*, the *Dane*, became the Sole Monarch of *England*.

XVI. CANUTE.

Q. And how did he behave in it?

A. His firſt Act of Sovereignty was an exemplary Piece of Juſtice, in publickly executing thoſe who had aſſaſſinated King *Edmund*. And, as to the infamous *Edric*, who had firſt deſerted his natural Sovereign, and afterwards procured him to be murdered, in hopes of Advancement by *Canute*, he advanced him indeed to the Gallows, as he deſerved: For, he judged wiſely, that thoſe who had been guilty of the higheſt Treaſon againſt their Natural and Rightful Sovereigns, could never be depended upon for Fidelity

delity to him, who was both a Foreigner, and conſcious of the unjuſt Poſſeſſion of another's Right.

Q. What other remarkable Actions did he perform?

A. He affected to render himſelf agreeable to the Natives; by giving the *Engliſh* a Share in his Favour, Offices of Honour, and ſome Profit and Truſt; by marrying Queen *Emma*, King *Ethelred*'s Widow; and by ſhewing Kindneſs to the Church, in repairing Damages, erecting new Foundations, and giving his Temporal Sanction to ſeveral good Eccleſiaſtical Conſtitutions: But, he ſeverely taxed the Nation, to maintain a Standing-Army, for his own Security!

Q. How long did he reign?

A. About nineteen Years: For he died *A. D.* 1035.

xvii. HAROLD.

Q. Who ſucceeded him?

A. His Son, *Harold*; though not without Oppoſition. For the *Engliſh* generally inclined to the Son of their own King *Ethelred*; and the *Daniſh* Intereſt was divided, in favour of *Hardicnute*, their laſt King's Son by *Emma*: But *Harold*'s Party prevailed, through the Influence of his Father's Treaſures, which he had ſeiz'd.

Q. What is memorable of him?

A. Nothing good; but that he died *A. D.* 1040, and was ſucceeded by his Brother, *Hardicnute*, then King of *Denmark* alſo.

xviii. HARDICNUTE.

Q. And how did he govern?

A. So

A. So intolerably towards the *Engliſh*, that, upon his ſudden Death, *A. D.* 1042, thoſe inſolent Foreigners were baniſhed the Kingdom for ever.

Of the Government of ENGLAND, *after the Expulſion of the* DANES.

xix. EDWARD, *the Confeſſor.*

Q. WHO ſucceeded *Hardicnute?*

A. Edward (Son of King *Ethelred* II. and Brother to *Edmund Ironſide*) commonly called *The Confeſſor*, on account of ſome Inſtances of his Piety and Sufferings.

Q. Was he the next Heir of the *Saxon* Line?

A. No. Prince *Edward*, Son of *Edmund Ironſide*, is owned to have had the Advantage, in point of Right, preferably to his Uncle; and, as ſuch, had a great Party in his Intereſt: But, the Nephew having lived in Exile abroad, ever ſince the *Danes* Uſurpation, and being now ſo far diſtant as *Hungary*, the Uncle's Party prevailed; chiefly by the Power of Earl *Godwin*, whoſe Daughter he married.

Q. What was moſt remarkable in his Reign?

A. He heaped his Favours upon the *Normans*, who ſwarmed about him; and introduced the *French* Language and Cuſtoms. He diſcharged his Subjects from the Tax of *Danegelt*, *A. D.* 1052. He aſſiſted King *Malcolm* III. of *Scotland*, with Forces, to recover his Right againſt the Uſurper *Macbeth*, *A. D.* 1054. He recalled his Nephew *Edward*, intending to ſecure his Right of Succeſſion, *A. D.* 1057; who died ſoon after his Arrival here, but left *Edgar Atheling* his only Son, too young to maintain his undoubted

doubted Right of Inheritance, in ſuch factious Times. He founded (or rather rebuilt) the Abby at *Weſtminſter*, *A. D.* 1060. He collected the good Laws of his Predeceſſors into one Body: Was the firſt whoſe Touch cured the King's-Evil; and died, *A. D.* 1066.

XX. HAROLD II.

Q. Did not the next Heir now recover his Right?

A. If Juſtice, Equity, and the ancient Uſages of the Kingdom had been regarded, it is owned, *Edgar Atheling* (Son of *Edward*, who was the *Confeſſor*'s eldeſt Brother's Son) was the next Prince of the Blood Royal, and conſequently, the only one who had a Right Claim to it; and, as ſuch, entirely beloved by the *Confeſſor* himſelf, and a Party of the *Engliſh* did honeſtly adhere to him. But *Harold* II. being a Man of an ambitious and enterprizing Spirit, and of great Intereſt among the Military Men and the factious *Londoners*, found Means to uſurp the Crown, without any Regard to the Right of the lawful Heir.

Q. And did he enjoy it in quiet?

A. No. For though he is ſaid to have governed agreeably enough, wanting neither Courage nor Conduct; yet this Breach in the Line of Succeſſion gave Occaſion to the Conqueſt of the whole Kingdom by *William* the *Norman*.

Q. As how?

A. If *Edgar Atheling* had been ſeated on his Throne, his Title had been ſo clear, that the Duke of *Normandy* could not have had any plauſible Pretenſions againſt him: Whereas, *Harold* being foreign to the Blood Royal, and under Pre-

Pre-engagements to Duke *William*, this gave him a fair Colour to invade the Kingdom; the Event of which was, that *Harold* loſt the Crown and his Life together, in the bloody Battle near *Haſtings*, the 14th of *October*, 1066, together with the Flower of the Nobility, and (according to ſome Writers) almoſt 70,000 *Engliſh* Soldiers, though there ſeems not to have been near ſo many in his whole Army.

Of the Government of ENGLAND, under *its ſeveral Kings, ſince the* Norman *Conqueſt.*

xxi. * 1. WILLIAM *the Conqueror.*

Q. WHENCE had this *Norman* Family its Original?

A. From the *Danes:* A Party of whom, under the Command of one *Rollo*, made an Attempt upon *England*, in the Reign of *Alfred*, *A. D.* 876. But, finding the *Engliſh* prepared to defeat them of a Settlement here, they changed their Courſe towards *France*; and got ſuch Footing in *Neuſtria*, that in *A. D.* 911, King *Charles the Simple*, for Peace-ſake, granted *Rollo* what he was in poſſeſſion of, with the Title of Duke of *Normandy*, to hold of him by Homage; and gave him his Daughter alſo, on Condition that he ſhould become a Chriſtian: And from that *Rollo*, the ſeventh Duke in ſucceſſion, was this *William*, though reputed a Baſtard; who was born *A. D.* 1026, and ſucceeded his Father in the Dukedom, *A. D.* 1035.

---

* *N.B.* Henceforward, the former Number is to denote the Succeſſion from *Egbert*, and the following Figure that from *William the Conqueror.*

Q. What Advantage did he make of his Victory over *Harold*, in 1066?

A. He firſt ſecured the Port of *Dover*, and then marched directly towards *London*; where the moſt zealous Aſſertors of their Country's Liberty were concerting the only Means to ſecure it, by reſtoring *Edgar Atheling*, the Grandſon of *Edmund Ironſide*, to his undoubted Right; who was accordingly proclaim'd there.

Q. And were the reſt of the *Engliſh* ſo blind, as not to ſee their Intereſt in ſo doing?

A. The Majority of the People wiſely approved of the Propoſal: But, chiefly through the Defection of the Clergy, it failed of Succeſs.

Q. How were the Guides themſelves ſo blinded?

A. Moſt of the Prelates were at that time Foreigners, and under the Influence of the Pope, who had given his Sanction to *William*'s Invaſion; the politic Court of *Rome* generally making its own Advantages of ſuch Revolutions and Uſurpations.

Q. Then all was loſt?

A. Yes. For now every one began to conſider only his own private Intereſt; and the Public being neglected, *London* opened the Gates to the Conqueror.

Q. But what became of the deſerted *Edgar*?

A. He (being then but a meer Youth, about 14 Years of Age) is ſaid to have abdicated his Claim, and ſubmitted, among the reſt, to Force irreſiſtible. However, he ſoon found it neceſſary to retire into *Scotland*, *A. D.* 1068, and afterwards to the *Holy Land*.

Q. Did *William* thereupon immediately aſſume the Royal Power?

A. No. He ſeemed at firſt to heſitate, when an Offer was made him of the Crown; as if

That

That had not been the ſole End of his coming over! But, after a pretended Conſultation with his Friends, he (like other hypocritical Invaders) was graciouſly pleaſed to accept what Providence had been ſo kind to throw in his Way.

Q. When, and by whom, was he crowned?

A. On *Chriſtmas-Day*, 1066, by *Aldred*, Archbiſhop of *York*; who had done the ſame for the Uſurper *Harold* alſo.

Q. Why not by the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*?

A. Stigand had refuſed to perform that Office to him who had *invaded another's Right*; for which *William*, in concert with the Pope, reſolved to deprive him. And thus was a Precedent made, fatal to the Rights and Independency of the Church of *England*.

Q. How did *William* make out his Title to the Sovereignty thus obtained?

A. Though the Surname of *Conqueror* is generally given him, he never openly pretended to poſſeſs the Crown by Right of Conqueſt, but rather took care that his Title ſhould never be clearly explained or examined.

Q. What were the moſt remarkable Acts of his Adminiſtration?

A. He ſeized the Treaſure of his Predeceſſors, which he laviſhly beſtowed upon his own Countrymen and Creatures; and then invented Ways and Means to fill his Coffers again out of the Pockets of the deluded Natives. He made vainglorious and expenſive Journies, to ſhew himſelf in his foreign Dominions; leaving *England* the while to be arbitrarily oppreſſed by his Regents. And, when he found, or ſuſpected, that the *Engliſh* were weary of his Yoke, he reſolved to make himſelf ſafe, without regarding whether the

Means were conſiſtent with Juſtice. Thus, he not only removed moſt of them by degrees, from all Poſts of Advantage, but alſo from all Baronies and Fiefs of the Crown, and accumulated them upon his *Normans*, and other Foreigners; though by his Coronation-Oath he was to do equal Juſtice to all, and to maintain the Laws of St. *Edward*.

Q. But was he not favourable to the Clergy, who had been ſo inſtrumental in that Revolution?

A. So far from it, that, being jealous of their Influence among the People, he broke through their Charters, ſeized their Money and Plate, not ſparing even that of the Altars: And, having maſtered the Kingdom, he thereby found means to deprive the Archbiſhop, with ſeveral Biſhops and others of the Clergy, and to intrude his own Creatures into their Dignities and Preferments, arbitrarily, without Proof of any Offence, either in Church or State; thus rendering the whole Body of the Clergy baſely dependent upon the Civil Power, how unjuſtly ſoever invaded!

Q. And was all this ſtill borne, without any Attempts of Redreſs?

A. No. Thoſe who had the true Intereſt of their Country at heart, were ſtill the more incited thereby to Inſurrections, in favour of *Edgar Atheling*'s undoubted Right. But *William* ſo artfully dealt with ſome of the Chiefs, by fair Promiſes and Oaths, that he broke their Meaſures, and afterwards ſacrificed many of them to his Reſentment.

Q. How was this Inſurrection in favour of *Edgar* conſiſtent with his former Submiſſion.

A. Very well. For, whatever he had done, being

being extorted by Force, was void in itſelf, and could not properly be conſtrued an *Abdication*.

Q. Did he ever recover his Right?

A. No. But he dying unmarried, and *Malcolm* III. King of *Scotland*, having married his Siſter *Margaret*; by Deſcent from her, the *Saxon* Line was afterwards united with the *Norman*, in the Perſon of King *Henry* II.

Q. Did *William* then enjoy his Conqueſt in Peace?

A. No. The King of *Scotland* invaded *England*, *A. D.* 1071; the *French* gave him ſome Trouble abroad, *A. D.* 1073; as ſome, even of the diſcontented *Normans*, conſpired againſt him with the oppreſſed Natives here, while he was engaged in *Normandy*, *A. D.* 1074, and his own Son *Robert* rebelled againſt him alſo in the ſame Dutchy, *A. D.* 1077. But all theſe Troubles were ſoon made up. Yet *Edgar* was ſtill the Object of his Fear and Suſpicion, 'becauſe he 'ſaw that Prince, even in the low State of De-'pendence to which he had reduced him, ca-'reſſed by his Subjects, on account of his Birth, 'as well as of the amiable Qualities of his Mind 'and Perſon.'

Q. What elſe is remarkable in his Reign?

A. He built the Tower of *London*, *A. D.* 1078. To gratify his Fondneſs for Hunting, he depopulated 36 Pariſhes in *Hampſhire*, deſtroying all their Churches, *&c.* to make a *New Foreſt* for wild Beaſts, *A. D.* 1082. He cauſed an exact Survey to be taken of every Man's Eſtate in *England*, *A. D.* 1086, which is preſerved in in a Book, called *Dooms-Day-Book*; and ſuppreſſed all private Robbers, ſo that (it is ſaid) a Woman might have ſafely travelled alone, with a Bag of Gold, all over the Country. However, as

foreign Intereſts and Conſiderations naturally take place under a foreign Prince, *William*'s Politicks engaged *England* in various Wars on the Continent, (wherein ſhe was no ways intereſted,) to the infinite Profuſion of her beſt Blood and Treaſure; and conſequently ſubjected her to a Load of Debts and Taxes, to which ſhe was a Stranger before *this glorious Revolution.*

Q. How long did he reign?

A. Almoſt 21 Years. For he died in *Normandy*, by a Fall from his Horſe, the 9th of *September* 1087, aged 61.

xxii. 2. William Rufus.

Q. Who ſucceeded *the Conqueror?*

A. His ſecond Son *William*, ſurnamed *Rufus*, from his red Hair.

Q. What became of the Eldeſt?

A. Of his three Sons, he left his Hereditary Dutchy to the eldeſt *Robert*; and only 5000 *l.* in Money to *Henry*, the youngeſt. But, though he had no Hereditary Right to *England*, and conſequently could not give any ſuch to his favourite Son, *William* the Second, he diſpatched him hither immediately, in order to his taking Poſſeſſion of it.

Q. When was he crowned?

A. On the 27th of *Sept.* 1087; being then 30 Years of Age.

Q. Did he meet with no Oppoſition.

A. Yes. His Uncle *Odo*, and many of the *Norman* Nobility, declared for *Robert*'s Right of Primogeniture: But, after the News of the Conqueror's Death reached *England*, Care was taken to make a ſtronger Party for *William* by ſpecious Promiſes of a more favourable Adminiſtration, and the Influence of his Father's Treaſure.

Q. Did

Q. Did *Robert*'s Party appear in the Field?

A. Yes, in ſeveral Parts of the Kingdom at once. But the King in Poſſeſſion found Ways and Means (chiefly by his Money,) to diſunite them, and thereby to break all their Meaſures.

Q. Did he perform his Promiſes?

A. As Uſurpers are wont to do. But he excuſed himſelf with a diſhonourable Pretence, That *it was not poſſible for a King to keep all his Promiſes.*

Q. Had he no Check upon him?

A. Yes; ſo long as *Lanfranc*, Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, lived: But that Prelate, finding how much they were diſappointed in their *new-made* King, laid it ſo to heart, that he died in *May* 1089, the more lamented, becauſe *William* then threw off all Reſtraint.

Q. How then did he proceed?

A. Not content with the Crown he had thus got, he, in concert with *Henry*, endeavoured to diſpoſſeſs their Brother *Robert* of the Dutchy of *Normandy* alſo: But, after ſome fruitleſs Attempts, the Difference was made up, on Condition, that the longer Liver ſhould have both. *A. D.* 1091. And *Robert* thought fit to undertake an Expedition with divers other Princes to the *Holy Land*, *A. D.* 1096.

Q. Was he engaged in any other Wars?

A. Yes. *Malcolm*, King of *Scotland*, entered *England* ſeveral Times with an Army; but at laſt was treacherouſly ſurprized by the Earl of *Northumberland*, and ſlain, *A. D.* 1093: And the *Welſh*, raiſing new Troubles, were defeated, and the South Part of their Country ſubdued, in 1094.

Q. How did *William* behave, amidſt all theſe Succeſſes?

A. As might be expected from an Uſurping Prince, of *great Fierceneſs, little Conſcience, and boundleſs Avarice, who feared neither God nor Man!* Taxes and Impoſitions were daily renew'd, under divers Pretences; every new Accident affording him an Occaſion of freſh Oppreſſions: So that the People ſeeing no Proſpect of Redreſs in his Reign, placed all their Hopes in the ſhort Continuance of it.

Q. And how long was his Reign?

A. About thirteen Years. For, on the 2d of *Auguſt*, 1100, in the 44th Year of his Age, he was accidentally kill'd by an Arrow, as he was Hunting in the *New-Foreſt*, which his Father had made in *Hampſhire*: An Accident the more remarkable, becauſe his Brother *Richard*, and his Nephew *Richard*, did both come to an untimely End in the ſame Place.

Q. Is there any Thing elſe of Moment recorded of him?

A. Yes. Though he was himſelf an Uſurper here, he ſent an Army into *Scotland*, againſt *Donald Bane*, the Uſurper of that Throne; which took him Priſoner, and reſtored the Sons of their laſt King to their Right, in their due Courſe of Hereditary Succeſſion, *A. D.* 1097. To which may be added his rebuilding *London-Bridge*, building *Weſtminſter-Hall*, and a new Wall round the *Tower*; and his great Conteſt with *Anſelm*, Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, about the ſupreme Authority of the Pope, and the Rights of the Church and Crown.

xxiii. 3. HENRY.

Q. Who ſucceeded *Rufus?*

A. His younger Brother *Henry*, for his Improvements in Learning ſurnamed *Beauclerc*; who was

was crowned the 5th of *Auguſt*, 1100, the third Day after his Brother *William*'s Death.

Q. Was *Robert*, the eldeſt, dead then?

A. No; but on his Return from the Holy Wars, and highly diſtinguiſh'd therein, for his Heroic Qualities: Of whoſe Abſence nevertheleſs *Henry* took the Advantage, to ſeize the Royal Treaſure, and uſurp the Throne, notwithſtanding *Robert*'s Priority of Birth, and his Title of Survivorſhip by Treaty.

Q. Did not *Robert* aſſert his Right?

A. Yes. He made a ſtrong Party, and landed at *Portſmouth*: But, by the Mediation of the great Men, a Battle was prevented, and a Compromiſe made; whereby *Robert* agreed to quit his Title to the Crown, in Conſideration of a yearly Payment of 3000 Marks, and the Survivor to be Maſter of both their Dominions.

Q. What moved *Robert* to ſo unreaſonable a Contract?

A. The great Power his Brother *Henry* had acquired, by the many plauſible Promiſes he made, and the popular Acts he did, at his coming to the Throne; but chiefly through the Influence of Archbiſhop *Anſelm* and the Court of *Rome*, and the Authority which the *Popes* pretended to in thoſe Times, to give a Sanction to *Uſurpations*.

Q. What popular Acts did *Henry* begin with?

A. He ſolemnly promiſed to reſtore the Rights of the Church, which had been invaded by his Father and Brother *William*; to ſuppreſs the arbitrary Uſages introduced by them; and to govern according to the *Engliſh* Laws. He alſo granted a Charter of great Privileges to the Citizens of *London*. But, that which gained him the faireſt Title to a Settlement, was his marrying *Maud*, the Daughter of *Malcolm*, King of

Scotland, by *Margaret*, who was Sister to *Edgar Atheling*, the undoubted Heir of the ancient Right Line.

Q. How did *Henry* perform his Promiſes?

A. Pretty fairly, in the general: For, as to the Diſputes between him and Archbiſhop *Anſelm*, (a bigotted Zealot for the Papal Power,) about Inveſtitures, they were chiefly owing to the Times they lived in; when the *Popes* had uſurp'd upon the Rights of the *Engliſh* Church on the one hand, as the *Kings* had ſtretched the Regal over it on the other.

Q. How did *Robert* behave the while?

A. Being ſenſible of his Error, in too eaſily yielding up his Right of Promogeniture, and expreſſing himſelf in ſome unacceptable Terms, *Henry* took thence an Occaſion to invade *Normandy*; which he purſued ſo effectually, (by Corruption rather than Arms) as to make himſelf Maſter of that whole Dutchy, as well as of Duke *Robert*'s own Perſon, and that of his Son *William*, who were both kept in Priſon 'till Death diſcharged them.

Q. What other Wars was *Henry* engaged in?

A. Lewis the Groſs, King of *France*, declared War againſt him; which was ſoon accommodated; as were alſo the Troubles he frequently met with from the *Welſh*.

Q. How did he enjoy the Remainder of his Reign?

A. Not without an Alloy. For, Prince *William*, his only legitimate Son (for whoſe Grandeur and Succeſſion he had acted ſuch an unnatural Part towards his Brother *Robert*) was drown'd, *A. D.* 1120. And thus the *Norman* Family became ſoon extinct in the Male Line, after three Reigns, which had coſt this Nation

an

an infinite Loſs of Blood and Treaſure, to procure them a thorough Settlement; one Blaſt of Divine *Providence*, in a Moment, tearing up by the Roots that unjuſt Power, which the Violence of the Sword had been almoſt an Age in planting. And the *Engliſh* had the leſs Reaſon to lament the Loſs of this *William*, who had openly declar'd his utter Averſion to them, and a Reſolution to reduce them to the vileſt Degree of Slavery, whenever he ſhould come to the Crown! Such was the Return he would have made them, for contributing to his Father's Uſurpation!

Q. Who then was *Henry*'s Heir?

A. His daughter *Maud*, (who was married firſt to the Emperor *Henry* V. and afterwards to *Geoffry* of *Anjou*.) was ſo declared, in 1127. But ſhe was not ſo of *Right*, 'till her Uncle *Robert* died, in 1134.

Q. How long did *Henry* ſurvive his Son?

A. Though he lived near 15 Years, yet ('tis ſaid) he laid it ſo to heart, that he was never after ſeen to laugh. At laſt, taking a Surfeit of Lamprey, he died on the 1ſt of *Dec.* 1135. Aged 68

Q. What elſe is moſt remarkable in his Reign?

A. The building of the firſt Stone-Bridge in *England*, by his Queen; *viz.* at a Place ſince called *Bow*, from its being made Arch-way: The Foundation of divers Religious Houſes, and the magnificent Palace at *Woodſtock*, with its Park, which was the firſt in *England*. And ſo great was the Plenty of Proviſions (or the Scarcity of Money) that ('tis ſaid) One Shilling would purchaſe Corn to ſerve 100 Men a Day; five Shillings a fat Ox; and a Groat a Sheep, or a Day's Provender for 20 Horſes.

XXIV. 4. STEPHEN.

Q. Who ſucceeded *Henry* I?

A. Stephen, Earl of *Boloign.*

Q. What was his Title to the Throne?

A. As being a Grandſon to the Conqueror, by his Daughter *Adela*; whereas *Maud* was his Grand-daughter, by his Son *Henry.*

Q. How then did the *Siſter's Son* take place of the *Brother's Daughter*?

A. By mere Artifice and Intrigue. For, immediately upon the Death of his Uncle *Henry*, he haſted to *London*, and there made ſuch a powerful Party among the Leading-Men, through the Influence of the Royal Treaſure, as gain'd him the Crown, notwithſtanding his and their repeated *Oaths* to the Succeſſion of *Maud:* The Force of which were eaſily evaded by political Caſuiſts, when their perſonal Views of Intereſt inclined them to prefer a powerful *Pretender* then preſent, to a more rightful One on the other Side of the Water.

Q. And did the Nation find it *their* Intereſt ſo to do?

A. So far from it, that (as is naturally to be expected in all Uſurpations) it opened a moſt dreadful Scene of Tyranny and Oppreſſion; and, moreover, occaſioned a greater Expence of Blood and Treaſure, than would have maintain'd the Neceſſities and Honour of the Publick, four Times as long, under a rightful Sovereign.

Q. What then could infatuate the Nation to comply with it?

A. His ſpecious and hypocritical Pretences to redreſs their former *Grievances*, and ſubmitting to all ſuch Conditions as were exacted of him at his

his Coronation; which was ſolemnized, 22 *Dec.* 1135.

Q. How long did he enjoy the Fruits of this in quiet?

A. Not long. For, the *Welſh* and *Scots*, ſeverally over-ran divers Parts of *England*; and the *Normans* alſo revolted. And, ſoon after, moſt of the *Engliſh* Barons followed their Example; rather (as it ſeems) out of Pique at the Diſappointment of their ſeveral Expectations from a King of their own *making*, than out of any conſcientious Principle of Duty to the right Heir.

Q. But did ſhe not receive ſome Advantage by it?

A. Yes. For though they had divers Reaſons for Complaint of *Stephen*'s Mal-Adminiſtration, they could have no juſtifiable Ground to raiſe *Arms* againſt him, but that of his being an *Uſurper* of her natural Right; and therefore they were forced to apply to her, with Promiſe of her ſpeedy Reſtoration. And accordingly ſhe, with a few of her Friends, landed at *Arundel*, 30 *September* 1139.

Q. What was the Event of all this?

A. After ſeveral bloody Battles, with various Succeſs, and infinite Acts of Treachery and Cruelty, too common in ſuch Confuſions, a Compromiſe at length was agreed upon at *Wincheſter*, between the two Pretenders, in *November* 1153, whereby *Stephen* was peaceably to hold the Crown during Life, and *Henry* (the Son of *Maud*) to ſucceed him, as the lawful Heir. By virtue of which Concordate alone, *Stephen* became thenceforward a King *de Jure*, who had before been only a King *de Facto*, that is a meer *Uſurper*.

Q. How was this Corcordate obſerved?

A. How

A. By the one, religiouſly, as becomes a juſt Prince; but by the other not without a Perfidiouſneſs common to ſuch Uſurpers. For, a baſe Conſpiracy was form'd to murder *Henry*; which was providentially prevented, in the critical Moment, by *William* (the Son of *Stephen*'s) breaking his Leg, who was engaged as the Head of thoſe bloody *Butchers!*

Q. How long did *Stephen* ſurvive this?

A. Not a whole Year. For, he died the 25th of *October*, 1154. Aged 50 Years.

Q. What Character did he leave behind him?

A. Abating his Uſurpation (which of itſelf is enough to ſully the faireſt Character) ſome would perſwade us, that he was eminent for Courage, Clemency, and Generoſity, and other Qualities becoming the greateſt Prince: Though indeed it does not appear that he had any of the truly Princelike Virtues, or Talents requiſite in a good Governor.

Q. What became of *Maud* at laſt?

A. Having undergone great Viciſſitudes of Fortune for about eight Years, aſſerting her Right in Perſon, and her Son *Henry* being now advanced to an Age fit to bear Arms, ſhe returned into *Normandy* in 1147, and committed to *him* the farther Proſecution of the common Cauſe; which happily ended in a Reſtoration of the undoubted Heir of the Royal Family both of the *Saxons* and *Normans*.

XXV. 5 HENRY II.

Q. Did *Henry* ſucceed according to the Compromiſe?

A Yes; without any Oppoſition. For, though *Stephen* left a Son, named *William*, yet he being con-

conſcious of his Defect of *Right*, did not pretend to claim under his Father's Title of *Poſſeſſion*, as any Bar to the natural-born Heir; and the People had too dearly experienced the dreadful Conſequences of a conteſted Title, to think of continuing the Uſurpation any longer.

Q. How was the Blood-Royal of the *Saxons* and *Normans* united in this King *Henry?*

A. As he was the eldeſt Son of *Maud*; who was by her Father the ſole Heir of the *Norman* Conqueror, and by her Mother the ſole Heir of *Edgar Atheling*, the exiled *Saxon Prince*.

Q. Who was *Henry*'s Father?

A. Geoffry Plantagenet, Earl of *Anjou*, *Touraine* and *Maine*, the Empreſs *Maud*'s ſecond Huſband.

Q. Whence did he acquire the Surname of *Plantagenet?*

A. From his wearing a Sprig of Broom in his Bonnet.

Q. When was the young King crown'd?

A. On the 19th of *Dec.* 1154, in the 22d Year of his Age.

Q. How did he begin his Reign?

A. With the Redreſs of Grievances. Among the firſt of which (like a true Father of his People) he diſmiſſed all the *Foreign Plunderers*, whom the foregoing Uſurpers had called into the Nation: Next, he reſumed all the Grants of the Crown-Lands, which had been profuſely alienated by thoſe who had no proper Right to them: After that, he diſannulled all the new Creations of pretended Honour conferr'd by *Stephen*; as being the Rewards of Iniquity, to ſupport Uſurpation! And, in a Word, ſhewed himſelf fully reſolved to reform all the Abuſes and Diſorders of

his

his Kingdom, by a wiſely choſen Council and ſubordinate Magiſtrates.

Q. Had he no Wars to interrupt him?

A. Yes. Firſt, with his younger Brother *Geoffry*, for the Earldom of *Anjou*, in 1156; then with the *Welſh*, in 1157: With the Duke of *Bretagne*, for the Earldom of *Nants* in 1158; and with the *French*, for the Earldom of *Tholouſe*, in 1159. All which ended to his Glory; as well as the ſeveral Treaties which he made with the *Scots* and others; and his entire Conqueſt of *Ireland*, in 1171.

Q. Did he meet with no Croſſes, to ſoure the Fruits of all this Succeſs?

A. Beſides the Affair of Archbiſhop *Becket*, which coſt him no ſmall Trouble, his own Sons rebelled againſt him, in 1173, not without the unaccountable Encouragement of the Queen their Mother.

Q. What could move them to be ſo unnatural?

A. The ſame evil Spirit which tempts others to the like Crimes. *Henry*, the eldeſt then ſurviving (whom he had cauſed to be crown'd in his own Life-time) is ſaid to grow weary of the *Title* of a King, without the Sovereign Power; and the reſt uneaſy at their not being allow'd the abſolute Diſpoſal of their reſpective Portions. But, moſt probably, the Ambition of theſe unwary young Princes, (the eldeſt of whom was then but of about 18 Years) was wrought upon by the Intrigues of the Court of *France*, and the Jealouſy of other neighbouring Princes, to weaken his great Power.

Q. What was the Event of this?

A. Though he was at once attack'd in *Guienne* and *Bretagne*, by two of his own Sons; in *Normandy* by the King of *France*, and the Earls of *Flanders*, *Boloigne* and *Blois*; in the North

of

of *England* by the King of *Scotland*; and in *Suffolk* by the Rebel Earl of *Leiceſter*, *&c.* Yet, at length, he triumphed glorioufly over all his Enemies: The faithleſs King of *France* was put to a ſhameful Flight; the King of *Scotland*, and the Earl of *Leiceſter*, both defeated and taken; and the Rebels elſewhere all vanquiſhed.

Q. What Puniſhment did he inflict upon them?

A. Such was the *Clemency* of this King (like a true Father) to his Subjects, how ill deſerving ſoever, that though he had Numbers of them in his Power, either taken Priſoners in Battle, or *ſurrender'd at Diſcretion*, during this truly *unnatural Rebellion*, he put not one of them to Death, but reſtored them even to their juſtly *forfeited Eſtates*; and, in ſhort, granted a general Pardon to all the Revolters, without Exception.

Q. What was the Affair of Archbiſhop *Becket*?

A. A long and ſharp Conteſt about the reſpective Rights and Privileges of the Church and Crown, on Occaſion of aggrandizing the Pope's uſurp'd Supremacy, and carried on to Extremes (at leaſt on one, if not) on both Sides; in conſequence whereof, certain officious Zealots, (preſuming, they ſhould gratify their Sovereign, by a Revenge upon ſo turbulent an Adverſary,) aſſaſſinated the Prelate at his very Altar, 29 *Dec.* 1170. For which the King, however innocent, ſubmitted to a ſevere Penance in the very Height of his Glory, *A. D.* 1172.

Q. Did he die in Peace at laſt?

A. No. His three eldeſt Sons having raiſed him freſh Troubles in *France*, affected him ſo nearly, that (as ſome have reported) he both curſed them and the Day of his own Birth! However, two of them were cut off by Death, in the Midſt of their unnatural Conſpiracies, (*viz. Henry*, the Eldeſt, in 1183. and *Geffrey*, the third of them,

them, in 1186) And the King himſelf alſo died on the 6th of *July* 1189. Aged 56.

Q. What Character did he leave behind him?

A. That of a moſt heroic, generous, magnificent, clement, juſt and prudent Prince, however injurious the prejudiced *Monkiſh* Writers have been to his Memory. For, he was really the Champion for the Rights of the *Engliſh* Church, which *Becket* had laboured to ſubject to the Court of *Rome*. It is true, he had his Failings (too common to moſt of his Succeſſors.) But, whatever perſonal Vices are laid to his Charge, it is certain, they were counter-balanced by many Royal Virtues and good Qualities, which render'd him one of the moſt illuſtrious Princes in our Hiſtory, and this Kingdom in his Time one of the moſt powerful in *Europe*.

Q. What other Particulars are moſt memorable in his Reign?

A. His Contribution to the building of *London*-Bridge with Stone, (undertaken by *Peter Coleman*, a Prieſt, in 1176, and 33 Years in compleating; the Stream, as it is ſaid, being turn'd off for that Time, through a Trench cut from *Batterſea* to *Rotherhith*:) And his dividing the Kingdom into ſix Circuits, for the more eaſy Adminiſtration of Juſtice in the Country, *A. D.* 1176.

XXVI. 6. RICHARD.

Q. Who ſucceeded this King *Henry?*

A. His eldeſt ſurviving Son *Richard*, commonly called *Cœur de Lion*, for his extraordinary Courage.

Q. How did he begin his reign?

A. By a juſt Indignation and Contempt of thoſe who had ſhared with him in his unnatural Rebellion

bellion againſt his Father; and highly favouring thoſe who had honeſtly refuſed to comply with his unjuſt Solicitations.

Q. When was he crown'd?

A. On the 3d of *Sept.* 1189.

Q. Where did he diſtinguiſh his Courage?

A. In his Expedition to the Holy Land, together with *Philip* King of *France*, with an Army of above 100,000 Men.

Q. With whom did he intruſt the Government of his Kingdom the while?

A. With his Chancellor *Longchamp* (Biſhop of *Ely*, and the Pope's Legate) and the Biſhop of *Durham* his chief Juſticiary; But, at the ſame time he inveſted Prince *John*, his Brother, with ſeven rich Earldoms (beſides that of *Glouceſter*, which he had by Marriage) to keep him quiet.

Q. What Succeſs had he in the Holy War?

A. Being in his Voyage groſly affronted by the Uſurper of *Cyprus*, he made a Conqueſt of the Iſland, and, taking the Uſurper, is ſaid to have bound him in Silver Fetters, *A. D.* 1191. After this, he diſtinguiſhed himſelf ſo much in the Recovery of the City of *Acon*, that the King of *France*, growing jealous of his ſuperior Reputation, baſely deſerted the common Cauſe, and returned home, full of Envy, and diſhonourable Reſolutions to invade his Dominions during his Abſence.

Q. What did King *Richard* perform after *Philip*'s Departure?

A By his perſonal Valour and Conduct he obtained a compleat Victory over the *Saracens*, leaving 40,000 of them dead in the Field; whereby he became Maſter of the Maritime Cities of *Paleſtine*.

Q. Di

Q. Did he not then recover the whole Holy Land out of the Hands of the Infidels?

A. No. When he was even in the Sight of *Jeruſalem*, he found himſelf under a Neceſſity to defer the Siege of it 'till the Spring, for want of Forage; Before which Time, the other Chriſtian Princes (who were of divers Countries) found various Pretences to withdraw, one after another.

Q. How did King *Richard* behave after this?

A. Being thus ſhamefully deſerted by his Allies, and at the ſame Time inform'd of the Danger of his own Kingdoms, from the treacherous Practices of the King of *France*, and his own Brother *John*, he found it adviſeable to agree to a Truce for three Years, propoſed to him by Sultan *Saladine*, and to return Home; leaving a Body of Troops in *Paleſtine*, under the Command of his Nephew, *Henry* Earl of *Champagne*.

Q. What Adventures did he encounter in his Return?

A. He, being either ſhip-wrecked in the *Adriatick* Gulph, or, at leaſt, endeavouring to paſs through the *Auſtrian* Territories as a Pilgrim, was diſcover'd by that Duke, (who bore him a mortal Enmity ever ſince the Siege of *Acon*) and baſely ſold him into the Hands of the Emperor *Henry* VI.

Q. How was he treated by him?

A. With the utmoſt Indignity. For, though he had no juſt Cauſe to detain him, he did not only continue him a Priſoner fifteen Months, and load him with *Irons*, but accuſed him as a Criminal before the Diet of the Empire, and held him at laſt to a Ranſom of 100,000l. Yea, when he had thus dearly purchaſed his Liberty, and was haſtening homewards, the unworthy Emperor, in Concert with our King's other Enemies, ſent after

after him, to ſeize and bring him back; but Providence had reſcued him out of ſuch baſe Hands!

Q. Did he then return home in Safety?

A. Yes; on the 13th of *March*, 1194, after four Years Abſence; and was crown'd a ſecond Time, the 17th of *April* following.

Q. How did he revenge himſelf of his Enemies?

A. The Emperor and the Duke of *Auſtria* died ſoon after his Return, acknowledging the Injuries done him: His Brother *John* retiring to *France*, and refuſing to appear within the Time appointed, to anſwer for his ſecret Practices, forfeited all his Lands, and was declar'd incapable of the Succeſſion; but, being afterwards introduced to the King by their Mother, in *Normandy*, and humbling himſelf, he was pardoned in 1194. And the King hearing, while he was at Dinner, that the King of *France* had laid Siege to *Verneul*, he is ſaid to have ordered the Wall before him to be broke down; vowing never to turn his Back till he had faced the Enemy.

Q. What was the Event of this?

A. The War laſted about five Years, with ſome Intermiſſions by Truce, and amuſing Treaties. But, after ſeveral Engagements, to the no great Advantage of either, at laſt a farther Truce was agreed on for five Years more, and each to enjoy what he was then poſſeſſed of, *A. D.* 1199.

Q. What elſe was moſt remarkable in his Time?

A. He was the firſt King of *England* who bore on his Shield three Lions paſſant; which have been ſince continued as the Royal Arms: And the City of *London* had its firſt Mayor and Sheriffs in 1189, the firſt Year of his Reign; and was divided into ſeveral Corporations or Companies.

Q. How did this King die?

A. While

A. While he was beſieging a Caſtle under his Sovereignty in the *Limouſin*, he was mortally wounded by an Arrow ſhot from a Croſs-Bow, by one *Bertram Gordon*, of which he died the 6th of *April*, 1199, in the 10th Year of his Reign, and the 43d of his Age.

Q. How did he behave on this Occaſion?

A. The Caſtle being taken before his Death, and *Gordon* (who was ask'd the Reaſon why he ſhot him,) frankly telling him, *It was done in Revenge of his Father and Brother, ſlain by the King's own Hand*; at the ſame Time that all the reſt were condemn'd to be hang'd, he (with a ſingular Generoſity and Clemency) forgave him: But, Divine *Providence* did not ſuffer the Regicide ſo to eſcape: For, no ſooner was the King dead, but *Gordon* was flead alive, by Order of the General. Moreover, the King choſe to be buried at the Foot of his Father's Tomb, in token of his Humiliation for the Troubles he had cauſed him during his Life.

XXVII. 7. JOHN.

Q. Who ſucceeded King *Richard*?

A. His younger Brother *John*.

Q. Did *Richard* then leave no Children?

A. Only one Son, who was illegitimate. But his next Brother, *Geoffry*, Duke of *Bretagne*, had left a young Son, named *Arthur*; to whom (it was univerſally acknowledg'd) the Crown belonged by Hereditary Right: However, *John*'s Intereſt was more powerful; and accordingly he was crown'd the 26th of *May*, 1199,

Q. Did *Arthur* acquieſce under this Uſurpation?

A. By no Means. The Provinces of *Poictou*, *Anjou*, *Touraine*, and *Mayne* declared for him; and

and he had a conſiderable Party elſewhere, in Conſideration of his undoubted *Right*. The King of *France* alſo took him into his Protection; though rather as a Means to promote his *own* Deſigns, than in regard to the Right and Intereſt of the young Prince: For, he came to a Treaty with *John*, whereby he relinquiſhed *Arthur*, to obtain the better Terms for himſelf, *A. D.* 1200; in Conſequence of which the young Prince was ſoon diſpoſſeſs'd of all but the Dutchy of *Bretagne*, to which his Uncle *John* could not make any the leaſt Pretenſion.

Q. And what became of *Arthur* upon this?

A. It was not long, before the artful Court of *France* made uſe of his Name again, to ſerve their own Ends: When *Philip*, for a fairer Shew of Sincerity, gave him his eldeſt Daughter in Marriage, and a Body of Troops; himſelf falling upon the Dutchy of *Normandy*, and inciting the Nobles of *Poictou* alſo to return to their due Allegiance to *Arthur*.

Q. What was the Event of all this?

A. Arthur, at firſt, carried all before him, and recovered ſeveral Towns in *Anjou* and *Touraine*: But at laſt, *John* ſurprized, and took him Priſoner, in a Battle, where the Sword of Juſtice (by God's Permiſſion) was too weak for that of Uſurpation. In Conſequence of which, it was pretended that the unhappy Captive, endeavouring to eſcape out of Cuſtody, was drown'd, though it was univerſally believ'd, he was privately made a Sacrifice to the Uſurper's Ambition; and that too, probably, even by his own baſe and bloody Hand, 3d *April*, 1203.

Q. Did *John* reap the Fruits of this in Peace?

A. So far from it, that it made him deteſted by all the World. At the Inſtance of the Eſtates of

of *Bretagne*, King *Philip* of *France*, in Virtue of his Sovereignty, took occaſion to ſummon *John* to anſwer it before his Court of Peers: And upon his declining to appear, all the Territories he held in *France* were forfeited to that Crown.

Q. How did *John* reſent this?

A. As if he had been quite unconcern'd, he ſpent his Time in Indolence and Pleaſures, while the *French* were conquering all *Normandy*, and the other *Engliſh* Dominions on the Continent. However, in 1206, he was ſo far rouſed, as to lead an Army into *Poictou*, with which he recovered a great Part of that Province, before *Philip* was prepared to oppoſe him: But he was, ſoon after ſo weak, as to be glad of a Truce for two Years, whereby he loſt his Advantage there.

Q. In what Condition were the Affairs of *England* upon this?

A. In the utmoſt Diſorder. A great Diſpute aroſe about the Election of an Archbiſhop of *Canterbury:* In Conſequence of which the *Pope* (never neglecting any Opportunity, in *ſuch* Times, to enlarge his own uſurp'd Juriſdiction) laid the Kingdom under an Interdict, prohibiting all Divine Offices in 1208, under which it lay above ſix Years; excommunicated *John* himſelf, in 1209; diſcharged the Subjects from their ſworn Allegiance to him, in 1212; pronounced him depoſed, and gave the Kingdom of *England* to *Philip* of *France*, on Condition of executing his Sentence, in 1213.

Q. Did *Philip* undertake it?

A. He was glad of the Opportunity. But, when he had prepared for a Deſcent, *John* was prevailed upon to make his Peace with the *Pope*, on ſuch ſcandalous Terms, as none, who was not

not conſcious of a precarious Title, would ever have ſubmitted to.

Q. What were thoſe?

A. He went to *Dover*, where he formally reſigned the Crowns of *England* and *Ireland* to the *Pope*, (laying them at the Feet of *Pandulphus* the Legate) to receive and hold the ſame of *His Holineſs*, on the Conditions of Homage, and a yearly Rent of 1000 Marks: And withal declared, in Effect, that he did all this *heartily, willingly and freely, upon the true Faith of a Chriſtian!* in *May* 1213.

Q. How did he now proceed?

A. While he was preparing for his Defence againſt the *French* King's Attempts, his Barons refuſed to attend him; and aſſociating themſelves againſt him, levied an Army, to be commanded by *Robert Fitz-Walter*, whom they ſtiled *General of the Army of God and Holy-Church!* thinking this a favourable Opportunity to extort *new Liberties*, from the Crown, while it was worn by One who had no *Right* to it.

Q. And did they come to Blows?

A. No. *John*, finding himſelf diſtreſs'd, came to a Treaty with them, in *Runne-Mead*, (between *Windſor* and *Stanes*;) in Concluſion of which he granted them two Charters; the one of which was the *Magna Charta* paſſed (with ſome few material Variations) in the following Reign, and the other called *Charta de Foreſta*, in *June* 1215. And further, he meanly conſented to their chuſing 25 of their Number, who were impower'd on occaſion, to *enforce* the Obſervation thereof accordingly!

Q. Did not this make up the Breach between them?

A. No. *John* complain'd to the Pope againſt

the Violence by which they were extorted from him: But the Barons ſtill reſolving to maintain their Ground, the Pope excommunicated them, and declared the late Accommodation void.

Q. How did the Barons behave upon this?

A. Finding *John* reinforced by an Army of *Germans*, and other Foreigners, ſufficient to make him Maſter of the Field, they ſent an Offer of the Kingdom to the King of *France*, for his eldeſt Son *Lewis*; who gladly accepted it, and landed him in *Kent*, 21 *May*, 1216, in Contempt of the Pope's Injunctions to the contrary. And yet, they were forc'd to patch up a Title for him, (ſuch as it was) as if he had had an *Hereditary* Right to the Throne, though there were many *Pretenders* to it, by a prior Title, according to the Conſtitution.

Q. What was the Conduct of the Pope and King of *France* on this Occaſion?

A. Remarkably abſurd. For, the *Pope*, who had before taught them the Doctrine of *depoſing Princes*, while *John* was out of his Favour; now, when he had ſubmitted to him, gravely preſs'd them with the Duty of Allegiance, and the *Illegality* of Reſiſtance! And the King of *France*, who had made no Scruple to invade this Kingdom, meerly in Virtue of the *Pope*'s Pretence of a Donation of it to him; now, when it was ſubjected to another, could as gravely inſiſt, that the Kingdom could not be *alienated* (even to the Pope himſelf) without the Conſent of the Barons!

Q. What Advantage did *Lewis* make of the Invitation?

A. Upon his landing, *John* retired from Place to Place, not daring to hazard a Battle, for fear of being deſerted by his mercenary Foreigners: And, in paſſing the Marſhes near *Lynn*, his Carriages,

ages, with the *Regalia*, and all his Plate and Treaſure, were loſt; himſelf, with his Followers eſcaping with great Difficulty. This ſat ſo heavy on his Spirits as to caſt him into a Dyſentery; of which he died ſoon after, at *Newark-Caſtle*, 19 *Oct.* 1216, aged 51.

Q. Did *Lewis* then uſurp the Sovereignty?

A. No. The Revolution-Barons had in the mean Time diſcover'd, that they were look'd upon as *Traytors*, and doomed to Deſtruction, by the very Prince whom they had invited over as their Protector; and therefore no leſs than 40 of them ſent *John* Aſſurances of their Submiſſion, though he was then too near his Death to receive any Satisfaction by it.

Q. What Character do the Hiſtorians give *John?*

A. They generally repreſent him as addicted to all Kinds of Vice, without one princely Quality to counterballance them; as hot-headed, cruel, arbitrary, covetous and luſtful, without regard to Religion, Conſcience, Honour, or Morality! And though Prejudice might poſſibly contribute to aggravate the Character of a Prince ſo unpopular, yet his Uſurpation, and other notorious Actions, ſhew him in a Light not capable of Excuſe; and 'tis certain, he was equally hated and deſpiſed.

Q. But, was not his Uſurpation at an End, after the Death of his Nephew *Arthur?*

A. No. For, *Arthur* had a Siſter, named *Eleanor*; who thereupon became his undoubted Heir, but, having unhappily fell alſo into *John*'s Hands, together with her Brother, continued a Priſoner in *Briſtol*-Caſtle, about 40 Years, 'till her Death. 'Tis true, we do not hear, that ſhe ever had a fair Opportunity to *claim* her Right, or that others had the Conſcience to aſſert it in

her Behalf, though the *Pope* himſelf, in Conference with the *French* Ambaſſadors, *A. D.* 1216, acknowledged, that *her Right preceeded that of all others:* However, ſince ſhe had not renounced her Pretenſions, (which ſhe never would do) *John* cannot be acquitted of *Uſurpation*; nor the Subjects, of an unjuſtifiable Compliance with it, during her Life.

Q. What further Account have we of the Princeſs *Eleanor?*

A. John, being deſirous of a Peace with *France* in 1204; *Philip* inſiſted on that Princeſs to be given in Marriage to his ſecond Son, with the *Engliſh* Territories there for her Dower: But *John*, conſidering the Defect of his own Title, refuſed to give them the Advantage of Her's againſt him; being now no leſs afraid of this *Pretender*, than he was before, of her Brother.

XXVIII. 8. HENRY III.

Q. Who ſucceeded *John?*

A. His eldeſt Son *Henry*, then but little more than nine Years of Age.

Q. How was the Kingdom governed in his Minority?

A. The Earl of *Pembroke (Mareſchal,)* aſſembled ſuch of the Barons as had adhered to *John*, and repreſented to them the falſe Policy of attempting to redreſs their Grievances, by adhering to *Lewis* a Foreigner, againſt the Son of the late King, whoſe Youth was *incapable* of any Share in his Father's Mal-Adminiſtration: Upon which, he was crown'd at *Glouceſter*, 28 *Oct.* 1216, in the Preſence of the *Pope*'s Legate, to whom he paid *Homage*, and the Earl of *Pembroke* was appointed Regent.

Q. What

Q. What was *Lewis* doing the while?

A. He had made himſelf Maſter of the beſt Part of *England*, But, the Regent's great Influence and Abilities ſoon found Means to draw off moſt of the *Engliſh* from that Attachment, (notwithſtanding their Oaths of *Allegiance and Abjuration*, which *Lewis* had impoſed upon them) and ſoon after, to drive him, and all his *Foreigners*, out of the Nation.

Q. How did he effect it?

A. Partly, by Aſſurances of Pardon and Rewards to all thoſe who would revolt from *Lewis*; partly, by the Pope's having excommunicated the foreign Invaders and their Adherents; partly, by the Imprudence of that Prince, in putting his own Countrymen into Poſſeſſion of all the ſtrong Places he became Maſter of here, and their inſolent Behaviour to the Natives: But, moſt of all, by a famous Victory, which the Regent obtained over the *French* at *Lincoln*, 20 *May*, 1217, and the Defeat of their Fleet, 24 *Aug.* following.

Q. What Advantages did the Regent make of this Succeſs?

A. He cloſely beſieged *Lewis* in *London:* Who thereupon, ſuing for Peace, and renouncing all his Pretenſions to *England*, had Leave to return Home to *France*, in 1217.

Q. How did the Regent govern after this?

A. With great Prudence; ordering the Charters granted in the former Reign to be punctually obſerv'd; and taking all ſuch other Meaſures as were moſt likely to eſtabliſh his young Pupil in the Kingdom: But Death put an End to his Regency, in *May* 1219.

Q. To whom was the Adminiſtration now committed?

A. Peter, Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, was appointed Regent, and *Hubert de Burgo* Juſticiary.

Q. And how did they govern?

A. Very well, 'till, through ſome Diſagreement in their Meaſures, the former undertook an Expedition to the *Holy Land*, and the whole Adminiſtration devolved upon the latter: But the diſguſted Prelate and his Adherents ſoon took Occaſion to raiſe a Clamour of ſome arbitrary Practices, attended, as uſual, with popular Diſcontents and Tumults.

Q. How ſoon did *Henry* take the Government into his own Hands?

A. In *February* 1226, at the Age of 19.

Q. And how did he exerciſe it?

A. One of the firſt Acts of his Government was, to declare the two *Charters null*, as being paſſed by him during his Minority.

Q. Was not this of dangerous Conſequence to him?

A. Yes. But he ſuffered himſelf to be guided by *Hubert*, in order to make himſelf abſolute: Which occaſioned a Renewal of the Barons Complaints, and rekindled the Flames of Civil War in this Nation; to which his Quarrel with his Brother *Richard*, Earl of *Cornwall*, contributed the Fuel.

Q. What was that?

A. One *Waleran*, a *Dutchman*, or *German*, having got a Grant of a Manor belonging to that Earldom, *Richard* diſpoſſeſſed him; and finding himſelf in Danger of his Brother's violent Reſentment, retired from Court, and concerted Meaſures with ſome of the diſguſted Barons, for their common Safety and the public Good: Whereupon ſeveral of them took up Arms, to compel

compel *Henry* to diſmiſs the Foreigners and reſtore the Charters which he had annulled.

Q. And how were they appeaſed?

A. Richard, the Head of the Confederacy, being gratified in his own particular Views, was reconciled to his Brother, and left the Barons to themſelves, and the further Care of the public Good, to Providence.

Q. How did the Barons behave after this?

A. They never ceaſed purſuing *Hubert*, the Favourite, 'till they prevailed with his fickle Maſter, undeſervedly, to diſgrace him, and reſtore the Biſhop of *Wincheſter* to the Adminiſtration, in 1231, ſoon after his Return from the *Holy Land*.

Q. What were the greateſt Complaints againſt that great and able Miniſter?

A. His Enemies alledged his rigorous and arbitrary Proceedings in general, in Breach of the late Charters; his diſpoſſeſſing ſeveral of them of their Caſtles and Commands, by tricking Artifices, and working others out of Favour, by baſe Miſrepreſentations; his Contempt of the Laws, and Endeavours at abſolute Power; his engroſſing Honours and Dignities to himſelf and his Creatures; his ſuffering Foreigners to encroach on the *Engliſh* Territories, and preventing the making juſt Repriſals, *&c.* by the entire Aſcendant he had gained over his Maſter! All or moſt of which were either falſe or frivolous; tho' they ſerved for a Colour to the moſt outragious Indignities and Oppreſſions.

Q. Did the Biſhop of *Wincheſter* ſecure them againſt all theſe, or the like Grievances?

A. So far from it, that he ſeemed to aim at nothing but to ruin his Rival *Hubert*, and to make himſelf more *abſolute*; by the Help of

greater Numbers of *Foreigners*, whom he, from time to time, brought over, and put into Places of the greateſt Profit and Truſt, in open Defiance and Contempt of the *Engliſh*, as if they had been all meer Slaves!

Q. And what was the Event of this?

A. The Barons took Arms; and the then worthy Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, with others, made ſuch ſeaſonable and ſtrong Remonſtrances, as prevailed at laſt to get that moſt infamous Sett of Miniſters removed, and the reſt of the Foreigners ſent out of the Nation.

Q. Was the public Peace reſtored by theſe Means?

A. For a ſhort Time only. For *Henry*, marrying *Eleanor* of *Provence* in 1236, his Court became ſo full of her Countrymen, and their mercenary Creatures, as gave freſh and juſt Occaſion of Diſcontent to the *Engliſh*; though they did not openly rebel againſt him 'till ſome Years after.

Q. What paſs'd moſt remarkable in the mean Time?

A. The Princeſs *Eleanor* (Siſter and Heir to *Arthur*) dying a Virgin, in her long Confinement at *Briſtol*, *A. D.* 1241, *Henry* (who 'till then had been an *Uſurper* of her Right) became the undoubted *rightful* Sovereign.

Q. And how did he behave upon it?

A. Being but a very weak and capricious Prince, he went on in his former Path; neither conſulting his own Honour, nor the Intereſt of his People: So that, *if any Thing* could excuſe Subjects in the taking up Arms againſt their rightful Sovereign, thoſe in his Time might be acquitted of the Guilt of Treaſon. But 'tis remarkable, that the ſame *Grievances*, which they had

had tamely borne from him during his *Uſurpation*, were now proſecuted, in Defiance of his *Right*, with open Rebellion: As if Paſſive Obedience had been a Duty only under *Uſurpers!*

Q. What Grievances did his People charge him with?

A. They upbraided him with exceſſive Favours and Liberalities to the *Foreigners*, and Contempt of his native Subjects; with Neglect to encourage Trade and protect the Merchants from Inſults and Depredations: But one of the greateſt of all, was the intolerable Burthen of *Taxes* and Impoſitions, wherewith the Subjects were daily loaded, under Pretence of imaginary *Wars*, and yet the Money not properly applied to the public Service: Not to mention the immenſe Sums extorted by the *Pope*, and his Agents; which were chargeable upon the Misfortune of the Times, and the Influence of Foreign Counſels, more than on the King's own Miſconduct.

Q. But, was not the King's Authority ſunk very low in thoſe Days?

A. Yes; and ſo were the Rules of Decency: To that Degree, that *Montfort*, Earl of *Leiceſter*, had the Impudence to give his Sovereign the Lye to his Face; and was protected from his juſt Reſentment by the other Barons then preſent; a Spirit of *Faction* making them as inſolent and *audacious* in ſome Things to their now rightful Sovereign, as he was charged to be *arbitrary* in others.

Q. What Methods were uſed to reform the National Diſorders?

A. A Sort of a Regluation was made at *Oxford*, *A. D.* 1258, whereby the Adminiſtration was put into the Hands of 24 Commiſſioners; 12 choſen by the King, and 12 by the Barons.

Q. And how did theſe Regulators govern?

A. As *Rebel-Reformers* are generally wont to do; conſulting their own Intereſt, without the leaſt Regard to the Good of the Nation. They did not only wreſt from the King all his Prerogatives Royal, but, to ſtrengthen themſelves in their uſurp'd Power, ſhamefully gave up to *France* all the Claim which the Crown of *England* had to *Normandy*, *Anjou*, *Le Maine*, *Touraine* and *Poitou*, in 1260.

Q. Did this ſettle a Peace to the Nation?

A. The King, being reduced to this Condition by Force, and finding himſelf treated by them only as a Shadow of a Sovereign, began to reaſſert his Authority: In order to which he procured a Papal Bull in 1261, vacating all the Proceedings in the pretended Regulations at *Oxford*. Both Sides prepared for a War; but neither was willing to undergo the Odium of ſtriking the firſt Stroke. At length the Barons took Arms, under the Conduct of *Montfort*, Earl of *Leiceſter*, *A. D.* 1263, and made themſelves Maſters of many ſtrong Towns (and *London* among the reſt,) while the King was glad to keep himſelf ſafe within the Tower. At laſt, after various Amuſements by Treaties, they came to a Battle at *Lewes*, 14 *May* 1264; where the King himſelf, with his Brother *Richard* (King of the *Romans*,) the Prince, and Prince *Henry*, the Son of *Richard*, were all taken Priſoners.

Q. How were they diſpoſed of?

A. Leiceſter, General of the Rebels, having confined the reſt, carried the King about with him in his ſeveral Marches, publiſhing ſuch Orders as he thought fit, in the King's Name, tho' againſt the Royal Authority.

Q. What

Q. What particular Advantage was now made of the King's Reſtraint?

A. The Rebels found it neceſſary to procure a Sort of a Sanction to their Proceedings, in a *Parliamentary* Way; which (they knew) under their Influence, would readily give a Colour of Authority to the iniquitous Schemes: But, being conſcious, that an Aſſembly of the Barons of their own Side only, without admitting thoſe alſo who remained faithful to the King (which they were unwilling to do) would be but a pack'd *Convention*; therefore, out of an Affectation of Popularity, they iſſued out Summons, in the King's Name, to four Commoners out of every County, to meet and ſit in Parliament, as Repreſentatives of (tho' not elected by) the reſt of the Commons of *England*, *A. D.* 1264; which, in the Year following was changed into the Number of two for every County, and proportionably for the Cities and Burghs which were under the Influence of the Faction: And thus commenced the *Commons Privilege* to ſit and vote in Parliament!

Q. How were Affairs managed under this new Conſtitution?

A. Leiceſter having a chief Influence over all the Votes of theſe his Creatures, and giving room to ſuſpect that he aſpired to the Crown, the Earl of *Glouceſter*, in concert with *Roger de Mortimer*, contrived for Prince *Edward* the Means to eſcape: Who, being ſoon provided with a good Body of Troops, killed the Arch-Rebel *Leiceſter*, and defeated his Army at *Eveſham*, 4 *Aug.* 1265; thereby reſtoring the King his Father to Liberty, and all Parts of the Kingdom to Peace within about two Years afterwards.

Q. How long did this King ſurvive theſe Troubles?

A. 'Till 16 *Nov.* 1272, when he died at *London*, aged 65, after a long and troubleſome Reign of 56 Years, with the Character of having the Qualities of a *good Man*, but none of the Talents of a *great Prince.*

Q. What other memorable Events are recorded during his Reign?

A. The moſt ſolemn Confirmation of the *Great Charters* of *Engliſh* Liberty, under an *Anathema* denounc'd againſt all who ſhould ever preſume to violate the ſame, *A. D.* 1253 (ſtill in Force, and religiouſly obſerv'd by all good Princes:) The Submiſſion of the Principality of *Wales* to the Crown of *England*, *A. D.* 1237; and his rebuilding *Weſtminſter-Abbey* in 1241.

xxix. 9. EDWARD i.

Q. Who ſucceeded King *Henry* III?

A. His eldeſt Son, and undoubted Heir, Prince *Edward.*

Q. Of what Age was he at that Time?

A. In his 34th Year; being born 17 *June*, 1239.

Q. How had he diſtinguiſhed himſelf before his Acceſſion?

A. With great Courage and Honour, both at Home during his Father's Troubles, and after that, abroad, in the Holy War againſt the *Saracens* in 1271; from whence he was not return'd at his Father's Death.

Q. Was his Abſence no Diſadvantage to him in the Succeſſion?

A. No. All the Barons, with one Accord, ſwore *Allegiance* to him, as their natural Sovereign, though they had not even heard of him for ſome Time.

Q. How

Q. How long was he abſent after the Demiſe of the Crown?

A. He met the News in his Return through *Sicily* in 1272; after which he ſpent the Time at *Rome* and in *France*, 'till 2 *Aug.* 1274, when he landed here, and was crown'd on the 19th.

Q. What public Actions did he begin his Reign with?

A. Llewelin Prince of *Wales*, refuſing to pay his due Homage, the King attack'd him both by Sea and Land; which brought him to a Submiſſion for that Time. But, he revolting again in 1281, ſurpized and killed ſeveral of the King's Forces: However, in a raſh Encounter with the *Engliſh*, *Llewelin* was defeated and ſlain, his Country (which had contended bravely for its *Liberty*, with a Power much ſuperior to its own, for above 800 Years,) now totally ſubdued, and his Brother *David* (the laſt of that Family) cruelly put to an ignominious Death as a *Traytor*.

Q. What was the next conſiderable affair in this Reign?

A. Alexander III, King of *Scotland*, who had married King *Edward*'s Siſter, left at his Death, in 1285, no Heir but the young Princeſs *Margaret* (his Grand-Daughter by *Margaret* Queen of *Norway*;) whom the *Scots* dutifully acknowledged their Sovereign; appointing ſix Regents in her Name, 'till ſhe ſhould arrive, and be of Age to govern. In the mean Time King *Edward* had projected to unite the two Kingdoms by a Marriage between that young Queen and his Son the Prince; which was unanimouſly approved of by both Nations: But the young Queen died during the Preparation for her Voyage from *Norway*, in 1290. Whereupon that Kingdom was broken

broken into many Factions about the next Succeſſion.

Q. Who were the Pretenders?

A. In all Twelve. But the moſt conſiderable were three; *viz.* 1. *John Baliol*, Great-Grandſon to *David*, Earl of *Huntington*, by his eldeſt Daughter *Margaret*; 2. *Robert Bruce*, Grandſon to the ſame *David*, by his ſecond Daughter *Iſabella*; and 3. *John Haſtings*, Grandſon to the ſame, by his third daughter *Ada*. Which Line of *David*, Earl of *Huntington*, (under whom they all claimed) had the undoubted Right of Succeſſion to the Crown, after thoſe of his two elder Brothers, King *Malcolm* IV. (who died without Iſſue) and King *William*, whoſe Deſcendants were now extinct in *Margaret* of *Norway*.

Q. And what could then be objected againſt the Right of *Baliol*, the Heir of the eldeſt Daughter?

A. The other Competitor *Bruce*, having a powerful Party of Adherents, inſiſted on his being a Degree nearer as Grandſon, than *Baliol* who was the Great-Grandſon.

Q. Was not that eaſily over-ruled?

A. Not without the Interpoſition of King *Edward*; to whoſe Arbitration both Parties referred it, to prevent a Civil War.

Q. And how did he determine it?

A. Firſt, he demanded of the ſeveral Competitors an Acknowledgement of his Sovereignty, over *Scotland*, (which he had much at heart,) and to be put into the Poſſeſſion of the Kingdom for the Uſe of the King whom he ſhould award for; to both which (in order to gain his Favour) they ſeverally aſſented, tho' the States of the Kingdom did plainly diſapprove it: And, after a long

a long Formality of Proceſs, at laſt, 17 *Nov.* 1292, he adjudged the Right to be (as indeed it was) in *Baliol*; who thereupon, being crown'd, did *Homage* to King *Edward* for that Kingdom.

Q. Did this ſecure the Peace of that Kingdom?

A. His Award in Favour of the right Heir, was the proper Way to that End. But, his drawing them into an Acknowledgment of a pretended *Sovereignty* over that Kingdom was attended with fatal Conſequences.

Q. Did not ſeveral of the former Kings of *Scotland* pay *Homage* to thoſe of *England*?

A. Yes; for ſome of the moſt Southern Parts of that Country, and for ſuch Eſtates as they held in *England*, in the ſame Manner as the Kings of *England* did for thoſe they held in *France*. But, this was never allowed to be an Acknowledgment of any Sovereignty over the Kingdom of *Scotland*, properly ſo called.

Q. What Conſequences had this new Submiſſion?

A. King *Edward* beginning to exert his affected Sovereignty to the Height, the *Scots* entered into an Alliance with *France*, which was then at War with *England*, *A. D.* 1295. Upon which King *Edward* attacked *Scotland* by Land and Sea, defeated their Forces, reduced that Kingdom to a formal Submiſſion, brought the new King, with the Crown and Scepter, away into *England* in 1296, and burned the *Scotch* Records.

Q. How came that Kingdom to be ſo ſoon reduced?

A. King *Edward*, knowing that *Bruce* had a powerful Party there, prevailed with him, by the Offer of the Crown, to revolt from *Baliol*; whereby

whereby the Kingdom, thus unhappily divided, could not prevent his Triumph over both.

Q. Did the *Scots* make any more Attempts to recover their ancient Liberties and Independency?

A. Yes; ſeveral. For, firſt, they raiſed a ſmall Army under the Conduct of *William Wallace*, a celebrated Heroe, (though of no great Family or Fortune;) who drove the *Engliſh* out of that Kingdom, *A. D.* 1297. But, by the unhappy Emulations and Factions of the great Men, this Army was routed in 1298. Nevertheleſs, in 1302, they made another brave Effort; though King *Edward* regained all his former Advantages in the Year following: And the brave *Wallace*, being baſely betray'd into his Hands, was ungenerouſly put to an ignominious Death, *A. D.* 1305, (as if he had been a *Traytor!*) only for aſſerting thoſe *Liberties*, which the Laws of God and Nature give Mankind a Right to defend againſt Uſurpation.

Q. What became of *Baliol* and *Bruce*?

A. Baliol was deliver'd to the Pope's Nuncio in 1299. But, being neglected by his Ally of *France*, he lived and died as a private Perſon in *Picardie*, leaving a Son named *Edward*, but then a Priſoner in *England*. And *Bruce* dying, without the Crown which King *Edward* had promiſed him, his Son *Robert* took up Arms, and was crown'd in *Scotland*, 25 *March*, 1306.

Q. How did King *Edward* reſent this?

A. He firſt ſent the Earl of *Pembroke*, his General, who twice defeated *Robert*, and forced him to quit the Country; and ſoon after, himſelf following with a more numerous Army, exerciſed barbarous Cruelty upon ſuch of *Robert*'s Adherents as were in his Power. However, in 1307, the ſcattered Remains of the *Scots* gathered

thered together again, and *Robert* appearing unexpectedly at their Head, defeated *Pembroke*'s Army, and reſtored the Kingdom to its proper Independency. For, while King *Edward* was reſolving to revenge it, in the utter Deſtruction of the Country, it pleaſed God to afflict him with a Bloody-Flux; which carried him off, upon the Borders of *Scotland*, 7 *July*, 1307, Aged 68.

Q. Had not this King ſome other Wars abroad?

A. Yes; with the King of *France*, who had poſſeſſed himſelf of the Dutchy of *Guienne* by an Artifice: But that Difference had been ſoon made up by a Treaty, in 1303.

Q. What elſe was remarkable in this Reign?

A. His creating his eldeſt Son Prince of *Wales* and Earl of *Cheſter*, *A. D.* 1301; ſince which Time thoſe Titles have conſtantly been conferred on the eldeſt Sons of the Kings of *England:* And his executing an exemplary Piece of Juſtice, in baniſhing the ſame Prince from Court for near half a Year, and (as ſome ſay) cauſing him to be publickly committed to Priſon in 1305, for an Outrage againſt the Biſhop of *Lichfield*, by breaking into his Park and killing his Deer. Nor ought the exemplary Affection of *Eleanor*, his Royal Conſort, to be ever forgot; who is ſaid to have ſaved the Life of (the then Prince) her Huſband, in the Holy Land, by ſucking the Poiſon out of a Wound given him by a deſperate Aſſaſſin!

XXX. 10 EDWARD II.

Q. Who ſucceeded King *Edward?*

A. His

A. His eldeſt ſurviving Son *Edward*, Prince of *Wales*; in the 24th Year of his Age, being born 25 *April*, 1284.

Q. How did he begin his Reign?

A. With a moſt unpopular Action; recalling *Pierce Gaveſton*, a Foreigner, (who had been baniſh'd in the laſt Reign, as the Corrupter of the Prince's Youth;) and not only loading him with Honours, Riches and Power, to the Envy of all the great Men of *England*; but ſuffering him to fill the Court with Paraſites, Players, and other diſſolute Perſons: Among whom the King himſelf was wholly diſſolv'd in Luxury and Wantonneſs (falſely called *Pleaſures*) and left the Affairs of State to the Management of the Favourite and his Under-Agents.

Q. How far did the Barons carry their Reſentment againſt this Favourite?

A. Not content with dutiful Remonſtrances in order to prevail with the King to diſmiſs him, they peremptorily inſiſt to have him baniſh'd. And on his Return again, they, by their own arbitrary Power, not only beſiege and take him Priſoner, (notwithſtanding his Capitulation) but put him to Death, without any Trial, in open Contempt of their Sovereign's Authority, and his moſt preſſing Entreaties to ſpare *Gaveſton*'s Life.

Q. How did the King bear this?

A. Grievouſly enough. But the Barons (who were jealous of the leaſt Stretch of the *Prerogative* by the King) made no Scruple to diſpenſe with the Laws, and their natural Allegiance too, whenever they found an Opportunity to engroſs *new Liberties* and Privileges to themſelves. Thus, under the ſpecious Pretence of removing *evil Counſellors*, defending the Rights of the Church and State, and Redreſs of Grievances,

vances, they had prevail'd with the King to ſubmit to a pretended *Regulation*, whereby the Government was to be put into ſuch Hands as they could confide in: The Conſequence of which, was a Reſolution to take *Arms*, under the Earl of *Lancaſter*, (treading in the Steps of *Simon* Earl of *Leiceſter*) which they rebelliouſly turned againſt the King himſelf, before he was prepared to oppoſe them.

Q. What Uſe did they make of thoſe Arms againſt the King?

A. They firſt deſigned to ſurprize him in *York*: But failing there, they hunted him to *Newcaſtle*, where they ſeized his Baggage; and from thence to *Scarborough*, where they took *Gaveſton*.

Q. Were they not quiet, when they had revenged themſelves on *Gaveſton*?

A. No. They purſued the King himſelf into *Warwickſhire*, and from thence to *London*; where, with much ado, by the Mediation of the Pope's Nuntio and others, the Rebels were prevailed with to *aſk his Pardon*, which was too eaſily granted.

Q. Was the Kingdom now reſtored to Peace?

A. But for a Seaſon: During which the King marched into *Scotland*; where his Army of 100,000 was ſhamefully defeated at *Bannocks-Burn* by 30,000 (or, at moſt, 40,000) *Scots*, 24 *June* 1314.

Q. What was the Cauſe of this Overthrow?

A. Beſides the Courage and Conduct of the *Scots*, now united under *Robert Bruce*, (whom they now acknowledg'd to be the *Deliverer of their Country*; ſeveral of the principal *Engliſh* Barons refuſed to ſerve King *Edward* in this Expedition; and others of the ſame Faction choſe to hazard

hazard a Defeat, rather than the King ſhould triumph: Nor could all his Endeavours prevail with them to re-enter *Scotland*, in order to redeem their Honour by another Battle, though the King was very intent upon it.

Q. What paſſed at home after this?

A. The diſaffected Barons, (who ſtudied only the aggrandizing their own *Faction*, on the Ruins of the Publick,) had no Regard to the Honour and Intereſt of the Nation; but, watching to take all Advantages againſt the King, had procured *Hugh Spencer*, a graceful young Gentleman, to be made the King's Chamberlain, whom they deſigned to make Uſe of as *their Spy:* But, inſtead of that, he had the Addreſs to ſucceed *Gaveſton* in his Maſter's Favour, and conſequently in the Hatred of the Barons.

Q. What was the Effect of this?

A. It cauſed a freſh Revolt. The firſt Occaſion of which was only about the Purchaſe of an Eſtate, of which *Spencer* had diſappointed one of the Confederates: But a Clamour was immediately rais'd, of the Danger of Liberty and Property, and Encroachments on the Rights of the People. Under with Pretence, they renew'd their Aſſociation, rais'd an Army, plunder'd *Spencer*'s Eſtates, and then demanded of the King to baniſh both him and his Father; which the unhappy King was forc'd to comply with for a Time.

Q. Was he not able to recover his Authority?

A. Yes, in a great Meaſure. For, the Queen being inſolently affronted by one of the ungrateful Barons (who refuſed her a Night's Lodging in his Caſtle) the King, after having done himſelf Juſtice for that Indignity, purſued the Advantage againſt the Confederates, who were then in Arms, reducing ſome by Submiſſion, putting

Lancaſter

Lancaſter (the Ringleader) and ſeveral more of the principal Rebels, to Death, and puniſhing others by Fine, Impriſonment, or Exile, *A. D.* 1322. But, notwithſtanding they were in open *Rebellion*, none of the common People were executed.

Q. What Effect had theſe Examples on the reſt?

A. How neceſſary ſoever in themſelves, they were exclaim'd againſt as barbarous and inhumane; the People not being yet acquainted with the much more numerous and cruel Inſtances of Vengeance, which ſome of the *ſucceeding* Princes have ſhewn, on leſs juſtifiable Occaſions!

Q. Had the King no freſh Troubles after this?

A. Yes; of the moſt tender Nature, aggravated by the unnatural Conduct of his own Queen *Iſabella*.

Q. What was that?

A. During a Miſunderſtanding between her Huſband and Brother (the Kings of *England* and *France*) ſhe, under Pretence of a Mediation, went to the *French* Court, *A. D.* 1325, where ſhe artfully procured her Son Prince *Edward* to be ſent over to her, and inveſted with the *Engliſh* Provinces of *Guienne* and *Ponthieu*. Then, ſhe began openly to cabal with King *Edward*'s profeſs'd Enemies abroad, and ſecretly to correſpond with thoſe at home; and ſhe even preſumed to diſpoſe of the Prince in Marriage with the Earl of *Hainault*'s Daughter; who thereupon furniſh'd her with a Body of Troops, tho' that Contract did not take Effect 'till after the King's Death.

Q. What Uſe did ſhe make of thoſe?

A. Tho' ſhe had refus'd to return before, at the King's repeated Commands, ſhe now landed in *Suffolk*, 22 *Sept.* 1326, and being immediately join'd by her Confederate Barons, her Party

ſtruck

ſtruck ſuch a Terror into the reſt, that the King (who could hardly ſuſpect a *Revolution* ſo unnatural) was deſerted even by thoſe who owed their *All* to the King's Bounty; who thereupon embark'd for *Ireland:* But the Winds forcing him again on Shore in *Wales*, he lay conceal'd in the Abby of *Neath*, while the wicked Queen over-ran the Country in Purſuit of him.

Q. What Uſe did ſhe make of this Advantage?

A. She took *Briſtol*, where the King had left *Spencer* the Father (Earl of *Wincheſter*;) and, without any Formality of Trial, hanged up the old Gentleman, (even in his Armour) aged 90 Years, and conſcious of no Crime, but a then unfaſhionable *Loyalty*. At the ſame Time, the *Londoners*, (declaring as uſual, for the ſtronger Party) murdered Biſhop *Stapleton* of *Exeter*, (who was left in Truſt there by the King) for only endeavouring to keep them within the Bounds of their Duty. And now the Report being ſpread that the King was gone out of the Kingdom, and no Body authorized by him to govern during his Abſence, the Lords of her Party (glad of that *Pretence*, as if he had *abdicated* the Government) preſently reſolved to commit the Adminiſtration to the Prince.

Q. Did they not ſet him in the *vacant Throne* as King?

A. They were not yet ſo thorough-paced; but only declared him *Regent*.

Q. Was the Prince then at an Age for Government?

A. He was but 14 Years old: But his Mother, (who ſtuck at nothing) took it upon her, to iſſue her Proclamation, inviting the King to reſume the Government, when ſhe well knew, he could never more truſt his Perſon in her Power! Which

Hy-

Hypocriſy was ſoon after manifeſted, when the King being diſcover'd, ſhe robbed him of his Great Seal; which ſhe made uſe of againſt himſelf, in the calling a Parliament to compleat the *Revolution*.

Q. And now what became of the King?

A. He was carried a Priſoner to *Kenelworth* Caſtle; the Earl of *Arundel* and others beheaded; Earl *Spencer*, the Favourite, hang'd and quarter'd; and though *Baldoc* the Chancellor (who was a Clergyman) eſcaped the ſame Puniſhment, yet he was carried to *London*, where the Rabble abuſed him ſo barbarouſly, that he died of the Wounds in *Newgate*. All which, and more ſuch-like arbitrary and illegal Acts of *Rebel-Reformers*, paſſed (as uſual in ſuch pious Times,) with great Applauſe, and all Appearance of a general Approbation.

Q. Was not the Queen's Malice aſſwaged by all this?

A. No. Though her declar'd Intention was to remove *Evil Counſellors*, and redreſs *Grievances*; yet her real Deſign was to *depoſe* the King, and *uſurp* his Throne. To which End, her next March was to *London*, to meet her *Convention* in the Parliament-Houſe; which was chiefly compoſed of thoſe who were either outlaw'd for their former Rebellion, or liable to the ſame for their joining in this. And ſo much did ſhe glory in her monſtrous Wickedneſs, that ſhe entered the City in Triumph; delighting herſelf with the Acclamations of a mad and mercenary Mob, ſaluting her with the Title of *their Deliverer!*

Q. How did the pretended Parliament receive her?

A. Like

A. Like thorough-paced *Revolutioniſts.* They had been beforehand ſo managed and pack'd, that, when the King's Condition was laid before them, there was not ſo much as one appeared among them, honeſt and brave enough, to ſhew the leaſt Senſe of Loyalty or Law, Compaſſion or Conſcience, 'till it was out of their Power to do him any Service. Thus, the Faction meeting with no Oppoſition, it was trayterouſly reſolv'd, that the King ſhould be *depoſed,* and his Son *made King* in his Room; upon which the Prince was immediately proclaim'd King, which was ecchoed by the Mob, and a Time-ſerving canting Prelate was impious enough to aſcribe it to *Providence*; preaching to the noiſy Populace, that *the Voice of the People is the Voice of God!*

Q. Had not the Queen now her Wiſh?

A. Undoubtedly; except only the King's Life. However, ſhe affecting to ſhed ſome *Crocodile*'s Tears, her Son (not yet perhaps ſenſible of her *Hypocriſy*) ſolemnly vow'd, that he would not accept the Crown during his Father's Life, without his expreſs Conſent.

Q. Did not this ſtartle the Faction?

A. It broke their Meaſures ſo far, that they found it neceſſary to oblige the King to reſign the Crown to his Son. In order to which, they diſpatch'd two or three of the worſt and rudeſt of the Biſhops, to prepare him for it; follow'd by other Commiſſioners who were to receive it, and by the Mouth of *Truſſell* (an outlaw'd Rebel) to renounce all Allegiance to him.

Q. How did the King behave to them?

A. After the firſt Shock was over, he recollected himſelf, and reſign'd the Enſigns of Royalty, 22 *Jan.* 1326.

Q. How

Q. How long did he ſurvive it?

A. 'Till 22 *September* following: When he was murder'd, with a Barbarity never before heard of, Aged 43.

Q. What was his real Character?

A. That he was a Prince of too much good Nature, but no great Genius; eaſily manag'd by thoſe in whom he placed a Confidence; rather weak than wicked; never having done any thing to deſerve the Character of a Tyrant or very ill Man: And this made him ſo *little* in the Eyes of his *Engliſh* Subjects, who ſeem to like thoſe beſt who rule them with a Rod of Iron. However, the Weight of his Misfortunes are not ſo much to be imputed to his own Miſconduct, as to the Intrigues of his perfidious Queen with her Minion *Mortimer*.

XXXI. II. EDWARD III.

Q. Did not King *Edward* III. ſucceed his Father?

A. Yes, he held the Crown which he was poſſeſs'd of before.

Q. When did his Reign commence?

A. He was King in *Fact*, when the Convention took upon them to inveſt him with the Sovereignty, 25 *Jan.* 1327; but he did not become King of *Right*, 'till the King his Father's Death, 22 *Sept.* 1326.

Q. Did not his Father's Reſignation convey the Right to him?

A. No. Becauſe it was not voluntary, but extorted by Menaces and the Dureſs of Impriſonment.

Q. What Hardſhips did he ſuffer?

A. Reſtraint of his Liberty had been, of itſelf, unjuſtifiable in Subjects, who have no coercive

Authority over their Sovereign. But, that unhappy Prince had been previouſly depoſed by his own Subjects; who took upon them, without any Authority or Precedent, to diſcharge themſelves of their natural and ſworn Allegiance to him, and transfer it to another: And, before he was prevail'd with to reſign, he was audaciouſly told, that if he refuſed to comply, they would not only ſet him aſide, but his Son too, and prefer *another Family* to the Throne!

Q. But did the People find the Benefits they were made to expect upon that Revolution?

A. Nothing leſs. They ſoon found themſelves govern'd by a young Prince, under the Direction of a paſſionate Mother, and her evil Counſellor, far more preſumptuous, and leſs capable of the Adminiſtration, than *Gaveſton* or the *Spencers*.

Q. When was young *Edward* crown'd?

A. February 1, 1326, in the 14th Year of his Age; being born 13 *Nov.* 1312.

Q. What were the firſt Tranſactions, after this Revolution?

A. The reverſing the *Attainders* of all thoſe who had ſuffer'd for Treaſon againſt King *Edward* II. the better to juſtify themſelves, who had well deſerv'd the like, if their *Succeſs* had not been their only Protection.

Q. Had none of the Party Grace, or Tenderneſs enough, to relent at the cruel Uſage of their King?

A. The then Earl of *Lancaſter* himſelf, was ſuſpected of an Inclination to reſtore him, partly out of Generoſity, and partly out of Indignation at the Queen's ſcandalous Commerce with *Mortimer*. But, they took effectual Care to prevent it, by putting the unhappy Captive into the Hands of *Maltravers* and *Gurney* (two brutal Knights;)

Knights;) who removed him by Night from *Kenelworth* to *Corfe*-Caſtle, thence to *Briſtol*, and laſt of all to *Berkley*-Caſtle; treating him every where with monſtrous Barbarity, in hopes to haſten his Death. But, when all theſe did not prevail over the Strength of his Conſtitution, freſh Orders were ſent them to make ſure Work, tho' with the affected Ambiguity of an *Heathen* Oracle; *Edvardum occidere nolite timere bonum eſt!* The meaning of which, thoſe Miniſters of Hell being too well acquainted with, entered his Bed-Chamber, ſtopped his Mouth, forced a hollow Pipe of Horn into the Paſſage of Nature, through which they ran a red-hot Iron into his Bowels, without leaving any Marks of Violence, and buried him privately at *Glouceſter*; the young King (ſo call'd) being then in the North, in a fruitleſs Expedition againſt the *Scots*.

Q. Did not *Divine Juſtice* overtake theſe execrable Regicides?

A. Yes. The very Perſons who employed them, affecting to purſue them with Vengeance, (only to ſcreen themſelves from the Suſpicion,) they both fled beyond Sea; where *Gurney*, being ſeized, three Years afterwards at *Burgos* in *Caſtille*, was ordered Home by the young King, to receive a condign Puniſhment; but he was ſecretly put to Death in his Paſſage by Sea, to prevent the Diſcovery of the other great Perſons who had ſet him to work. However, Providence at length brought them to Light, and expoſed them to *ſome* Share of their deſerved Puniſhment, even in *this Life*.

Q. But how did they govern in the mean Time?

A. The Queen-Mother and *Mortimer*, who uſurped all the Authority during the new King's

Nonage, patched up a Peace with the *Scots*, who had made freſh Depredations on the Borders; whereby, (without having made any more than a *Raree-ſhow* of fighting) they yielded up all the Advantages gained over that Nation by King *Edward* I. (diverting the young King's Thoughts from *Scotland*, with a Notion of his Right to the Crown of *France*;) and procured the Terms to be approved of by a Parliament, compoſed of their own Faction, in 1328.

Q. Did not this open the Eyes of the People at laſt?

A. Yes; now, when it was too late, the *Engliſh* could plainly ſee themſelves ſtript by *Treaties*, of more Advantages than their Neighbours could have expected to gain by an open *War*. From whence it was natural to reflect, how the very Perſons who pretend to *reform* the Government by irregular Methods, have commonly nothing leſs in view than the public Good, which ſerved them for a *Pretence*.

Q. And did they bear it all with Patience?

A. No. They concerted Meaſures to redreſs their Grievances; by obliging the Queen-Mother to refund the immenſe Revenues ſhe had engroſs'd to herſelf, (far exceeding thoſe of other Queens;) by examining into the Murder of the late King; and by bringing *Mortimer* (newly created Earl of *March*) to condign Puniſhment. But, the conſcious Offenders artfully extricated themſelves out of the preſent Danger, by publiſhing a *general Pardon*.

Q. Did this reconcile the Mal-contents?

A. It quieted them for a while. But it was not long, before a freſh Provocation was given them, by a helliſh Snare, into which the Earl of *Kent* (the King's Uncle) was unwarily drawn,

by

by a falſe Rumour as if the late King was yet alive: Whereby the unfortunate Earl, expreſſing a Deſire of his Brother's Reſtoration, fell a Sacrifice to the Queen-Mother and *Mortimer*; tho' he had been before drawn in, to join with them, not foreſeeing nor ſuſpecting the dire Effects of their Undertaking.

Q. How were they brought to Juſtice at laſt?

A. The King, being made acquainted with their Practices, found Means to ſurprize them in the Caſtle of *Nottingham*; from whence *Mortimer* was ſent to the Tower of *London*: And, another Parliament being ſummoned, he was condemned to be drawn and hang'd; which was executed at *Tyburn*, 29 *Nov.* 1330, and his naked Body left there hanging two Days!

Q. What was moſt remarkable in his Caſe?

A. That he and his Accomplices, were (amongſt other Things) adjudged guilty of HIGH-TREASON, for conſenting to the Murder of their *Liege-Lord*, King *Edward* II. tho' then actually *depoſed*, and *diſpoſſeſs'd* of the Government.

Q. How did the Queen-Mother eſcape?

A. She narrowly eſcaped with her *Life*, out of Regard to the King: But was condemned to perpetual Impriſonment, and the Forfeiture of all her Lands; in which Condition ſhe lived on a Penſion, 28 Years, 'till her Death.

Q. What other conſiderable Occurrences happened in this Reign?

A. The King had married *Philippa* of *Hainault*, 24 *Jan.* 1328, and now took the Adminiſtration of the Government into his own Hands, during this ſame Parliament, being about the Age of 18 Years.

Q. And how did he exerciſe it?

A. With great Glory, both to himſelf and the Nation.

Q. Had not he ſome Conteſts with *France?*

A. Yes; firſt for the Regency, and afterwards for the Crown.

Q. What Title had King *Edward* to the Crown of *France?*

A. As Son and Heir to *Iſabella*, Siſter and ſole Heir to *Charles the Fair*, King of *France*, who died 1 *Feb.* 1328, leaving his Wife big with Child of a Daughter. Upon which, King *Edward* claimed the Regency, as he afterwards did the Crown, but was deprived of both according to the *Salic* Law, by the Preference of *Philip* of *Valois*, the Male Heir of a younger Brother of King *Charles*'s Father. However, King *Edward*, being then in his Minority, and under the Influence of his Mother and *Mortimer*, did not farther proſecute his Claim 'till a more favourable Opportunity.

Q. Did he not engage in the mean Time againſt *Scotland?*

A. Yes; in Purſuance of King *Edward* the Firſt's Pretenſions to the Sovereignty of that Kingdom, he made uſe of *Edward*, the Son of *John Baliol* (whom that King had firſt advanced, and afterwards diſpoſſeſſed of it) ſecretly encouraging him to revive his Claim of Right againſt *David* the Son of *Robert Bruce*, who had contracted a Marriage with King *Edward*'s own Siſter. Accordingly *Edward Baliol*, landing in *Scotland*, obtained four Victories ſucceſſively over the Forces of young *David*, *A. D.* 1332, who was forced to fly into *France.*

Q. Did the *Scotch* King *Edward* now recover his Father's Throne?

A. Yes;

A. Yes; and was crown'd at *Scone:* But did not long enjoy it in Peace.

Q. What was the Iſſue of this?

A. No ſooner was he on the Throne, but (according to Agreement) he did *Homage*, in Token of Subjection to the King of *England*, and reſigned to him *Berwick*; which when recovered out of the Hands of *David*'s Adherents, after the Battle of *Halydown-Hill*, was annexed to the Crown of *England* in 1333. But the *Scots*, enraged at this Indignity, took Arms againſt their new King, and drove him out of the Nation: On which Provocation, King *Edward* made ſeveral Expeditions into that Country, which he over-ran with Fire and Sword, ſo far as he could penetrate; tho' he ſtill found ſome *Patriots* ſo firm and reſolute, as to expoſe themſelves to the laſt Extremity, rather than ſubmit to a foreign Yoke.

Q. What was his next Undertaking?

A. Being now no longer in Fear of *Scotland*, after a Truce he reſolved on aſſerting his Claim to *France:* For which he made a Preparation ſuitable to the Undertaking, and took upon him the Royal Title, and Arms, accordingly *A. D.* 1340.

Q. What were the principal Actions performed in this War?

A. King *Edward* had enter'd *France* in 1339, without any conſiderable Action: But, 24 *June*, 1340, he entirely defeated the *French* Fleet on the Coaſt of *Flanders*, taking above 230 large Ships: And, after various Amuſements by Truce and Treaties, he obtained a ſignal Victory over their King's Army in the Battle of *Creſſy*, under the immediate Conduct of his Son (*the Black Prince*, ſo called from his wearing black Armour) then but 16 Years old, 26 *Aug.* 1346, where,

it is ſaid, the *Engliſh* firſt made uſe of *Guns*, before that Time not heard in *France*; and after a Siege of 11 Months became Maſter of *Calais*, 4 *Aug.* 1347.

Q. What was moſt memorable on the taking that Town?

A. The King, being enraged at their not ſurrendering 'till the laſt Extremity, refuſed to grant them even their Lives, but on Condition of their delivering up ſix of their Principal Burghers (whom they were to chuſe) for a *Sacrifice* to his Reſentment. In this general Conſternation, *Euſtace de* St. *Pierre*, one of the Chiefs, and five more by his Example, gallantly offered themſelves up to him as Victims for the reſt. And, when they were proceeding to Execution, notwithſtanding the Interceſſion of the Prince in their Behalf, it was owing to the Tears and Entreaties of the good Queen *Philippa*, that thoſe glorious *Patriots* were ſent back with Pardon and Preſents.

Q. Were the *Scots* quiet all this while?

A. No. By the Influence of *France*, they entered *England* with a great Army: But were met and defeated by the Queen, near *Durham*; where *David* (who was now repoſſeſſed of the Kingdom of *Scotland*) was wounded and taken Priſoner, after a ſtout Reſiſtance, 17 *October* 1346, and ſo continued 'till 28 *April* 1357.

Q. What became of *Edward Baliol* the while?

A. After his Expulſion from the Throne, he had lived retired in *England*, 'till at length, being worne out with Fatigues and Infirmities, he freely reſigned his Claim, to King *Edward*, in 1356, being the laſt of his Family.

Q. What Figure did the *Engliſh* now make in Trade abroad?

A. The

A. The Merchants complaining to the King of certain *Spaniſh* Ships, which intercepted their Trade, and committed various Depredations upon them, he generouſly went on board in Perſon, and meeting with the *Spaniſh* Fleet on the Coaſt near *Winchelſea*, took 24 of their Ships, deſtroyed others, and cleared the Seas of the reſt, 29 *Aug.* 1350. Which Action he reckoned among his greateſt Glories, tho' the Imperial Throne had been offer'd him, by the *German* Electors, in 1348, which he civilly refuſed.

Q. What further Progreſs did the *Engliſh* make in *France?*

A. The Prince of *Wales* being attack'd with an Army of above ſix times the Number, near *Poictiers*, obtained a Compleat Victory, and took more Priſoners than himſelf had Soldiers: Among whom was their King *John* himſelf (who ſucceeded *Philip* his Father in the Throne) with one of his Sons, and many of his principal Nobility, 19 *Sept.* 1356, who were all treated by the victorious Prince with his wonted Gallantry; that moſt accompliſhed *Hero* paying his Captive all the Reſpect due to his Royal Dignity, and waiting on him in Perſon at a magnificent Supper.

Q. How did the captive Princes obtain their Liberty?

A. David of *Scotland* gained his Liberty, 3 *Oct.* 1357, and a Truce for ten Years, on Security of paying 100,000 Marks, by ſo many yearly Payments; and during that Time, on the Death of *Baliol*, was become the undiſputed *Rightful* King of that Country, and an *Independent* Monarch. But *John* of *France* continued a Priſoner 'till *July* 1360, when he was enlarged in Purſuance of the Treaty of *Bretagny*.

Q. What was the Cauſe of his ſo long Reſtraint?

A. The States of *France* diſagreed to the Terms of a Treaty made between the two Kings in Perſon. Upon which, King *Edward* paſſed over with a mighty Army, and over-ran the Country to the very Gates of *Paris*; 'till a Treaty was ſet on Foot, which gave ſome Intermiſſion to the Calamities of *France*.

Q. On what Terms was it concluded?

A. King *Edward* was put into Poſſeſſion of ſeveral Provinces in *France*, formerly enjoy'd by his Anceſtors, together with certain other Acquiſitions; and ſecured to be paid 3,000,000 of Crowns of Gold for the *French* King's Ranſom. After which, theſe two Kings parted, with mutual Honour and Eſteem: But, King *John* coming over again, on a friendly Viſit, contracted a Diſtemper; of which he died here, 8 *April*, 1364, univerſally lamented.

Q. Had King *Edward* any Controverſy with the Pope?

A. Yes; *Urban* V. ſent him a haughty Demand of above 30 Years Arrear of Tribute, in Purſuance of his Pretence of Sovereignty: But he received ſuch a firm and reſolute Anſwer, in 1366, as ſilenced that Demand for ever.

Q. Was the remaining Part of this Reign as proſperous as the foregoing?

A. Far otherwiſe. The gallant Prince of *Wales*, (being ſenſible, that it was the common Concern of all juſt and rightful Princes, not to ſuffer *Uſurpations* in any Country) readily engaged in an Expedition to *Caſtile*, where he reſtored King *Peter*, who had been depoſed, by the Intrigues of the *Pope* with his Baſtard-Brother and Subjects: But there he unhappily contracted

racted a Dropſy in 1368, of which he languiſhed many Years. The Duke of *Clarence*, his next ſurviving Brother, died in the ſame Year. *Charles* V. King of *France*, ſucceeding his Father, perfidiouſly broke the late Peace, proclaimed War, and confiſcated the *Engliſh* Eſtates in *France*, in 1369. The excellent Queen died the ſame Year. The Provinces revolted by Land; and the Fleet miſcarried at Sea, in 1372. And, in ſhort, *France* now recovered all ſhe had loſt in the former War, except *Calais*.

Q. What was King *Edward* doing all the while?

A. His own Generoſity had inclined him to depend too much upon the *French* Honour; ſo that *Charles* was prepared to execute his Deſigns before *Edward* ſuſpected him: And the *French* Hoſtages, who had great Liberty indulged them, did baſely break their *Parole*. He was now alſo advanc'd in Years, and infirm, which abated his military Ardor; and the incomparable Black Prince was a long time diſabled by Sickneſs, of which he died, 8 *June* 1376. So that, tho' he had ſent Forces under the Duke of *Lancaſter* and other Commanders, their ſeveral Expeditions turned to little Account, and ended in a Truce in 1375.

Q. Did not he improve that Time to his Advantage?

A. No. His Mind ſeemed to decay with his Conſtitution; and then his good Fortune left him. The common Report of Hiſtorians is, that he fell into an unhappy Amour with *Alice Pierce*, on whom he doated, ſo as to neglect every thing, to divert her with vain Shews and Entertainments; ſo that his frequent Demands of Money, and Miſapplications of it, made his People ſo un-

eaſy, that his Parliament interpoſed to get the Favourite baniſhed, tho' ſhe was ſoon recalled again: And that at laſt the baſe Wretch had the Ingratitude to forſake him (as all the reſt of his Domeſticks did) when he was dying; but not 'till ſhe had ſtripp'd him, even of the very Rings on his Fingers! But, ſince others have repreſented her as a Lady of Senſe and Merit, no otherwiſe in Favour with the King, than as ſhe had been highly diſtinguiſh'd in that of his excellent Queen, her Character ought not to be handed down in ſuch an odious Colour. However, ſuppoſing it to be true, it may be a Leſſon to other Princes, how little they are follow'd for *their own Sakes*, but only to gratify the Avarice and Ambition of their worthleſs Attendants!

Q. When did he die?

A. 21 *June* 1377, at *Sheen*; in the 65th Year of his Age, and the 51ſt of his Reign.

Q. What other things were moſt memorable in this Reign?

A. Prince *Edward* was created Duke of *Cornwall*, in 1337, being the firſt that was created a Duke in *England*. The Order of the Garter was inſtituted in 1350. *Windſor*-Caſtle was improv'd with magnificent Buildings, and the Chapel new founded; the famous *William* of *Wickham* being the Surveyor of the Structure. And, as a diſtinguiſhing Mark of Honour to *London*, he proclaimed a ſolemn Tournament for three days againſt all Comers: Wherein the *King* himſelf perſonated the Lord Mayor, and the *Black Prince*, with three of the King's other Sons, and ſome of the principal Peers of the Realm, perſonated the Sheriffs and Aldermen; all bearing the City's Arms on their Shields and Surcoats.

Q. Di'

Q. Did not the famous Reformer *Wickliff* flouriſh in this Time?

A. Yes. And it is agreed, that he had ſome *Gold* in his Mine, tho' not without a Mixture of coarſer Ingredients, equally dangerous to all Government Civil and Eccleſiaſtical. His Arguments againſt the Papal Uſurpations being well grounded, rendered all his Invectives againſt the Clergy, in general, very agreeable to thoſe who were juſtly grown weary of the *Roman* Yoke. But, his ſetting the People looſe from Diſcipline, raiſing the Power of the Laity, and boldly pronouncing the Spiritual Powers and Revenues of the Church precarious, made his Doctrines ſo extremely acceptable to the popular *Demagogues*, that the Duke of *Lancaſter*, and ſome other great Men of his Faction patronized him to Lengths unwarrantable, rather out of Spite to the *Clergy*, than Deſire of a ſober *Reformation*.

Q. How many Children had this King?

A. In all 12. Of whom 7 were Sons; *viz.* 1. Prince *Edward*, who died the Year before his Father, but left his Son *Richard* Heir Apparent: 2. *William* of *Hatfield*, who died a Child: 3. *Lionel*, Duke of *Clarence*; who died before his Father, but left a Daughter named *Philippa*: 4. *John* Duke of *Lancaſter*: 5. *Edmund*, Earl of *Cambridge*, and afterward Duke of *York*: 6. *William* of *Windſor*, who died young: And, 7. *Thomas* of *Woodſtock*, afterwards Duke of *Buckingham* and *Glouceſter*.

XXXII. 12. RICHARD II.

Q. Who ſucceeded King *Edward* III?

A. His undoubted Heir, *Richard*, the ſurviving Son

Son of *Edward* the Black Prince, in the 11th Year of his Age.

Q. Did nobody oppose his Right of Succession?

A. It was suspected both by the late King and Prince, that the ambitious Duke of *Lancaster*, his then oldest Uncle, would be inclined to usurp upon him; and therefore timely Care was taken to prevent it, as far as the Sacred Tie of *Oaths* and other legal Sanctions could oblige.

Q. When was he crown'd?

A. July 16, 1377. And the Duke of *Lancaster*, with several others, appointed Regents.

Q. How did they govern during his Minority?

A. Very negligently. The *French* made several Descents, and ravaged the Coast of *England*; and the *Scots* were troublesome on the Borders. Yet they took care to send Troops to assist the King of *Portugal* against the King of *Castile*; rather to support the Duke of *Lancaster*'s personal Pretensions to that latter Crown, in right of his Wife, who was the eldest Daughter of King Peter, whom the Black Prince had restor'd, than out of regard to the publick Interest of *England*.

Q. Was the Peace at Home well kept the while?

A. No. The King's Revenues being ill manag'd, and the Farmers of them levying the Taxes with great Rigour, occasioned an Insurrection in *Kent* and *Essex*, of 100,000 Peasants, under the Conduct of one *Walter*, a Tyler; who marched at the Head of his Mob of *Levellers* (accompanied by one *Ball*, a Field-Preacher) towards *London*, breathing Revenge on the Nobility, Lawyers, and other Gentlemen, and murdering such of them as fell into their Hands. They insolently demanded of the King to come and speak with them in Person: Which not

bein-

being thought ſafe, they plundered *Southwark*; and being let into the City by the *London*-Mob, advanced to the Duke of *Lancaſter*'s Palace of the *Savoy*, which they reduced to Aſhes, together with other houſes of Diſtinction; plundering the *Temple*, and ſparing nothing that was expoſed to their Fury and Madneſs of Reformation. Then they proceeded to the Tower; and, entering it without Oppoſition, beheaded *Sudbury*, Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, and *Hales*, the Lord High-Treaſurer, whom they found there.

Q. How was this Rebellion ſuppreſſed?

A. Partly by an Offer of Pardon; which the *Eſſex*-Men accepted of, and withdrew: But *Walter*, the Tyler, coming to a perſonal Conference with the King in *Smithfield*, and there inſiſting on extravagant Terms with brutiſh Inſolence, was deſervedly ſtruck dead by *Walworth*, the gallant Lord-Mayor of *London*, *A. D.* 1381.

Q. What was the effect of this dangerous Action?

A. The Rebels had their Bows bent to revenge it, when the young King, with amazing Preſence of Mind, (tho' neither of his Uncles, nor any other of the Nobility, had taken Care to be near his Perſon, in this Extremity,) putting himſelf at their Head, and calling to them to follow him, led them into St. *George*'s Fields, where, ſeeing themſelves follow'd by the Lord-Mayor, and a Troop of well armed Citizens, they threw down their Arms, and diſperſed themſelves in Confuſion.

Q. Were there any other Commotions of the ſame Kind?

A. Yes; in *Suffolk* and *Norfolk* and the neighbouring Countries: Where they murdered the Judges, and Lawyers, and other Gentlemen; de-

deſtroying all the ancient Charters they met with: But theſe were all ſuppreſſed by the Courage and Conduct of *Spencer*, Biſhop of *Norwich*; who putting himſelf at the Head of a Party of Loyaliſts took the Ringleaders, (who were brought to Juſtice) and a terrible ſlaughter was made among the reſt.

Q. Did the Kingdom now enjoy Peace after this?

A. No. Thoſe about the King, ſuſpecting the Duke of *Lancaſter* of ſiniſter Deſigns on the Crown, poſſeſſed the young King with the like Jealouſy: Whereupon the Duke, in high Reſentment, had retired from Court, and raiſed Forces, under Pretence of defending him from their Malice. And tho' Hoſtilities were happily prevented, at that Time, by the Mediation of the King's Mother, the Duke was but little truſted afterwards; for which he purſued the Favourite Miniſters, with all his Art and Intereſt, as *Evil Counſellors*. This raiſed ſuch a Faction in the Kingdom, that, even when *France* was prepared to invade us, the *Parliament* would not truſt the King with the Supplies neceſſary to be raiſed, unleſs he would diſmiſs thoſe pretended *Evil-Counſellors*; thus not ſcrupling to hazard the Loſs of the whole Kingdom, out of Spite to two or three Favourites, whoſe great Crime was their loyal Zeal for their Maſter, in oppoſition to the unnatural Attempts of the aſpiring *Lancaſtrian* Party.

Q. What Courſe did the King take at this Juncture?

A. Juſtly incenſed at ſuch an unſeaſonable Motion, he forebore a while to meet the Parliament: But afterwards complied with their unreaſonable Importunity, to remove his Miniſters, tho'

tho' they were ſoon recall'd again. This ſerved the diſaffected Lords for a Pretence to raiſe an Army; with which they fought and defeated the Forces raiſed for the King's Service: And afterwards advancing to *London*, had the Impudence to threaten their Sovereign to his Face, with the Choice of another King, *A. D.* 1388. Soon after which, a Parliament was called by *their* Influence, wherein were made divers Examples, either of public Juſtice, or (rather of) factious Fury.

Q. Who were the Chiefs in this Confederacy?

A. The Duke of *Glouceſter*, and the Earl of *Lancaſter*'s Son *Derby* (the King's Uncle, and Couſin-German) with the Earls of *Arundel*, *Nottingham*, *Saliſbury*, *Northumberland*, and *Warwick*; who were follow'd blindfold by moſt of the other Nobility, as well as Biſhops and Clergy.

Q. Did not the King take the Government into his own Hands?

A. The Dukes, his Uncles, in order to keep the Power, which they had exerciſed in his Minority, had procured a Commiſſion, in 1386, (confirm'd by Statute) whereby they and others of their Party were abſolutely intruſted with the whole Sovereignty for one Year certain: And, even when he was full 21 Years of Age, his Adherents were arbitrarily proſecuted as Traytors, by the Faction and their *Mercileſs Parliament*, in 1388: So that it was not 'till 3 *May*, 1389, that he aſſumed his Authority, and immediately made a Choice of new Miniſters; among whom the famous *William* of *Wickham*, Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, became Lord High Chancellor.

Q. Did this reform the Confederate Lords?

A. No. They looked upon every Body as unqualified for Power and Truſt but themſelves;

and

and ſtill repreſented the Perſons imployed, under the odious Character of Favourites and Evil-Counſellors; loading them with Aſperſions of all Kinds, without the leaſt regard to Truth, to inflame the Populace, and make them ſubſervient to the unnatural Revolution they had long projected.

Q. Where was the Duke of *Lancaſter* all this Time?

A. Abroad, in Purſuit of his Claim to the Kingdom of *Caſtile*, in Right of his Wife. But, that Affair being compromiſed by a Treaty, he returned to *England* in 1390, and ſeemed for ſome Time, as well as his Brother of *Gloucester*, to be reconciled to the King, who now took them and many of their Party, again into his Council.

Q. Was the Spirit of Diſcord now laid?

A. No. The Diſaffection had got ſuch a deep Root, that the City of *London* refuſed to lend the King 1000 Pounds, and the Mob tore in Pieces an *Italian* Merchant, who would have lent it out of his own Pocket, in 1392. For which and other Diſorders, their Liberties were deſervedly ſeized into the King's Hands, 'till their Submiſſion.

Q. What was the next conſiderable Tranſaction?

A. The King himſelf paſſed over to *Ireland*, to ſuppreſs an Inſurrection there; having ſent his Uncle of *Lancaſter* to negociate a Peace with *France*; which ended in a ſecond Marriage, and a Truce for 30 Years. For, his good Queen *Anne* (Siſter to the Emperor *Wenceſlaus*) dying in 1395, he married *Iſabella*, the *French* King's Daughter, in 1397, tho' ſhe was too young for its Conſummation while he liv'd.

Q. Was

Q. Was all quiet at Home the while?

A. No. The *Lollards* (Followers of *Wickliffe*) beginning to preſs for Reformation of Religion, in their *Fanatical* Way, the King returned, to prevent any Tumults. And finding ſufficient Cauſe, to ſuſpect both the Spirit and Power of the turbulent Duke of *Glouceſter*, he (for meer Self-Preſervation) had recourſe to a Stratagem to ſeize him, as well as the Earls of *Warwick* and *Arundel*, and the Lord *Cobham*, and others his Fellow Conſpirators.

Q. What became of theſe Lords?

A. Glouceſter was conveyed to *Calais*, *Warwick* and *Arundel* to the Tower, and *Cobham* to *Jerſey*. And a Parliament, meeting ſoon after, repealed the Hardſhips impoſed upon the King in his Minority; baniſhed the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* and the Earl of *Warwick*, and condemned the Earl of *Arundel* to immediate Death, the Duke of *Glouceſter* being already (as 'twas ſaid) privately diſpatched at *Calais*. At the ſame Time, to gratify the other great Men, the King advanced ſeveral of the principal Lords higher in Title and Eſtate, *A. D.* 1397.

Q. How long did theſe Meaſures preſerve the King's Peace?

A. Not long. For now his Troubles haſtened on apace. A Quarrel happened between the Dukes of *Hereford* and *Norfolk*, about ſome ſeditious Words alledg'd to be ſpoken of the King. The one affirming, and the other denying them, a Combat was demanded and agreed to. But the King interpoſing, baniſhed them both; the former for ten Years (which were ſoon moderated to ſix) and the latter for Life.

Q. What happened upon this?

A. John

A. John Duke of *Lancaſter* dying, 3 *Feb.* 1399, his Son *Henry* (Duke of *Hereford* by the late Creation, and now of *Lancaſter* by Succeſſion) reſenting his Baniſhment, and the Confiſcation of his Father's Eſtate, in this Diſcontent, met with Archbiſhop *Arundel*, alſo in Exile; by whoſe wicked Counſels his Reſentments were worked up into a Reſolution of Revenge; to which of himſelf he was equally diſpos'd and enabled by Nature, Artifice and Parts.

Q. How did he purſue it?

A. Taking the Advantage of the King's Abſence, with his beſt Troops, in *Ireland*, to ſuppreſs a freſh Rebellion there, he landed in *Yorkſhire*, 4 *July*, 1399, accompanied by the Rebel-Prelate and a few more. Immediately after which, he was joined by the Earls of *Northumberland* and *Weſtmoreland*, and others, to the Number of 60,000. So forward were the *Engliſh*, in former Days, to run into Rebellion, on every Provocation, againſt the Princes of the right Line, tho' they could bear ten times as much from Uſurpers!

Q. What Colours did he give this his Invaſion?

A. Tho' it was plain he aimed at the Crown, yet he only pretended to aſſert the Reſtitution of his Father's Eſtate: However, he haſten'd his March towards *London*, which had declared for him; ſo that his Uncle (the Duke of *York*) who was left Regent for the King, being deſerted by the Council, and not able to raiſe a Force ſufficient to ſtem the Torrent, found himſelf under a Neceſſity to retire to his own Houſe.

Q. How then did *Lancaſter* proceed?

A. He was triumphantly received by the *Londoners*, as if he had been their *Deliverer!* But, he ſoon ſhewed, that his own Ambition was to be

be gratified, rather than Grievances to be redreſſed. For, when he had taken the Caſtle of *Briſtol*, without any Colour of Authority, (but by meer uſurped Power, and in open Violation of all Law) he cauſed ſeveral of the King's faithful Counſellors to be beheaded, in a more arbitrary Manner than had ever been uſed by the King or his Miniſtry.

Q. What was the King doing all this while?

A. On the firſt Notice of this Invaſion, he haſtened over from *Ireland*: But being ſome time hindered by contrary Winds, he could not arrive before his Friends were diſperſed, and his Enemies every where triumphant.

Q. What Refuge was left him in this Diſtreſs?

A. After having retired for a while to *Conway*-Caſtle, he ſent the Duke of *Exeter* to treat with the Invader; who, without reſpect to his Character or Commiſſion, or any other Reſtraint of Law, Honour or Conſcience, made that Nobleman a Priſoner; as he ſoon after did the King himſelf, (through the Treachery of the Earl of *Northumberland)* in the Caſtle of *Flint*.

Q. Could nothing prevail upon the Duke to favour Majeſty in Miſery?

A. No. He brought the King with him to *London*; where he was confined in the Tower, while the Duke took his Meaſures to complete the Revolution.

Q. What were they?

A. He ſummoned a *Convention* of the States; not in his own Name, but in the King's. And theſe, being prepared beforehand, took upon them the ſupreme Power; under Pretence of which they preſumed formally to depoſe their Sovereign, and to place the Invader on his Throne,

under

under the Royal Stile of King *Henry* IV. 30 *Sep.* 1399.

Q. But did not King *Richard* reſign the Crown?

A. Yes, he did in Fact. But, however voluntary that had been, it could not convey a legal Right to *Henry*, ſince there was a *nearer Heir* in being.

Q. Who was that?

A. Edmund Mortimer, Earl of *March*, the next Heir to *Lionel* Duke of *Clarence*, who was the third Son of King *Edward* III. Whereas *Henry* was Son and Heir only to *John* Duke of *Lancaſter*, the fourth Son of the ſame King.

Q. Was there no ſurviving Heir of either of that King's two elder Sons?

A. King *Richard* himſelf was the Heir of the eldeſt: And as he had no Iſſue, and the ſecond of King *Edward*'s Sons died an Infant, the Right of Succeſſion was to deſcend of Courſe upon the Heir of the Duke of *Clarence*, *viz.* this ſame *Edmund*, who was now preſumptive Heir to King *Richard* II. as his Father, *Roger Mortimer*, had been before declar'd by Parliament, in 1385.

Q. What Colours then could varniſh over *Henry*'s Title?

A. The King's perſonal Renunciation, the pack'd Parliament's Sentence for depoſing him, and their Election of *Henry* into his Throne: Of which the firſt was made under the Reſtraint and Dureſs of Impriſonment, and the other two illegal and null, for want of Authority.

Q. Was not this as unwarrantable, as any of the arbitrary Proceedings with which the King was charg'd?

A. Yes: And ſo much the more ſo, as the Uſurpation of *Power* is worſe than the Abuſe of *Authority*.

thority. But, it is common in all violent Conteſts between the King's Prerogative and the People's Privileges, to run madding from one Extreme to the other: And we know, it has been held as a Maxim with ſome People, that he who has *the worſt Title*, makes *the beſt King?*

Q. What formal Proceſs was uſed in this Affair?

A. After a preſcript Form of Renunciation impoſed upon their King, Articles of pretended Mal-adminiſtration were drawn up againſt him; which being eaſily paſſed in that Convention of the three Eſtates (without a Head) they ſent their Commiſſioners to notify the ſame to him, and to declare him depoſed; after much the ſame Manner, as their pious Predeceſſors had done in the Caſe of his Great Grandfather King *Edward* II. Only they went now a Step farther than that Precedent, by diſinheriting the *next Heir* too, which in the other Revolution they did not preſume to do, tho' the then Heir was an Infant.

Q. What then were the Effects of this extraordinary Revolution?

A. Care was taken to prevent any Danger to the Poſſeſſor from the unhappy King himſelf: But the ſetting aſide his *next Heir* proved the real Source of the dreadful Calamities, which affected this infatuated Nation 'till the third Generation; when, after a Deluge of the beſt Blood in *England*, the right Heir recovered the Throne of his Anceſtors.

Q. What became of the King after this?

A. He was removed from the Tower, to the Caſtle of *Leeds* in *Kent*, and from thence to *Pontefract* in *Yorkſhire*; where (as ſome ſay,) he was *ſtarved to death:* But the general Belief is, that he was barbarouſly murdered by Sir *Pierce Exton*

and

and eight of his Accomplices; tho' not 'till he had valiantly ſlain four of them with his own Hands, 14 *Feb.* 1400, aged 34.

Q. What was remarkable in thoſe Times, in relation to the Church?

A. The Popes had been ſtoutly oppoſed and checked in their Encroachments, by ſeveral Laws made by this King and his immediate Anceſtors: And therefore, the then Pope politickly promoted the Revolution, whereby a Prince, whoſe Title to the Crown was precarious, would not be ſo likely to exert himſelf with Vigour, in Defence of the Rights of the Church and Kingdom.

Q. What was this King's juſt Character?

A. That he was a magnificent, generous and good-natured Prince, with ſome Failings, but as great Virtues; and fell a Sacrifice to the Ambition of ſome remoter Branches of his own Family.

XXXIII. 13. HENRY IV.

Q. When did *Henry* of *Lancaſter* take upon him the State and Title of King?

A. Immediately upon the depoſing of King *Richard*, in the Parliament, 30 *Sept.* 1399. Duke *Henry* roſe up, and claimed the Crown, with an hypocritical Air of praying to the God of Juſtice, to proſper him in his unnatural Uſurpation and intended Parricide!

Q. What Right did he pretend to it?

A. His Words were affectedly ſo obſcure, that (it was plain) he did not intend it ſhould be nicely examined: Tho' at firſt he diſclaimed all Right of Conqueſt, and would fain have derived an *hereditary Right*, as deſcended from King *Henry* III.

Q. And

Q. And did the Parliament make any Declaration of it?

A. No. As they were his Creatures, they proceeded, as if his Title had been unconteſtable; and immediately proclaimed him King. Upon which, as they had *made* him a King, he could do no leſs than *make* them a Parliament, tho' ſummoned in the Name of King *Richard*. And then Archbiſhop *Arundel* (who had been baniſhed by King *Richard* for High-Treaſon, and now returned with the Invader) began a canting Speech, perverting the Senſe of Holy Scripture, to perſuade his Audience, that *God*'s *Providence* had brought about the *glorious Revolution*, and ſo to convey the Injuſtice of the Uſurpation out of their Sight!

Q. How did the Earl of *March* behave, when he was thus diſinherited?

A. He wiſely retired to his own Eſtate in *Herefordſhire*, without any Sign of Diſguſt; well knowing, that he had no other Way at preſent to ſecure himſelf from the Jealouſy and Power of an ambitious Uſurper.

Q. When was *Henry* crowned?

A. On the 13th of *October*, aged 33 Years. And then he affected to ſet forth his Title in other Colours, *viz.* 1. By Right of *Conqueſt*, (which he had before diſclaimed;) 2. By King *Richard*'s *Deſignation* of him for his Succeſſor, (which was neither in his Power nor Will to do;) And, 3. As *next Male-Heir* to the late King, (which was notoriouſly falſe.) However, he would not own his beſt and *only Title* (ſuch as it was) the Conſent of the People, leſt it ſhould be thought, that thoſe who *gave* him the Crown might afterwards *take* it away again!

Q. How did he exerciſe his Government thus unjuſtly obtained?

A. With like Injuſtice; endeavouring, tho' in vain, to perpetuate the Uſurpation, by a Parliamentary Entail of the Crown upon him and his Heirs for ever: As if *Hereditary Right* were to be indefeaſible in the Family of *Uſurpers*, but to be looked upon as no Title whatſoever in the right Line! After which, being uneaſy while the injured King breathed even the Air of his Priſon, he firſt underhand procured a Petition from the Commons to bring him to a Trial, and then had it moved in Parliament for their Advice, how *Richard* ſhould be diſpoſed of?

Q. Did any Remains of the Spirit of Loyalty appear among them on that nice Queſtion?

A. Yes. Tho' the Motion was made by the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* beforementioned, and the whole Convention ſeemed to incline towards Severity, there was one other Prelate (and but one out of 18 Biſhops, and 32 Abbots, then preſent) who had Virtue and Courage enough, to give his Voice in Favour of his injured Sovereign, and to oppoſe their Revolution-Principles, to the apparent Hazard of his own Life: And that was *Thomas Merks*, Biſhop of *Carliſle*.

Q. What was the Subſtance of his Speech?

A. He inſiſted, 1. That *a rightful King of* England, *tho' for his Vices even intollerable, cannot by his Subjects be hurt in his Perſon or Power, either by Judgment or Force, without the Guilt of Treaſon:* Which he enforced by many Arguments from Scripture and Reaſon, againſt Reſiſtance. 2. That King *Richard* had *not done any Thing deſerving ſuch Correction*, (ſuppoſing they had an Authority to call him to Account;) *the Offences with which he was charged being foully*

foully aggravated, and not fairly proved. 3. That; ſuppoſing the King had been lawfully depoſed, yet *the Duke of* Lancaſter *could not have any Right to the Crown.* For, 1. *As to Inheritance, King* Richard *himſelf was not only yet alive, but others alſo, of the Line of* Clarence, *who were of Right to ſucceed him, in Caſe he died without Iſſue.* 2. *As to Conqueſt, no Subject can acquire a Right, where the War is Rebellion, and the Victory Treaſon.* 3. *As to the Reſignation,* it was null *in itſelf, both becauſe the King was a Priſoner, and alſo becauſe he could not alienate the Crown from the next Heir, if he would.* And, 4. *As to Election, it was both againſt Law and Cuſtom; and, whenever attempted, always attended with dreadful Confuſions, 'till the Right Heir was reſtored.* After which he intimated the grievous Calamities naturally to be expected in the preſent Change: And at laſt, he boldly declared, *That the Duke (whom they called King) had more offended by his Uſurpation, than the King had by the worſt of the arbitrary Proceedings of which he was accuſed!*

Q. What Effect had this Speech upon the Houſe?

A. The Revolution was too far gone, for ſuch a Convention to hearken to Arguments, how unanſwerable ſoever. All the Effect it had, was, that the good Biſhop, for thus honeſtly diſcharging his own Conſcience, was immediately clapp'd up in Confinement in St. *Alban*'s, and ſoon after deprived, by Concert with the Pope, under Colour of a Tranſlation to the titular See of *Samos* (hardly eſcaping at laſt with Life;) which was the only Anſwer the Revolutioniſts were able to give his loyal Arguments!

Q. What Reſolution did they come to, concerning the King?

A. That he ſhould be kept in Confinement during Life, with a princely Allowance; but in Caſe any Perſon ſhould attempt his Deliverance, *Richard* himſelf ſhould be the firſt Man to ſuffer Death; which was, in Effect, to paſs Sentence of Death upon him, and put it in the Power of any one of his Enemies (without any Act of his own) to haſten the Execution.

Q. Was nothing attempted in Favour of the unhappy Victim?

A. Yes. In the Beginning of the Year 1400, certain Lords and Gentlemen, under Colour of a Tournament at *Oxford*, had combined to ſeize the Uſurper, and reſtore the King; tho' probably, many of them, out of Reſentment of their late Diſgrace, more than a true Principle of Loyalty. This being unwarily diſcover'd, they flew to open Arms, giving out that King *Richard* had eſcaped out of Priſon, and was ready to appear at their Head. The Readineſs of the People to liſt under their Banners on this Occaſion, plainly ſhewed, that the Revolt of their pretended Repreſentatives was far from being approved of, by the Body of the Nation, now becoming ſenſible of the Injuries done to their rightful Sovereign, and the unwarrantable Means made uſe of to that End. The Confederates were ſuddenly at the Head of a formidable Army, with which they marched early to *Windſor*, in order to ſurprize *Henry* there, but arrived a few Hours too late. His Eſcape from thence having broke their Meaſures, they loſt ſo much Time before they could agree, whether to purſue the *Uſurper* to *London*, or firſt to enlarge the *King*, that they found

found *Henry*, with 20,000 Men, ready to oppoſe them on *Hounſlow*-Heath.

Q. Did they not fight him there?

A. No. They imprudently ſeparated themſelves into ſmall Parties; ſome intending to march by the Confines of *Wales* (where they had many well diſpoſed to join them) towards the North, in order to deliver the King out of *Pontefract*-Caſtle. But, while others lay at *Cirenceſter*, their unexperienced Chiefs were ſurprized in their Inns, by the Mayor and Townſmen; and, after a ſtout Reſiſtance, the Duke of *Surry* and the Earl of *Saliſbury*, being much wounded and taken, were immediately beheaded; as were alſo the Duke of *Exeter*, and the Earl of *Glouceſter*, ſome time after.

Q. What became of their Followers the while?

A. The Noiſe they had heard, and the Fire they had ſeen in the Town, made them believe *Henry* was there with his Army: So, when the two laſt Lords eſcaped out of the Town, with Deſign to join their Party, they found the Camp deſerted, and their Army diſbanded.

Q. What was the Conſequence of this Miſcarriage?

A. Not only the Ruin of the Perſons immediately engaged; but the Murder of King *Richard* himſelf, as before is related.

Q. How did the neighbouring Princes behave, on this Revolution?

A. With more Regard to Self-Intereſt, than either to Juſtice or Honour. Their Politicians always ſaw more Proſpect of Advantage to themſelves, from the divided State of *England* under Uſurpers, than when ſo brave a People were united under their lawful Sovereigns. The *French* and *Scots* indeed offered ſeveral Inſults: But

Henry, conſcious of the Danger of a Revolt at Home, uſed all his Arts, by Treaties and Truces, to prevent an open Rupture abroad.

Q. Did he then enjoy the Fruits of Peace?

A. No. There was no ſolid Peace; nor yet any War in earneſt. King *Charles* VI. of *France* had formed a Deſign to revenge the Injury done his Son-in-Law King *Richard*; but when he heard he was dead, he ſuffered himſelf to be pacified: And tho' the Duke of *Orleans* ſent *Henry* a formal Challenge, it ended only in reproachful Language on both Sides. But, what eaſed him of all his Apprehenſions from that Quarter, was the Civil War which broke out there, between the Houſes of *Orleans* and *Burgundy*, in the Year 1410.

Q. What Troubles aroſe to him from *Scotland*?

A. The *Scots* entered *England*, and took and demoliſhed *Werk*-Caſtle, in 1399. The next Year, they proclaimed War againſt him; which ended in a Truce, after a fruitleſs Incurſion on both Sides. Again, in 1402, they made a freſh Irruption, but were defeated by the Earl of *Northumberland*. But nothing freed him from them effectually, 'till through the treacherous Attempts of a like bloody and unnatural Uſurper, Prince *James Stuart*, (the younger Heir of King *Robert* III,) in his Voyage to *France*, was baſely intercepted, even in a Time of Truce, in 1406, and detained Priſoner here in the Tower, 'till 1424.

Q. Did not the *Welſh* create him ſome Trouble?

A. Yes; more than all the reſt. *Owen Glendowr*, a valiant *Welſh* Gentleman, lineally deſcended from their ancient Race of Princes, aſſumed that Title, and ſpirited up his Countrymen to revolt from the *Engliſh* Dominion, in 1400; entering *Herefordſhire*, ravaging the Country,

and

and carrying off the Earl of *March* Priſoner. Nor was he in fear of *Henry*'s Reſentment; depending upon his having a ſafe Retreat among the rocky Mountains. At length, a Confederacy being form'd between him and the Earl of *Northumberland*, they joined their Forces in *Shropſhire*, in order to reſtore the Earl of *March* (the right Heir) to his Liberty and Throne: But they were entirely routed at *Shrewſbury*, 21 *July*, 1403, where Lord *Henry Percy* (commonly called *Hotſpur*) was ſlain, his Uncle, the Earl of *Worceſter*, taken and beheaded, and *Northumberland* himſelf narrowly eſcaped. However, the *Welſh* Spirit did not yet fail them; but they ſtill held out, and being reinforced by 12,000 *French*, in 1405, made an Excurſion, and took *Worceſter*, and ſeveral other Places: But, upon *Henry*'s Approach with his Army, the *French* re-embarked, and left the *Welſh* to ſhift for themſelves; who, ſome time after, finding themſelves deſtitute of more Succours from abroad, and their gallant Leader diſabled to anſwer their Expectations, began by Degrees to deſert him, in 1409, who afterwards lived concealed, and died (it is ſaid) in want.

Q. What provoked *Northumberland* to revolt from *Henry?*

A. His Brother of *Worceſter*, like a Man of Honour, reſenting the Methods and Conſequences of the Revolution, was inſtant with him and others to join in proper Meaſures againſt the Uſurper: And *Northumberland*, after the great Services done him, in helping him to the Throne, and other Proofs of his Zeal, grew ſo diſguſted, that, on a Diſpute between them, about the Ranſom of ſome Priſoners taken by him, he, from that Time, reſolved to be reveng'd. And

now, out of Paſſion, (if not out of Principle,) he could openly declare againſt *him* as a Tyrant and notorious *Uſurper*, whom before he had promoted as a *glorious Deliverer!* And found it neceſſary to eſpouſe the *known Right* of that very Prince, whom he had before been a chief Inſtrument to deprive of it. Thus, he not only conſpired againſt *Henry*, with *Owen Glendowr*, in 1403, but (after a Pardon received) with the Archbiſhop of *York* and other Lords, in 1405, (for which he, eſcaping into *Scotland*, was attainted;) and again entered *Yorkſhire*, with a ſmall Body of the *Scots* in 1408: In which laſt Expedition he was ſlain; his *Perfidy* to King *Richard* (to whom he owed his Honour) being juſtly puniſhed by the *ſame Power* which he had armed to his Deſtruction.

Q. What other Paſſages are remarkable in the Time of *Henry* IV.

A. His paſſing an Act for the burning of Hereticks, to ingratiate himſelf with the Pope; the firſt who ſuffered the Penalty of it, being one *William Sawtre*, a *Lollard*, *A. D.* 1401.

Q. How long did he reign?

A. As Violence ſeldom laſts very long, his Dominion ended before he could enjoy the Fruits of thoſe Labours he had undergone to acquire it: For he died as ſoon as ever he began to be eaſy from Wars and Tumults; *viz.* 20 *March*, 1412, in the 46th Year of his Age, after he had filled the Throne little more than 13 Years.

Q. What is his juſt Character?

A. That he was a great Man, and adorned with many Qualities which would have made him worthy of a Crown, if he had not ſo unjuſtly obtained one by *Uſurpation*, which defaced them all. For, ſuch a number of heavy Taxes con-

tinually

tinually ſucceeding one another; ſuch a ſhameful Profuſion of the publick Money, without any thing done Abroad for the Honour of the Nation; nothing to be ſeen at Home but a Court fill'd with Perſons of neither Honour, Virtue nor Credit; and Corruption in every Part of the Adminiſtration, could not but render him odious, and cauſe a general Diſaffection, among all good People, throughout the Kingdom.

XXXIV. 14. HENRY V.

Q. Who got the Crown after his Death?

A His eldeſt Son, by the Title of *Henry* V. then aged 25.

Q. What was remarkable of him in his younger Days?

A. That his Father was ſo jealous of the ill-gotten Crown, as not to truſt even his own Son with any Share of Power: Upon which, the Prince, who was naturally very active, (wanting Employment, worthy of his Genius,) was unhappily led into unwarrantable Exceſſes, unbecoming his Birth, and injurious to his Reputation.

Q. What particular Pranks are recorded of him?

A. That he would diſguiſe himſelf, and lie in wait to rob his Father's Receivers; but was moſt favourable to thoſe who made the ſtouteſt Reſiſtance. One of the Gang being taken and arraigned for Felony, the Prince himſelf came in, to overawe the Court. But, his Preſence not preventing the Criminal's Condemnation, he raſhly ſtruck the Judge upon the Face. The worthy Lord Chief Juſtice *Gaſcoigne*, thus affronted, conſidering the Conſequence of ſuch a lawleſs Action, more than the Quality of the Offender,

after a grave Reprimand, immediately cauſed him to be taken into Cuſtody, and committed Priſoner to the *King*'s *Bench*; to which the Prince (ſenſibly touch'd with the Rebuke) ſubmitted without Reluctance.

Q. What paſſed between his Father and him, about the Demiſe of the Crown?

A. Henry IV. for fear of loſing the Crown before his Death, had it uſually placed upon his Pillow when he went to Bed. One Day, when *Henry* was thought to be dead, the Prince took it up, and went out of the Room. The Father recovering his Senſes, and miſſing the Crown, ſent for his Son, and aſked him, if he would rob him of his Royalty before his Death? The Prince, diſclaiming any ſuch Intention, declared, he had only taken the Crown as his *Right*, thinking his Father dead. *Alas!* (ſaid the dying Father) *What Right I had to it, God knows, and the World has ſeen!* To which the Son replied, (with more Spirit than Piety) *As you got it, ſo will I keep it.*

Q. When was *Henry* V. crowned?

A. April 9, 1413.

Q. How did he begin his Government?

A. With a very prudent and popular Act of Reformation. Before he applied himſelf to Affairs of State, he called for the Companions of his former Riots; and, after exhorting them to reform their vicious Courſes, diſmiſſed them with Preſents, but in the mean time abſolutely baniſhed them from the Court. Then he made Choice of worthy Perſons for his Counſellors and Magiſtrates: And, to ſhew a decent Regard to the Memory of King *Richard*, he gave that injured Prince the Honour of a magnificent Funeral; tho' yet he fell ſhort in point of Juſtice, in not reſtoring

ſtoring the Throne to the right Heir. However, he freed the right Heir *(Edmund* Earl of *March)* from the Dureſs in which he had been kept during all the laſt Reign, and treated him with ſo much Kindneſs, that the latter became as much attached to him as any of his Relations.

Q. What great Actions did he perform abroad?

A. He renewed the Pretenſions of *England* to the Crown of *France*; as deſcended from King *Edward* III. Which Demand was carried on, for ſome Time, only by Negociation, and reduced at length to the Reſtitution of whatever had been taken from *England* ſince the famous Treaty of *Bretigny*, *A. D.* 1360, (with the Money ever ſince that Time in Arrear for their late King *John*'s Ranſom;) and a Daughter of *France* in Marriage, with 1,000,000 of Crowns for her Portion. But, not ſucceeding this Way, *Henry* declared War.

Q. Did he meet with any perſonal Inſult from that Court?

A. Yes. The Dauphin of *France*, in Deriſion of his youthful Exerciſes, ſent him a Tun of Tennis-Balls for a Preſent, as thinking him fitter for Play than for War: To which *Henry* return'd him a manly Anſwer, *That he would repay him with Balls of greater Force, whoſe Strokes the ſtrongeſt Gates of* Paris *ſhould not be Rackets ſufficient to rebound.*

Q. How did he proſecute the War?

A. Landing at *Havre de Grace*, in *Auguſt*, 1415, he took *Harfleur:* And, in his March from thence to winter his Forces at *Calais*, under all the Diſadvantages of Sickneſs, Roads, Weather, Proviſions, and other Difficulties, beſides the Odds (as ſome ſay) of ſix to one in Number, he bravely cut his Way through the *French* Army,

at the Battle of *Agincourt*, 25 *October*, where the Flower of their Princes and other Nobles were kill'd or taken, (the Number of Priſoners exceeding that of his own Soldiers) and a complete Victory gain'd, by *Henry*, with a Courage and Conduct equal to any of the Heroes in Hiſtory.

Q. How did he proceed after this?

A. He return'd to *England* in Triumph. And the *French* being divided into Factions among themſelves, he politickly left them to weaken each other by inteſtine Wars for ſome Time, while he made his own Advantage of them by Negociations.

Q. Was there no Action in the mean Time?

A. The Conſtable of *France* endeavouring to retake *Harfleur*, *Henry* diſpatch'd the Duke of *Bedford*, his Brother, to its Relief; who deſtroy'd their Fleet, ſuccour'd the Town, and forced the *French* to raiſe the Siege, in 1416.

Q. What was the Cauſe of thoſe Diſſentions in *France?*

A. Their King, *Charles* VI. being ſubject to a Frenzy, the Contention was about the *Regency*. The Duke of *Burgundy*, who claim'd it as firſt Peer of *France*, finding himſelf diſappointed, and otherwiſe diſgraced by the *Orleans* Party, (who had the King and young Dauphin, and the Government in their Hands) enter'd into a ſecret League with the *Engliſh*, and march'd to *Paris* with an Army, while *Henry* landed in *Normandy* with another, in 1417. Beſides which, the *French* Queen, being affronted, and made a Priſoner, by the governing Party, enter'd into Meaſures with the Duke of *Burgundy* for her Liberty and Revenge. All which render'd the Progreſs and Succeſs of *Henry* the more eaſy.

Q. What

Q. What Succeſs had he?

A. He recover'd *Normandy*, which had been loſt by their King *John*. But, after other Advantages, and divers Negotiations, the Duke of *Burgundy* procur'd a ſeeming Reconciliation with the Dauphin, which had well-nigh united all *France* in Oppoſition to the *Engliſh*. However, the Dauphin cauſing *Burgundy* to be treacherouſly aſſaſſinated, his Son, the young Duke, in Revenge, brought about the Treaty of *Troye*, 21 *May*, 1420, whereby it was agreed, that King *Charles* ſhould hold the Crown of *France* uninterrupted during Life; and that *Henry*, marrying *Catherine* of *France*, (which was ſolemniz'd 12 *June* following) ſhould immediately become Regent, and ſucceed to the Throne upon the King's Death.

Q. How did the Dauphin reſent this Excluſion?

A. He appealed to God and his Sword againſt it as an unjuſt Convention, and ſtill continued to take upon him the Title and Authority of Regent; in which he was ſtrongly ſupported by thoſe of the *Orleans* Party. And thus the Civil Wars in *France* were kept in Flames, when *Henry*, about to fight the Dauphin, was ſeized with a pleuretic Fever; of which he died, 31 *Aug.* 1422, aged 34 Years; equally admir'd by Friends and Enemies.

Q. What happened moſt remarkable at Home in his Time?

A. The Tenets of the Enthuſiaſtic *Lollards* had ſpread ſo far among People of all Ranks, that a ſtrong Party in the Houſe of Commons (ſuppoſed to be tainted therewith) induſtriouſly endeavoured to ſtrip the Church of her Revenues and Privileges. This juſtly alarming the Clergy, they found it neceſſary to proceed againſt ſome of

that

that frantick Sect in their Convocation: And finding Sir *John Oldcaſtle* (Baron of *Cobham*) to be the moſt conſiderable and dangerous, they obtained Leave at Court (where he is ſuppos'd to have been one of the former diſcarded Favourites,) to proſecute him for a Terror to the reſt. Accordingly, he was cited to appear; but ſlighting the Citation, and refuſing to own the Eccleſiaſtical Juriſdiction, was excommunicated by the Archbiſhop, and *Henry* committed him to the Tower, in 1413. From thence he was brought before the Archbiſhop, and other Clergy; who could get no Anſwer from him but what was repugnant to the eſtabliſhed Religion. Upon this he was pronounced a *Heretic*, and delivered over to the ſecular Power: But he eſcaped out of Priſon, and concealed himſelf, 'till he had concerted Methods to take the Field, to ſeize or kill *Henry* himſelf, and to deſtroy the Prelates, Friers, and Monaſteries. Afterwards, being diſcovered in *Wales*, and brought up to *London*, his Sentence for *Treaſon* and *Hereſy* was executed, according to Law, by hanging and burning alive; which he ſuffered, without any Recantation, in 1417.

XXXV. 15. HENRY VI.

Q. Who obtained the Crown on the Death of *Henry* V?

A. His only Son *Henry* VI. though at that Time an Infant, not nine Months old, being born, 6 *Dec.* 1421.

Q. In whoſe Hands was the Adminiſtration during his Minority?

A. His two Uncles. Of whom the Duke of *Bedford*

Bedford was appointed Regent, and, (in his Abſence) the Duke of *Glouceſter*.

Q. What was the firſt remarkable Affair after this?

A. King *Charles* VI. of *France* died, 21 *Oct.* 1422, whom, according to the late Peace at *Troye*, young *Henry* was to ſucceed in that Throne, and accordingly was proclaimed: But the Dauphin (who did not regard that Peace, whereby he was excluded from his natural Right of Succeſſion) took upon him the Title of King *Charles* VII. and as ſuch, was crown'd by his Adherents at *Poictiers*, in the Beginning of *November*. Thus the *French* had at once two Kings *de Facto*, with their reſpective Provinces in Poſſeſſion, and both claiming *de Jure* the Sovereignty of the whole Kingdom; which *conteſted Title* (as is uſual in ſuch Caſes) made that unhappy Country the Seat of a bloody War more than 30 Years.

Q. How did the *Scots* behave between the two Nations?

A. Their King *James*, having been made Priſoner by *Henry* IV. the then Regent of *Scotland*, aſſiſted *Charles* of *France*, 'till the *Engliſh* Council, giving that Prince his Liberty, prevailed with him to come into *their* Intereſt, ſo far as could conſiſt with the Good of his own Country.

Q. Did not the *Engliſh* now carry all before them?

A. They gained ſo much upon the *French*, that *Charles* was only called Earl of *Ponthieu*, or, in Deriſion, the petty King of *Bourges!* But, the Duke of *Glouceſter* (ſtudying his own private Intereſt, more than that of King *Henry*, his Nephew) not only neglected to ſupply his Brother of *Bedford* (the Regent) with the Forces neceſſary

to purſue his Advantages, but gave Occaſion to the Duke of *Burgundy* and his Partizans, to revolt from the *Engliſh* Intereſt abroad; and moreover, quarrelling with his Uncle, the Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, created great Diſturbances at Home, thro' his Obſtinacy.

Q. What was the Event of this?

A. His elder Brother *Bedford*, Regent, came Home from *France*; and by his Authority, made the Duke and Biſhop ſeemingly Friends. And, about the ſame Time, the Earl of *Saliſbury* arriving in *France*, laid Siege to *Orleans*, in 1428, the Succeſs of which, in a great Meaſure, was to determine the Fortune of the two Competitors.

Q. How was it carried on?

A. It was attack'd, and defended, with equal Bravery, by ſome of the beſt Generals of the Age. At length, when the City was on the Point of being taken, (tho' the Earl himſelf was ſlain before it,) it was relieved by as extraordinary an Accident as any in Hiſtory.

Q. What was that?

A. Joan of *Arc*, a Country-Girl, being well inſtructed beforehand, and pretending a Miſſion from Heaven, was brought to King *Charles*, (in a Man's Dreſs,) and promiſed him to ſave *Orleans*, and change the Scene of Affairs in his Favour. Such was the Superſtition of thoſe Times, as to gain Credit to all ſhe ſaid. Immediately, *La Pucelle* (as ſhe was commonly called) was armed, and ſent with a Convoy to *Orleans*; which, after a bloody Battle, entered the Town in Triumph. And now the Beſieged attacked and carried ſeveral of the *Engliſh* Forts; the one Side encourag'd, and the other diſheartened, by the extraordinary Conduct of the young Heroine: Inſomuch that the Siege, which had continued

ſeven

ſeven Months, was raiſed, 8 *May*, 1429. From this Time the *Engliſh*, looking upon her as a *Witch*, ſuffered themſelves to be every where defeated, and purſued by the *French*, and their gallant General *Talbot*, and others, to be made Priſoners. In ſhort, *Charles* now made a long and victorious March in Perſon, through the *Engliſh* Territories, 'till he entered *Rheims*, and having recovered the Hearts of the People, was there crowned, 17 *July*.

Q. What became of *Joan* after this?

A. While one Side aſcribed her amazing Actions to the immediate Power of *God*, and the other, to the Artifices of the *Devil*, it was her Misfortune, at the Siege of *Compeigne*, to fall into the Hands of the Duke of *Burgundy*'s General; by whom ſhe was delivered up to the *Engliſh*, and after a long and ſolemn Proceſs, burned to Death at *Roan*, as a Sorcereſs, a Blaſphemer, Impoſtor, and Heretic, 30 *Aug.* 1431.

Q. How did *Charles* purſue his Advantages in *France*, the while?

A. He became Maſter of many Places of Importance, before the *Engliſh* Regent was able to ſtop his Progreſs. In the mean Time young *Henry*, being crown'd in *England*, 6 *November*, 1429, was carried over to *France*, and crowned alſo at *Paris*, 17 *Dec.* 1431, at nine Years of Age, and returned to *England*, 21 *Feb.* 1431. But the ſending Succours to the Regent was ſtill neglected, through the fatal Feuds and Jealouſies at Home between the Duke of *Glouceſter*, and the Cardinal of *Wincheſter*. And the Dutcheſs of *Bedford* dying, 14 *Nov.* 1432, diſſolved that Cement, which had hitherto preſerved the Union between the Duke-Regent her Huſband, and the Duke of *Burgundy* her Brother. Accordingly,

this

this latter revolted from the *Engliſh* Intereſt, and made a ſeperate Peace with *Charles*, which was immediately followed by the Death of the excellent Regent himſelf, 14 *Sep.* 1435.

Q. What followed next upon this?

A. Richard, Duke of *York*, was declared Regent of *France*, but, through unhappy Intrigues at Home, his Patent was not paſs'd 'till 16 *July* 1437. In the mean Time, the little Care to ſend Succours over, had diſabled the *Engliſh* to make head againſt the *French*; who thereupon ſoon became Maſters of *Paris*. However, upon the landing ſome freſh Troops, they drove the Duke of *Burgundy* from before *Calais*, and raiſed him ſo much Trouble in his own Country, as diſabled him to do much Service to *Charles*.

Q. What Advantages did *England* make of this?

A. Little or none. The *Engliſh* Miniſtry, ſtudying their private Intereſt, more than the public, procur'd a Truce in 1444, and a Marriage with *Margaret* of *Anjou*, *A. D.* 1445; whoſe high Spirit gain'd ſo much the Aſcendant over *Henry*, her Huſband, as ſecured *them* in their Poſts, in Oppoſition to their many and great Enemies.

Q. What Uſe did they make of their Power?

A. By the Help of a Parliament, pack'd by themſelves, *Humphry*, the Duke of *Glouceſter*, (who had proteſted againſt their Proceedings) was accuſed of Treaſon, impriſon'd, and (ſaid to be) ſecretly made away, in 1447. Which, by God's juſt Providence, made a Way for the Reſtoration of the *right Line*, as well as the Ruin of thoſe worldly Politicians. For now, the Adminiſtration being deſervedly render'd odious, *Richard*, Duke of *York*, thought it a ſeaſonable Opportunity

nity to insinuate his Claim, and found the People in a Disposition to favour it.

Q. What was the Duke of *York*'s Title?

A. As Son and Heir to *Anne*, the Daughter and Heiress of *Roger Mortimer*, Earl of *March*, who was Son and Heir to *Philippa*, the Daughter and Heiress of *Lionel* Duke of *Clarence*, the *third* Son of King *Edward* III. whereas the present reigning Family was only descended from *John* of *Gaunt*, Duke of *Lancaster*, the *fourth* Son of King *Edward* III.

Q. Did he now assert his Right?

A. Not yet openly. He wisely waited for a more favourable Juncture to appear in it; and contented himself with the private Discourses of his Friends, to make it known among the People.

Q. What pass'd in *France* the while?

A. The Inactivity of the *English* Court, gave *Charles* an Opportunity to break the Truce, take *Roan*, and almost all *Normandy*, in 1449. This raising the Resentment of the Commons, a Prosecution was commenced against the prime Favourite, Duke of *Suffolk*: And, to avoid a harsher Sentence, it was contriv'd, under Colour of Exile, to send him into *France*; but he was intercepted in his Passage, and put to Death, in 1450, without any Formality of Trial.

Q. Did the Duke of *York* reap any Benefit by his Death?

A. Yes, he was thereby freed from one powerful Enemy. However, being now in *Ireland*, whither he was sent, to suppress an Insurrection, but only with a few Forces, (on Design to expose him either to Ruin or Disgrace) he reduced those People by his prudent and gentle Conduct, and at the same Time, secur'd them to a firm Adherence to his own Rights, while his Friends were

were improving the Diſcontents in *England*, to his Service.

Q. What Method did he uſe to ſound the People's Inclination?

A. He was ſuppos'd to have engag'd *Jack Cade*, an *Iriſhman*, to aſſume the Name of *John Mortimer*, of the Houſe of *March*, and to raiſe an Inſurrection in *Kent*, in 1450, to try how the Country ſtood affected to that Family. This Man preſently had an Army on *Black-Heath*, demanding Redreſs of *Grievances*, and the Removal of the Duke of *Somerſet*, the then *Evil-Counſellor*; and giving the Government a violent Shock, before he was ſuppreſs'd and ſlain. Which, as it alarm'd the Court, and gave them a Jealouſy of the Duke, ſo it put him upon a proper Guard againſt the Effects of it, 'till he ſaw a proper Time to declare himſelf.

Q. How did he then proceed?

A. Being to return from *Ireland*, Meaſures were taken to oppoſe his landing, However, he, finding Means to get on Shore, proceeded to *London*, where, after conſulting his Friends, he retired into *Wales*, ſent a Repreſentation to the Court, complaining of Grievances, and then marched towards *London* with an Army, in 1452. But, the faireſt Colour he had given his Armament, being his Demand of Juſtice againſt the Favourite *Somerſet*, that Miniſter was immediately arreſted, upon which the Duke laid down his Arms and went to Court. There, to his Surprize, he found *Somerſet* at Liberty, (contrary to the Agreement) and himſelf made a Priſoner; though, his Enemies, being conſcious of the People's Affection for him, and Averſion to them, and hearing, that his Son *Edward*, Earl of *March*, had an Army of the *Welſh* ready to

revenge

revenge him, ſaved him from being made a Sacrifice to their Jealouſy and Reſentment; and he was permitted to retire to his Caſtle of *Wigmore*.

Q. How did he obtain his Liberty?

A. Not 'till he had taken an Oath (as 'tis ſaid) to be faithful to *Henry*, and never to bear Arms againſt him.

Q. How did he obſerve that Oath?

A. Like a *Politician!* As he firſt ſubmitted to *take* it, to free himſelf from preſent Difficulties, he afterwards *broke* it (as being *null* becauſe extorted) to gain a greater Advantage by the Non-obſervation of it.

Q. Did not the Court yet exert themſelves, to recover the Affections of the People?

A. No. *Henry* himſelf, being a Prince of no Genius for Empire, ſpent his Time chiefly in his Cloſet: And, thoſe to whom he entruſted the Conduct of his Affairs (as if they had been in a Conſpiracy with the Enemy) had ſuffered the *French* to take one Place after another; 'till *Normandy* being given up by *Somerſet*, in 1449 and *Guinne* loſt by the Death of the brave *Talbot*, Earl of *Shrewſbury* (who was ſlain at 80 Years of Age, fighting for his Country, in 1453) the *Engliſh* had nothing left in *France*, but the City of *Calais* and its Dependencies, after a bloody War, which had laſted 38 Years.

Q. Was the War now ended in *France?*

A. Yes. But it only changed the Scene. For a new one immediately broke out in *England*, between the *White Roſe*, and the *Red*, which were the diſtinguiſhing Badges of the two Houſes of *York* and *Lancaſter*; the former, having a better *Right* to the Crown than the latter, who was in *Poſſeſſion* of it.

Q. Was *Henry* VI. then an *Uſurper?*

A Un-

A. Undoubtedly; and ſo our Laws do expreſly ſtile him. For though it was his Grandfather, *Henry* IV. who actually made the firſt Uſurpation upon the elder Houſe of *Clarence*, yet, the Son and Grandſon, by *receiving*, and injuriouſly *keeping* the Crown, ſo unjuſtly *taken*, were as much *Uſurpers* as he, who firſt took it!

Q. What Difficulties had the Duke of *York* to encounter, in order to recover his Right?

A. 1. A long *Poſſeſſion* of above 50 Years, and no other Claim openly ſet up againſt it. 2. A Confirmation of that Poſſeſſion in a *Parliamentary* Manner, and the partial Prepoſſeſſion of the People in favour of the Power and Proceedings of Parliaments; and, 3. The Remembrance of the glorious Advantages gained to *England*, by the victorious Arms of *Henry* V. Father of the preſent Poſſeſſor. The Duke of *York* was therefore under a Neceſſity, not openly to queſtion the Validity of thoſe Parliamentary Acts, 'till he found himſelf in a Condition to promiſe himſelf a fair and equitable Hearing.

Q. How did he ſurmount thoſe Difficulties?

A. Not yet by acting directly for himſelf, but only for the Redreſs of the Grievances of the People. Every Body ſaw a weak and unactive Prince on the Throne; an imperious Princeſs acting in his Name, without any regard to the national Intereſt; a greedy Miniſter, ſeeking only to enrich himſelf at the Expence of the Public; a Council packed up of Men of no Merit or Parts; a Court filled with vicious Creatures, and Perſons of no Principles; and all Places of Profit or Power poſſeſſed by People of no Religion, Virtue, Honour, or Love of their Country! Having therefore made a faſt Friendſhip with ſeveral Lords, and others who had not yet diſcovered

covered a Diſaffection to the Court-Meaſures, an Expedient was ſubtlely inſinuated to the Miniſtry, that the only Way to appeaſe the public Diſcontents, and to prevent the Dangers likely to enſue in the next Parliament, would be for them to admit the Duke of *York*, the two *Nevils* (Earls of *Saliſbury* and *Warwick*) aad ſome other of the popular Lords, to the Council-Table, thereby to convince the People, that they who now governed, did not ſeek to ingroſs all the Power to themſelves.

Q. How did this Suggeſtion ſucceed?

A. Advice ſo plauſibly given, by Perſons not ſuſpected, had its Effect. And no ſooner were the new Counſellors ſettled in their Places at the Board, but the Superiority of their Abilities gained them the Advantage over the reſt. So that by their Authority *Somerſet* was ſent to the Tower, and the Duke of *York* declared *Protector*, with Power to hold the Parliament in the Name of *Henry*, who was then diſabled by Sickneſs. And, when the Parliament met, the Duke was confirm'd in the Protectorſhip, while *Somerſet* was impeach'd by the Commons, and diveſted of the Government of *Calais*, which the Duke of *York* took to himſelf; putting the Great Seal into the Keeping of his Friend, the Earl of *Saliſbury*. But, in the Beginning of 1455, *Henry* recovering from his long Illneſs, the Protectorſhip ceaſed of courſe, and *Somerſet*, being releaſed, reſumed the Helm of Government as before, and procured *Calais* to be taken out of the Duke of *York*'s Hands; calling him and his Adherents, *Trayters!*

Q. How did he reſent this?

A. He retired into *Wales*, levied an Army, and meeting *Henry* at St. *Alban*'s, 23 *May*, 1455, gave him a great Overthrow, killing the Duke

Duke of *Somerſet*, and ſeveral other Lords of the *Lancaſtrian* Party, and taking *Henry* himſelf Priſoner.

Q. What Advantage did he make of this?

A. He treated him with great Reſpect: And, after *Henry* had called a Parliament, wherein the Duke was again declared *Protector*, he was generouſly left at full Liberty. This Confidence had like to have coſt him dear: For, *Henry*, now recovering from his late Relapſe, ſoon deprived the Duke of his Protectorſhip: And *Margaret*, his Conſort (ever jealous of the *White Roſe*, as the Badge of the better Title) made a ſtrong Party againſt him; endeavouring to entrap him and his Friends unprovided, in 1456. This failing, a pretended Reconciliation was projected, and outwardly effected, in 1458: But *Margaret*'s Malice, and mutual Jealouſies, ſoon render'd it abortive, ſo that the Duke's Party were forced again to have recourſe to Arms. The Earl of *Saliſbury* routed and killed the Lord *Audley* at *Blore*-Heath, in *Staffordſhire*: Then, joining the Duke of *York*, they ſent for the Earl of *Warwick*, to bring over more Forces from his Government of *Calais*. But *Henry*'s Army drawing near them, and *Trollop* thereupon revolting with his Party, ſuch a Panic ſeized the reſt of the Duke's Men, that they deſerted, and left their Generals to ſhift for themſelves.

Q. How did they eſcape?

A. The Duke of *York*, with his ſecond Son, embarked for *Ireland*; and the reſt eſcaped to *Calais*. And, upon this Turn of Affairs a pack'd Parliament attainted them all, as *Traytors*, confiſcated their Eſtates, and pronounced their Poſterity incapable of any Inheritance to the fourth Generation; tho' but lately, when they had

better

better *Succeſs*, they had been diſcharged of all Guilt, and the whole Blame laid upon their Enemies. At the ſame Time, the Court iſſued a ſevere Commiſſion to diſcover and proſecute all the Duke of *York*'s Adherents: Upon which, the Men of *Kent*, to prevent their utter Ruin, ſent an Invitation to the Lords at *Calais*. And no ſooner did they land, but they were preſently at the Head of 40,000 Men, with which they entered *London*, where the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, and other Biſhops, as well as the Citizens, declared for them.

Q. What was the Court doing the while?

A. They raiſed an Army at *Coventry*, under the then Dukes of *Somerſet* and *Buckingham*; but *Margaret* herſelf took upon her the Command, tho' *Henry* was there in Perſon. On the other Side, the young Earl of *March* (Son of the Duke of *York*) with the Earls of *Saliſbury* and *Warwick*, and other Lords, at the Head of 25,000 Men, met her near *Northampton*, 9 *July*, 1460; where, after a bloody Battle, and 10,000 Men killed or taken, with ſeveral of their great Commanders ſlain, *Henry* once more fell into the Hands of the *Yorkiſts*, and was treated with their uſual Civility.

Q. What Advantage was made of this Victory?

A. A Parliament was ſummoned to meet at *Weſtminſter*, on the 9th of *October* following. In the mean Time, the Duke of *York* was ſent for over from *Ireland*, tho' he did not arrive 'till two Days after their Metting. When he came to the Houſe of Lords, he ſeemed to expect an Invitation to the Throne: But, finding none of them ſtout enough yet to propoſe it, he placed himſelf in it, and after opening his Mind, withdrew; but ſent them, the next Morning, in Writing,

his formal *Claim* of the Crown, as right Heir of the Houſe of *Clarence*, and conſequently of King *Edward* III.

Q. What was the Proceſs on this great Occaſion?

A. The Duke's Council exhibiting this his *Claim*, to the Lord Chancellor, to be opened to the Houſe of Peers, they agreed, that it, being a Matter of ſo great Conſequence, ought not to be anſwer'd without the Commandment of King *Henry:* To *him*, therefore, they went in a Body, to know his Pleaſure; who commanded them all to *ſearch for Objections to be made againſt it.* Upon which, they ſent for the Judges, Serjeants, and other ſworn Counſel, for Advice; who begged to be excus'd, *the Matter being above the Law, and paſt their Learning.* Then the Lords agreed among themſelves, that every one ſhould freely *offer what he could, to fortify* Henry's *Title, againſt the Duke's Claim.*

Q. And what were their Objections?

A. 1. That *the* OATHS *which they had taken to* Henry, *were not to be broken!* To which the Duke anſwered, That *an Oath to the prejudice of a third Perſon, contrary to Juſtice, is void, and of no effect.* 2. That *the Crown was* ENTAILED *by Act of Parliament, upon* Henry *and his Heirs!* To which the Duke anſwered, That, *ſuch Acts are of no Force againſt him, who is the right Heir by the Laws of God and Nature.* 3. That *the Duke bore only the Arms of* Edmund Langley, *Duke of* York, (the younger Branch) *and not thoſe of* Lionel *Duke of* Clarence, *under whom he now claimed!* To which he anſwered, That *he might lawfully have borne the Arms of* Clarence, *and even of King* Edward III. *though he abſtained for a Time to purſue his Right, for Reaſons well known*

known; but that Right, though reſting for a Time, doth not periſh. And 4. It was objected, That *Henry* IV. on his taking the Crown, claimed it, *as* RIGHT HEIR *to King* Henry III! To which the Duke anſwered, That *it was not true, but only a Colour to ſhadow over his Uſurpation.*

Q. How then did the Houſe of Lords determine it?

A. They did not preſume to *determine* it at all, as competent Judges; only they all agreed, that *the Duke's Title was ſuch as* COULD NOT BE DEFEATED. However, in order to prevent more Bloodſhed, they propoſed an Expedient, to ſave the Honour and Dignity of *Henry*, and to ſatisfy the Duke, *if he would* accept it; *viz.* that *Henry* might be permitted to enjoy the Crown during his Life, and the Duke and his Heirs immediately ſucceed him.

Q. How was this Expedient accepted?

A. Not as of any Authority in itſelf to bind them. But, of their own free Will, for the Peace and Welfare of the Nation, both the Parties *conſented* to the Terms, and made a ſolemn Concordate between themſelves accordingly, 31 *October*, 1460. In Purſuance of which, the Duke was proclaimed Heir Apparent to the Crown of *England*, and Protector of the Realm: And thereupon he waived his Claim in favour of *Henry* for Life; but with this PROVISO, that if this Agreement was broke on *Henry*'s Part, then the Crown ſhould immediately devolve upon the Duke and his Heirs.

Q. Was not *Henry* now to be own'd as a lawful King?

A. Yes; by Virtue of this *Ceſſion* of the Right Heir, ſo long as the Concordate was duly obſerv'd. But *Margaret*, his Conſort, having

eſcaped after the Battle of *Northampton*, with the Prince (her Son) fled into *Scotland:* From whence ſhe returned into *England*, raiſed an Army, and met the Duke at *Wakefield*; where, in a deſperate Battle, 31 *December*, 1460, himſelf being unfortunately ſlain, his Army was routed, his then ſecond Son, the Earl of *Rutland* (but 12 Years of Age) butcher'd in cold Blood, and the Earl of *Saliſbury* taken and beheaded.

Q. Where were their Sons imployed at this Time?

A. Edward, Earl of *March* (Heir to *York*) was at *Glouceſter*, raiſing Forces to ſupport his Father; and *Warwick* (Heir to *Saliſbury*) was left at *London* to guard the Metropolis. Immediately on the News, *Edward* advanced with 23,000 Men, to revenge his Father's Death, and proſecute his Right to the Crown, which, one of the two Houſes was now to wear, at the Expence of the other's Ruin. This young Prince had defeated the Earl of *Pembroke*, at *Mortimer*'s Croſs in *Herefordſhire*, 1 *Feb.* And *Margaret*, advancing towards *London*, defeated the Earl of *Warwick*, near St. *Alban*'s, 17 *Feb.* through the Treachery of *Lovelace*, one of his principal Commanders, and thereby freed *Henry* her Huſband: But making (as uſual) a barbarous Uſe of her Victory, and *Edward* approaching her, ſhe retired Northward, and thereby loſt the City of *London*; which readily opened the Gates to *Edward*, and received him as *their King*, (by Virtue of the former Agreement with *Richard* his Father,) and proclaimed him King *Edward* IV. 4 *March*, 1460.

XXXVI. 16. EDWARD IV.

Q. What was the Title of King *Edward* IV?

A. Strictly

A. Strictly *Hereditary*; being the eldeſt Son and next Heir of *Richard*, Duke of *York*, who was the undoubted Heir of the eldeſt ſurviving Son of King *Edward* III.

Q. When did his Reign properly commence?

A. On 31 *December*, 1460, when his Father was killed in the Battle at *Wakefield*.

Q. But was not *Henry* ſtill living?

A. Yes; and was to have enjoy'd the Crown during Life, by the Duke's *Conſent*: But, when the Concordate was openly broke by the *Lancaſtrian* Party, the *Yorkiſts* (in whom the *Right inherent* lay) were diſcharg'd from their Contract, and at free Liberty to enter upon the Royalty: And accordingly *Richard* is in public Acts and Records, ſtiled RIGHTFUL KING, tho' he was never Crown'd or Proclaimed.

Q. Was the Civil War now at an End.

A. No. *Margaret* was preſently recruited in the North, to more than the Number of 60,000: Againſt whom King *Edward* marched, with 49,000 choice men. The two Armies met, 29 *March*, 1461, at *Towton* in *Yorkſhire*: Where, in a terrible Fight of the whole Day, the *Lancaſtrians* were entirely routed, and more than 36,000 of them killed: After which, *Henry* and *Margaret* eſcaped into *Scotland*, (where they found Refuge by giving up *Berwick*,) and *Edward* returned in Triumph to *London*.

Q. How old was King *Edward* at his Acceſſion?

A. Near 20 Years; being born at *Roan*, 29 *April*, 1441.

Q. Was his foreign Birth no Objection to his Claim?

A. No. The Heir to the Crown of *England* (*wherever born*) is always deemed *Engliſh*, and

not a Foreigner. Beſides, *Roan* itſelf was in the Hands of the *Engliſh* when *Edward* was born there.

Q. When was he crown'd?

A. 29 *June*, 1461.

Q. How did he begin his Reign?

A. By a legal Declaration of the *Engliſh* Conſtitution; diſtinguiſhing the inherent Right of Kings *de Jure*, from the pretended Right of Kings *de Facto*. Thus, by Act of Parliament, the three *Henrys* of *Lancaſter* were declared only *pretenced* Kings, or Kings in *Deed* but not *of Right*, and *Uſurpers*; and all their Acts null and invalid in themſelves, for want of a competent Authority.

Q. Were none of their Acts then held to be authoritative?

A. No. But, to prevent Diſputes and Confuſions among the People, certain Judicial Proceedings (in which the Sovereign Rights were not immediately concern'd) were now *made* good and valid by the lawful King's Authority.

Q. Was *Margaret* quiet all this Time in *Scotland?*

A. No. Having got ſome Forces there, and others from *France*, in 1463 ſhe enter'd *Northumberland* with an Army; but was defeated by the Lord *Montague*, near *Hexham*, 15 *May*, 1464, and forc'd again to ſeek for Shelter in *Scotland*. However, *Henry*, hoping to lie concealed in *England*, was diſcover'd, and confin'd in the *Tower*.

Q. Did not King *Edward* now think of Marriage?

A. Yes; and ſent the Earl of *Warwick* to contract one with *Bona* of *Savoy*, the *French* Queen's Siſter. However, the young King happening,

pening, in the mean Time, to fall in Love with one of his own Subjects, he privately married the Lady *Elizabeth Grey*, (Daughter of the Dutcheſs Dowager of *Bedford*, by her ſecond Huſband, Sir *Richard Wideville*, Lord *Rivers*, and Widow of Sir *John Grey*) 1 *May*, 1463, but did not publiſh it 'till *Michaelmas*, 1464.

Q. How was this reſented, when declar'd?

A. With a general Diſcontent. 'Tis certain, the Nobility envied the Honours and Riches now heap'd upon the new Queen's Family, and the arbitrary Uſe which they made of their Power. The *French* King and Duke of *Savoy* were ſuppos'd to have been affronted, in the Slight put upon the Princeſs *Bona*; and the Earl of *Warwick* irreconcilably diſguſted by the Diſhonour done himſelf in that Negotiation; and all theſe together, were treaſur'd up, in their revengeful Breaſts, againſt the King.

Q. How did thoſe Reſentments break forth at laſt?

A. Warwick, thinking his paſt Services ungratefully paid at Court, and having privately concerted Meaſures with the *French* King, as well as with his Confidents at Home, found Means, among the reſt, to draw in the Duke of *Clarence*, the King's Brother, who thought himſelf too little regarded. Their firſt Reſolution was to retire to *Calais*, to avoid Suſpicion, while their Emiſſaries were raiſing and fomenting an Inſurrection among the Populace, againſt a pretended Miſapplication of a public Charity in *Yorkſhire*. This was carried on with outragious Violence, into the neighbouring Counties, in 1469. At length, the confederated Earl and Duke joining the Northern Rebels, and the King advancing againſt them, ſome of the patriot Nobility interpoſing

their good Offices to prevent more Bloodſhed, and an Accommodation ſeeming to be near a Concluſion, *Warwick* took the Opportunity, baſely to ſurprize the King by Night, and convey'd him Priſoner to *Middleham* Caſtle; whereupon, the Confederates were ſo confident in their Succeſs, that they diſbanded their Troops, without ſecuring the Metropolis. But, the King happily finding the Means to eſcape, and gaining a great Victory, in 1470, over one of their Parties near *Stamford*, broke their Meaſures, ſo that the now Rebel-Duke and Earl (being publickly proſcrib'd) embark'd for *France*, where they were promis'd great Aſſiſtance. At the ſame Time, the *French* King reconciled *Warwick* and *Margaret*, as the only way to gratify their common Revenge in the replacing *Henry* on the Throne of *England*; which was confirm'd by a Marriage between Prince *Edward*, (*Henry*'s Son) and *Warwick*'s youngeſt Daughter, the Elder being already married to the Duke of *Clarence*.

Q. What was the King doing at Home the while?

A. Having found Means to make his Brother *Clarence* ſenſible of his Crime and Folly, he lived in too great a Security; not thinking *Warwick* able to give him the Trouble which he ſoon brought upon him.

Q. What was that?

A. The Earl and Duke, being aſſiſted by *France*, landed at *Dartmouth* 13 *Sept.* 1470; ſoon after which, the Party increaſed to the Number of 60,000. And now *Warwick*, thus backed, immediately proclaimed *Henry* VI. as King, and iſſued out Orders in his own Name, to all the *Engliſh* Subjects to arm, and expel *Edward*, as if he had been a Tyrant and *Uſurper!*

Q. What

Q. What was the Event of this?

A. The King, not ſtrong enough to fight the Rebels, nor knowing whom to *truſt*, retired towards *Lynn*; where, hearing of a general *Revolt* of his People, he found it neceſſary for his *preſent Security*, to give Way to the Torrent, and embark, for Protection in *Burgundy*: And, at the ſame Time, his Queen took Sanctuary in *Weſtminſter*-Abby; where ſhe was delivered of Prince *Edward*, 4 *Nov.* 1470.

Q. How did they proceed on this ſudden *Revolution*?

A. Their firſt Care was to ſet *Henry* free from the Tower, and to *proclaim* him anew. Then they called a *Parliament* in his Name; rather to *deceive* the People, than for any Addition of *Authority* they could confer on thoſe illegal Proceedings. However, tho' ſuch an enforc'd withdrawing from the Rage of an inflamed Multitude, was not conſtrued to be an *Abdication*, or want of Courage in that brave Prince, yet they preſumed (with amazing Confidence) to pronounce their undoubted rightful Sovereign, (thus driven into *Exile*) a *Traytor* and *Uſurper*; to confiſcate all his paternal Eſtate, and to annul all his Acts, as if they had wanted a lawful Authority! Moreover, they took upon them to make an unprecedented *Entail* of the Crown, upon the Heirs-Male of the *younger* Line of *Lancaſter*, and after them, upon the Duke of *Clarence* and his Heirs; paſſing by, not only their King *Edward* himſelf, but the innocent new-born *Prince*, his Son too!

Q. What Countenance did King *Edward* meet with abroad?

A. Very cloudy. However the Duke of *Burgundy* (his Brother-in-Law) did underhand furniſh him with a few Forces and Ships, to land him

again in *Yorkſhire*. But, finding the People there, diſinclined to ſupport him, he was forced to colour his Landing with the Demand only of his patrimonial Eſtate; 'till, his Party thereby increaſing, he was encouraged to reaſſert his Claim of the *Crown*, and to proceed, in the Sight of his Enemies, by the way of *Coventry*: But there, *Warwick*, being prepar'd to give him Battle, was diſſuaded by *Clarence*; ſo that the King marched on towards *London*, which he entered with Acclamations, 11 *April*, 1471, making *Henry* once more a Priſoner in the Tower.

Q. How did *Warwick* behave on this Occaſion?

A. He advanced with all his Forces to *Gladſmoor*, near *Barnet*, where the King was with his Recruits arriv'd back again from *London*: And, tho' the Duke of *Clarence* went off there, with 12,000 of his Followers to join the King; yet the hardy Earl, refuſed all the Terms of *Favour offer'd* him; and reſolving to conquer or die, fought a deſperate Battle, 14 *April*, 1471, where he was ſlain, together with his Brother *Montacute*, and the whole Army diſcomfited. And thus fell that great ambitious Man, who was commonly called THE KING-MAKER!

Q. Did the King now enjoy his Throne in Peace?

A. Not yet. *Margaret*, by the Advice of ſome of her Adherents, was encouraged once more to try the Fortune of War: To which End ſhe had landed that ſame Evening; and an Army was ſpeedily aſſembled; but being attacked, 4 *May* 1471, at *Tewkeſbury*, by the King, the *Lancaſtrians* were again entirely defeated, *Margaret* herſelf, with her Son (Prince *Edward*) and her

her General *Somerſet* taken, and about 3000 killed on the Spot.

Q. What Advantage was made of this Victory?

A. The young Prince *Edward*, aged 18, was cruelly killed, after the Battle, (as it is ſaid) by *Richard*, Duke of *Glouceſter* (or, at leaſt, in his Preſence;) *Somerſet* was beheaded; and *Margaret* confined in the Tower, 'till ſhe was ranſomed by the *French* King, in 1475. And *Henry* himſelf is ſaid to have died of Grief, 21 *May* 1471, though ſome affirm, he was murdered by the ſame bloody Hand, which had lately killed his Son.

Q. How did King *Edward* govern after this?

A. Seeing no Proſpect of any more Rebellions at Home, he took Care by ſeveral Negociations to ſecure his Peace Abroad. Then, having extended Mercy to many of his Enemies, by reverſing their Attainders, and otherwiſe provided for the due Execution of Juſtice, and Improvement of uſeful Arts, among his People, he grew extremely popular: So that, for the Supply of his neceſſary Occaſions, he raiſed vaſt Sums by way of *Benevolence*; tho' he ſullied all his princely Qualities, by a Criminal Converſation with ſeveral Women; and particularly with *Jane Shore*, *another Man's Wife!* At laſt, however, finding himſelf amuſed by various Treaties, and otherwiſe deceiv'd by *Lewis* XI. of *France*, he was preparing for a juſt Revenge by War, when he was prevented by Death, 9 *April*, 1483, aged 42 Years: And, tho' he found the Nation at his Acceſſion much impoveriſh'd, he left it rich and flouriſhing, after a Reign of 22 Years; and as he liv'd belov'd, ſo he died lamented.

Q. Had not he ſome Factions in his own Family?

A. Yes. Of his two Brothers, *Clarence* the elder was more weak and open-hearted than wicked; but *Glouceſter*, wicked, ſubtle, and reſerved. This latter, having an Eye to the Crown, firſt, miſrepreſented his Brother to the King; and then underhand encouraged the Miniſtry to thwart him in all his Meaſures, and proſecute him, 'till by thoſe Means he was impriſoned, accuſed, condemned, and privately put to Death, in 1478. But the King's giving way to this Proceſs, proved the Ruin of his own two Sons, not long after; when *Glouceſter* himſelf perpetrated the very Treaſon, which *Clarence* (probably) never intended.

Q. What elſe was memorable in this Reign?

A. The firſt bringing the Art of Printing into *England*, *A. D.* 1464.

xxxvii. 17. Edward V.

Q. Who ſucceeded King *Edward* IV?

A. His elder Son Prince *Edward*, in the 13th Year of his Age, being born 4 *Nov.* 1470.

Q. Were not ſome Meaſures taken to prevent this young King's Succeſſion?

A. Not openly. The Lords at Court, without any Heſitation, recogniz'd the *undoubted Heir*; whom they proclaim'd immediately upon his Father's Death, 9 *April* 1483. *Glouceſter* alſo himſelf, being at that Time in the *North*, did not only make the ſame Proclamation at *York*, but took the Oath of Allegiance, and cauſed the ſame to be taken by all in thoſe Parts; affecting to ſet an Example of the moſt unfeigned Loyalty.

Q. When was he crown'd?

A. Never.

A. Never. But, the want of that was no Diminution of his Sovereign Authority. For, *Coronation* is but a more ſolemn *Ceremony*, which does not convey any Right, where there was none inherent before.

Q. In whoſe Hands was the Adminiſtration, during the King's Minority?

A. The Queen-Mother uſed her beſt Endeavours, to get both his Perſon and Authority into her own Hands. But unhappily, he was now abſent with her Brother the Earl *Rivers*, on the Borders of *Wales*. In the mean Time, the wicked *Glouceſter*, ſubtlely inſinuating into the Duke of *Buckingham*, Lord *Haſtings*, and others, the Danger of intruſting the King and Government with the Queen-Mother and her Friends, found Means to get the young King into his own Power, as he was on the Road towards *London*, in order to his *Coronation*; making the Queen's Brother, and others, of his Retinue Priſoners; upon which the now diſtreſs'd Queen, with her other Son, the Duke of *York*, fled into the Sanctuary at *Weſtminſter*.

Q. How did *Glouceſter* proceed after this?

A. With all the *outward Shew* of Duty, whereby he more eaſily procur'd himſelf to be declar'd *Protector*, by a Council of his own calling. After which, he ſo artfully carried it, as to prevail with the Queen, to put the young Duke alſo into his Hands, to accompany the King his Brother. Then he removed them both to the *Tower*, under Pretence of making Preparations for the *Coronation*; that being the uſual Place in thoſe Days, from whence they proceeded to that Solemnity.

Q. What was his next Step?

A. Having firmly engaged the wicked *Buckingham* in his Plot, he ſent arbitrary Orders to behead

head the Queen's Relations, whom he had before impriſoned at *Pontefract*. His next Care, was to gain the Lord-Mayor, and others; by whoſe Means he ſpread *ſcandalous Reports* abroad, as if the Children of his Brother King *Edward* IV. (under pretence of a Precontract) had been *Illegitimate*, thoſe of the Duke of *Clarence*, by reaſon of his Attainder, incapable of the Succeſſion; and himſelf therefore of Courſe, the *next Heir* to the Throne!

Q. Had nobody now the Senſe to diſcover ſo ſcandalous an *Impoſture*, and the Honeſty to oppoſe it?

A. Yes. The Lord *Stanley* frankly declared his Suſpicions; and Lord *Haſtings* (tho' leſs ſuſpicious) was equally zealous for the Safety and Intereſt of the young King. Both which, being betray'd to the Protector, he immediately reſolved their Ruin.

Q. How did he accompliſh it?

A. Coming to the Tower, he ſuddenly cauſed *Haſtings* to be dragged out by his Soldiers, and beheaded, (as it was obſerved, at the ſame Inſtant, when the innocent Lords at *Pontefract* were beheaded by *Haſtings*'s own Concurrence!) And *Stanley* narrowly eſcaping Death alſo in the Fray, was committed to Priſon, as well as the Archbiſhop of *York*, and the Biſhop of *Ely*.

Q. Were not ſome other baſe Artifices uſed to prepare the People for the intended Revolution?

A. Yes. A celebrated *Preacher* or two were found out, baſe and wicked enough, to varniſh it over *in the Name of the Lord!* preaching up the *Illegitimacy* of the elder Line, and thence inferring the *Hereditary Right* of the then aſpiring *Uſurper*: Which was ſeconded ſoon after, in a ſtudied Speech, by the Duke of *Buckingham*.

Where-

Whereupon, a few of the *mercenary Mob* being (after many Artifices) bribed to cry out for *King Richard!* the Cabal waited upon the Protector with an Offer of the Crown, in the Name of the *Three Eſtates*, (tho' there was no Parliament then in being:) And he, after a ſeeming Surprize, and a hypocritical Refuſal, was at length prevailed with to undertake the Burden, on *the free Election* (as he ſtiled it) of the Lords and Commons of the Realm.

xxxviii. 18. Richard III.

Q. When did *Richard* take the Government upon him?

A. 19 *June*, 1483, being proclaimed the next Day, by the Name of King *Richard* III. and formally crown'd 6 *July* following.

Q. What became of the young King, and the Lords, impriſoned?

A. Underſtanding, that the Lord *Strange* (*Stanley*'s Son) was raiſing Forces in *Lancaſhire*, he, out of pretended Generoſity, gave both the Lord *Stanley*, and the Archbiſhop of *York*, their Liberty, while the Biſhop of *Ely* was committed to the Care of *Buckingham*. But, to ſecure himſelf the better in his *Uſurpation*, he ('tis ſaid) then gave expreſs Orders to *murder* the two Princes; which was accordingly perpetrated in the Tower!

Q. Did not this *Richard* commence a lawful King after the Death of his two Nephews?

A. No. It is true, he would thereupon have become *the lawful* King (notwithſtanding the unlawful Means of acquiring it) if he had then been *the next* Survivor of the Blood Royal: But, ſince there was other Iſſue of his elder Brother's ſtill living, and particularly the Lady *Elizabeth*, eldeſt Siſter of the young Princes, the Right immediately

diately deſcended to *her*; ſo that he continued ſtill an *Uſurper*.

Q. What Circumſtances were moſt favourable to his Uſurpation?

A. The many bloody Battles, fought in the late Civil Wars, had cut off many of the greateſt Men, and ruined many of the beſt Families: Of the reſt, he had gained not a few by Fear or Favours, and ſacrific'd ſeveral to his Ambition, while others were forced to fly abroad for their Security. So that he had as fair a Proſpect, as any *Uſurper* can have, of a *Thorough Settlement*.

Q. Whence did he meet with any Trouble?

A. From the *ſame* Hand which had before ſet him up. *Buckingham*, thinking himſelf neglected, began to meditate Revenge. To this End, he conſulted *Morton*, Biſhop of *Ely*, (who was his Priſoner;) with whom, at laſt, it was projected, to ſet up againſt *Richard*, *Henry*, Earl of *Richmond*, as ſurviving Heir of the Houſe of *Lancaſter*, (tho' by an illegitimate Branch,) to be ſtrengthened by a Marriage with *Elizabeth*, the undoubted Heir of the Houſe of *York*.

Q. How did they proceed?

A. They propos'd it at firſt to the Earl's Mother, and then to the Queen Dowager; and, after *their* Approbation gain'd, to ſeveral others. Every Body agreed it was the only Way to *unite* the two contending Families, and reſtore Peace to the Nation. When the Propoſal was made to *Henry*, (then at the Court of *Bretagne*) he gladly embraced it; promiſing to land in *October*. In the mean Time, a ſtrong Party was form'd, and Forces privately liſted in ſeveral Counties to join him; which appear'd under their reſpective Leaders, 18 *Oct.* the Day agreed on.

Q. What was *Richard* doing the while?

A. Such

A. Such a general Concert could not be long concealed from him whoſe Jealouſy made him watchful: And, having diſcover'd *Buckingham* to be at the Head of it, he had taken precaution for his own Defence, and ſent for him to Court. The Duke refus'd to obey, and ſtood upon his Guard. A ſudden Inundation of the *Severn* hinder'd him to join his Friends. His *Welſh* Forces thereupon deſert him. He conceals himſelf; is proſcrib'd, betray'd, taken, and beheaded, 2 *Nov.* 1484. And thus, he deſervedly fell, by the *ſame Power*, and in the ſame *arbitrary* Manner, as he had rais'd, and practis'd againſt others, without Proceſs, and without Pity!

Q. Did not this Miſcarriage break all the Meaſures of the Party?

A. Yes, for that Time. Many of the Leaders fell into the *Uſurper*'s Hands, and were ſacrific'd to his Fury, without Mercy, Authority, or Form of Law; while others retir'd beyond the Sea to the Earl of *Richmond*; who, being ſolemnly *contracted* to the Princeſs *Elizabeth*, was now regarded as their Sovereign *in Right of her*.

Q. Did *Henry* of *Richmond* make any Attempt, according to the Agreement?

A. Yes. With a good Body of Forces, lent him by the Duke of *Bretagne*, he embarked for *England*: But, his Fleet was diſpers'd by a Tempeſt; and himſelf happily eſcaping his Enemies, who waited for him on the Coaſt, was forc'd to return.

Q. What was *Richard*'s next Step?

A. He had proclaimed Pardon to all the common Followers, tho' he promiſed great Rewards for *taking* their principal Leaders. And now he called a *Convention* of his Creatures together, under the Name and Formality of a *Parliament*.

This

This Pack of MISCREANTS audaciously declared all the Pretenders of the *right Line* to be *illegitimate*; confirmed their Mock-King's Title as valid and regular; and *attainted* the Earl of *Richmond*, and his Adherents, as *Traytors!*

Q. Did he meet with no Opposition from neighbouring Princes?

A. He secured himself against that, as far as *Treaties* would do it. And, among the rest, he secretly engaged *Landais*, the Duke of *Bretagne*'s Prime-Minister, in a Plot, to deliver the Earl of *Richmond* into his Hands; so that, hitherto PROVIDENCE might seem to favour the *Usurpation!* But the Earl, happily escaping thence, found Protection and Assistance from King *Charles* VIII. of *France*; and *Landais* received, of his own Master, the just Reward of his Treachery and Corruption.

Q. What Measures did *Richard* take to counterplot his Enemies?

A. As his continual Jealousy obliged him to keep Spies in every Corner, the Marriage intended, between the Heirs of *York* and *Lancaster*, could not be long a Secret. To prevent this, he projected to *marry* the Princess himself, notwithstanding she was his *own Niece*, and under the Protection of *Sanctuary*, and himself actually a *Married Man!*

Q. Who was then his Wife?

A. Anne, the Daughter of *Warwick* (the *Make-King*) and Widow of Prince *Edward* of *Lancaster*, whom *Richard* himself had (at least seen) murder'd after the Battle at *Tewksbury*.

Q. How did he proceed in this Project?

A. He, by divers subtle Artifices, prevailed with the Queen Dowager and the young Princesses to leave their Sanctuary; and his own Consort's

Conſort's Death (happening opportune for, if not *haſtened* by him) ſoon freed him from the Bonds of Matrimony: And now he doubted not but to procure an *infallible Diſpenſation* to remove the other Impediment of Conſanguinity.

Q. What could the Earl of *Richmond* now do to prevent it?

A. Having receiv'd an inconſiderable Supply from the *French* Court (more likely to raiſe freſh Troubles, than to reſtore the Peace and Unity of the *Engliſh* Nation) but depending more upon the repeated Aſſurances that the Hearts of the People were generally inclined to aſſiſt him againſt the *deteſted Uſurper*, he landed 6 *Aug.* 1485, (with but 3000 Men) at *Milford-Haven*, and marched to *Shrewſbury*, without any Oppoſition; the honeſt *Welſhmen* joining him with Men, Money, and other Neceſſaries, to form a conſiderable Army.

Q. How did *Richard* behave on this Occaſion?

A. Without any Signs of Fear from ſo ſmall a Force, though he was daily alarm'd with the Deſertion of his Troops, and the Increaſe of his Enemies. He had order'd his Forces to aſſemble at *Nottingham*. Among the reſt, the Lord *Stanley* had raiſed 5000 Men, with which he had poſted himſelf at *Lichfield*; while his Brother had 2000 more at *Stafford*, ready to join him on Occaſion. Theſe Brothers, tho' pretending to take *Richard*'s Part, were by him ſuſpected; the former having married the Counteſs of *Richmond*, *Henry*'s Mother: However, as he had the Lord *Strange* as an Hoſtage in his Power, the Father durſt not yet act againſt him, for his Son's Sake.

Q. Did not the Conteſt for the Crown now draw towards a *Criſis*?

A. Yes.

A. Yes. Both the Competitors were eager to fight, while the *Stanleys* marched in a diſtinct Body by themſelves. When *Henry* advanced to *Lichfield*, Lord *Stanley* moved forward towards *Richard*, but did not join with either. In the mean Time, *Richard*, with his Forces, was at *Leiceſter*, from whence he proceeded towards *Boſworth*, 22 *Auguſt*, 1485. There he drew up his Men to the Number of 12,000; ſeeing his Enemy advance, tho' with but 5000. While theſe two Armies were forming themſelves to the beſt Advantage, Lord *Stanley*, coming up, with his Forces, poſted himſelf on one Side of the open Space between both, as his Brother did *his* on the other, without declaring for either. But, when the Battle began, and the Superiority of *Richard*'s Number gave *him* the Advantage, the *Stanleys*, joining the weaker Party, ſoon brought the Victory to the right Side; ſo that the *Uſurper*, fighting deſperately, (with the Crown on his Head) loſt his Life in a more glorious Manner than the wicked Actions of it had deſerved.

Q. What Uſe did *Henry* make of this Victory?

A. A Soldier, finding the *Crown*, brought it to the Lord *Stanley*; who immediately placed it on *Henry*'s Head, the whole Army ſaluting him, *King Henry* VII. And *Richard*'s Body being found, naked and dirty, among the ſlain, was *ſo* conveyed (acroſs a Horſe's Back) to *Leiceſter*, where it was buried, without any Solemnity.

Q. What was his true Character?

A. Many Objections have been made to what is commonly related of him, as if ſeveral of the Crimes laid to his Charge had been ſo many *Calumnies* propagated only to make his *dark Shades* ſet off his Succeſſor in a *fairer Light!* And the ſad *Effects* of ſuch vile Artifices, in *ſome Caſes*, are

are too notorious to be disputed. But, after all, it will be difficult to find in History a Prince of *so ill* a Character, when we consider what is recorded of his *Regicide*, *Usurpation*, and repeated *Butcheries*; his Slanders rais'd to the Dishonour of his own Mother and Brothers, and their Issue; his Project for an *incestuous* Marriage, and the other diabolical Artifices used by him to accomplish his Designs! But Divine *Providence*, at length, defeated all those worldly Politicks; restoring the Crown to the *Right Heir*, and the Kingdom thereby to its Peace, after the Expence of more Blood and Treasure at Home, for the Support of an *unjust Title*, than our Nation had ever been at for carrying on all our just Wars abroad.

xxxix. 19. Henry VII.

Q. Did *Henry* enjoy the Crown immediately after this Victory, and that military Inauguration?

A. Yes: And affected to hold it, in *his own Right*, as if it had regularly descended to *him* by Inheritance.

Q. Did he not marry the Heiress of King *Edward*?

A. Yes. But not 'till after his own Coronation, and several Acts of *usurped* Royalty performed by him?

Q. When was he crown'd?

A. 30 *Oct.* 1485. But he did not *marry* the Princess 'till 18 *January* following, nor solemnize her Coronation 'till 25 *Nov.* 1487.

Q. What Acts of Royalty did he begin with?

A. By creating *Peers*; among whom, his Father-in-Law the Lord *Stanley*, was made Earl of *Derby*: And by calling a Parliament, in *November* 1485.

Q. What uſe did he make of this Parliament?

A. To ſettle the Crown on him and the *Heirs of his Body*, without any mention of the Princeſs *Elizabeth*, or the Houſe of *York*; as if the Right of Succeſſion had been ſolely in *him*, tho' all the World knew the contrary.

Q. How could the Parliament do this?

A. Parliaments have generally been very complaiſant to Princes who had the Argument of POWER to plead for them: And this Prince was wiſe enough to know, that Parliamentary *Varniſh*, how thin ſoever, would give his Title a fair Colour in the Eyes of the People. They therefore made no Scruple to recognize him for their *King*, without examining *how* he became ſo; reverſing the former Attainders of his Friends, and attainting thoſe whom he looked upon as his Enemies.

Q. Had not *Henry* himſelf been ſo attainted among others?

A Yes. But, as it is a Maxim in Law, that an Attainder of the *Right Heir* is void in itſelf, and no Bar to his Succeſſion, whoever once becomes Maſter of the *Crown*, will eaſily apply the *Law*, and all its Maxims, to ſerve his own Turn.

Q. Had not he now recourſe to the *Pope* (as uſual) to patch up the Defects of his favourite Title?

A. Yes. And his Holineſs was ready enough to give his Sanction to confirm it; tho' the very Bulls for that Purpoſe mention *Henry's* having conſented to marry *Elizabeth*, the *true Heireſs* of the Kingdom.

Q. How did he behave towards his Queen after Marriage?

A. He was ſo far from governing in *her* Name, or by *her Authority*, that he behaved towards her with

with an indecent Coldneſs; even, after ſhe had brought him a Son, and the Kingdom an Heir Apparent.

Q. How was his Coldneſs reſented?

A. Very heavily, by all the Friends to the right Line. Which general Diſguſt gave Occaſion to an Impoſture, that created him no ſmall Trouble.

Q. What was that?

A. A Rumour was now ſpread about, that the young Earl of *Warwick* had eſcaped out of the Tower. At the ſame Time, one *Lambert Simnel*, of incongruous Age, and Behaviour, was inſtructed to perſonate the Earl, who was Son and Heir to the Duke of *Clarence*, King *Edward* the IV's Brother. *Ireland* was his firſt Scene: Where he no ſooner appeared, but he was receiv'd, *as King*, in 1486. Among thoſe who took Part with him in *England* was the Earl of *Lincoln*, Son of one of the Siſters of King *Edward* IV. He embarked for *Flanders*, to concert Meaſures with the Dutcheſs Dowager of *Burgundy*, another Siſter of the ſame King: And from thence returned with ſome *German* Forces into *Ireland*; where the ſuppoſed King was formally crown'd in 1487, without one Sword drawn againſt him there.

Q. What did *Henry* do to ſuppreſs him?

A. He raiſed an Army, and advanced to fight *Simnel* and his Party, who had landed in *Lancaſhire*. They met 16 *June*, 1487, at *Stoke* in *Nottinghamſhire*: Where, in an obſtinate Battle, the Earl of *Lincoln*, with moſt of the *Germans*, were killed, the *Iriſh* put to flight, and *Simnel* himſelf, being taken, was ſometime kept in the King's Kitchen, and afterwards made one of his Falconers.

Q. Did

Q. Did not *Henry* now manifeſt his *Clemency* to thoſe Conſpirators?

A. It is true, he ſpared ſome of their Lives: But, by Courts-Martial, and other ſpecial Commiſſioners, he ſeverely proſecuted and fined ſuch as were accus'd or ſuſpected, and thereby filled his own Coffers with their Spoils.

Q. Was he ſettled quietly on the Throne after this?

A. Yes, for ſome Time; moſt of which, he ſpent in Treaties and Negociations with neighbouring Princes, the better to ſecure his Peace at Home; and ſome feigned *Shews* of War Abroad, to ſerve for a fair Colour to raiſe Money of the People, which he intended to hoard up for his own Uſe?

Q. What other Troubles did he meet with at Home?

A. His open Diſaffection to the Houſe of *York* could not but keep up a Spirit of Oppoſition in thoſe who had a due Regard to the right Line. The Dutcheſs of *Burgundy*, therefore, encouraged a Rumour to be ſpread, that her Nephew, *Richard* Duke of *York*, had eſcaped the Murder committed upon his Brother, King *Edward* V. and had found out one *Perkin Warbeck*, whom ſhe is ſaid to have inſtructed to perſonate him. Which was ſo artfully carried on, as to draw in ſeveral conſiderable Perſons, even of *Henry*'s own Houſhold, in 1493.

Q. How then did he guard againſt that *Pretender*?

A. By ſuch Evidence as was thought proper to convince all Mankind of that *Impoſture*. Firſt, by finding out the very Perſons, who had perpetrated the *Murder* of the young Prince whom he perſonated: And next by diſcovering the Birth,

Life,

Life, Actions, Profeſſion, and the ſeveral other Circumſtances of this *Perkin*, from his very Childhood.

Q. What became of *Perkin* after this?

A. He attempted to land in *Kent*, 3 *July*, 1495. But, being there diſappointed, he paſſed to *Ireland*, and thence to *Scotland*; where he was not only receiv'd as the very Perſon he repreſented, and honour'd with the Marriage of the Lady *Catharine Gordon*, but even accompanied by that King with an Army, to reſtore him to his *ſuppoſed Right*, in 1496.

Q. What was the Event of this?

A. Tho' the *Engliſh* in general did not love their King *Henry*; yet, they were ſo generally perſuaded that *Perkin*'s Title was a Forgery, that they refuſed to join him: Whereupon the *Scots* King, contented himſelf with ravaging *Northumberland*, and returned Home with his Booty. At length, after a ſecond Attempt there, without Succeſs, *Perkin* retired to *Ireland*; from whence he was invited to return, in hopes to renew an Inſurrection of the *Corniſhmen*, which had been rais'd and carried on to a great Height, on account of the heavy Taxes in 1497; but ſuppreſs'd on their Advance towards *London*. His Preſence nevertheleſs revived ſuch a Spirit among them, as encouraged him to aſſume the *Royal Title*, and make an Attempt on *Exeter*. But, on the Approach of the regular Forces againſt him, his few ill-armed and undiſciplined Followers diſperſed, and *Perkin* himſelf took Sanctuary.

Q. What Severities were exerciſed on this Occaſion?

A. King *Henry* had ſeized and executed ſeveral of *Perkin*'s principal Favourites, in 1494, among whom was Sir *William Stanley*, who had been a

chief Inſtrument in raiſing *him* to the Throne. Theſe were ſacrifiſed to his *Avarice*, rather than to his *Fears*; without Regard to *former Services*, or even to the *Relation* which ſome of them had to himſelf. Their common Crime was only in preferring the known RIGHT of the Houſe of *York*, before the *Pretenſions* of the remoter Line of *Lancaſter*: But, the particular Guilt, which cauſed their Ruin, lay in their *Riches*, which *Henry* took all Occaſions to accumulate into his Exchequer. As to others, who had *leſs to loſe*, tho' actually in Arms againſt him, he ſpared their Lives indeed, but fleeced them by ſuch Fines as left them *ſtarving* Inſtances of his *Clemency!* And as to *Perkin* himſelf, on Promiſe of ſparing his Life, he left the Sanctuary, and was brought to *London*; where he was cloſely committed to Priſon, privately examined, and ſuch Extracts thereof publiſh'd, as were thought fit to be divulg'd.

Q. Are there not ſtill ſome Grounds to believe, he was the real *Richard* Duke of *York?*

A. Much has been offer'd to that Purpoſe. But, ſuppoſing it to be true, his *Death* (how unworthy and piteous ſoever) would undoubtedly render his Siſter *Elizabeth* and her *Heirs* the *Rightful* Inheritors of the Crown, in their due and regular Courſe of *Succeſſion.*

Q. Did he die in Confinement?

A. No. By his own Contrivance, or rather by a *Snare* laid for him, a Scheme was form'd for his Eſcape out of the Tower, together with the Earl of *Warwick*: Upon the Proof of which, *Perkin* was hang'd, 23 *Nov.* and the young Earl beheaded, 28 *Nov.* 1499, who was guilty of no other Crime, but his being *the laſt Male-Heir* of the Houſe of *York*; which whole Line *Henry* hated, tho'

tho' he had no other Title to the Throne, but that of his *Marriage* with the *firſt Branch* of it.

Q. How did *Henry* excuſe himſelf to the World, for ſacrifiſing that young Prince?

A. He endeavoured it, by publiſhing, that the King of *Spain* had poſitively declar'd, that he would never conſent to marry his Daughter *Catharine* to Prince *Arthur*, ſo long as the Earl of *Warwick* lived: As if that *Marriage* had been ſo eſſentially neceſſary for *England*, that it muſt be purchaſed with *innocent Blood!* And yet, that King could not but know, that this Earl could never claim any *Right* to the Crown ſo long as there was any ſurviving Iſſue of his Father's *elder* Brother King *Edward* IV. However, that *Marriage*, which had been long in Treaty, was actually ſolemnized by Proxy, 19 *May*, 1499, (above ſix Months before the Earl of *Warwick*'s Condemnation) tho' not conſummated 'till 14 *Nov.* 1501.

Q. How did he reſent the King of *Scotland*'s having aſſiſted *Perkin?*

A. With ſeeming great Indignation. He called a Parliament, highly aggravating the Affront, and threatening Revenge. But, when he had raiſed a Sum of Money, under that Pretence, he found Means to avoid expending it in a War, by giving his eldeſt Daughter *Margaret* in Marriage to that King; from whence aroſe afterwards, the *Hereditary Right* of the Royal Family of STUART to the Throne of *England*. Thus did this politic Prince at once ſecure the Peace with his Neighbour, and the Money in his own Coffers: *His Wars always ſerving him for a Mine of Treaſure of a ſtrange Ore; Iron at the Top, and Gold and Silver at the Bottom!*

Q. What other Acts did he perform in order to his own Security?

A. Being conſcious of his own *Defect* of Title, and averſe to acknowledge the *better Right* of the Queen, his Conſort, (without whoſe Conſent he had been in Truth, but an *Uſurper*) he paſſed an *extraordinary* Act, in 1495, (being the 11th Year of his Reign) That no Perſons ſhould be impeached or attainted for aſſiſting *the King for the Time being*.

Q. Of what Effect was that Law?

A. It ſerved his own Turn, as perſuading the People, that they might ſafely venture their Lives and Fortunes in *his* Service, as being the *King in Fact*, without examining whether he was ſo *of Right* or not. But, it has never been judged of any Force, ſince that Time, (nor conſiſtent with Law, Reaſon, or good Conſcience,) to ſecure thoſe who ſerve any *Uſurper* in poſſeſſion of the Throne, againſt their rightful Sovereign, howſoever diſpoſſeſs'd of it. So that *the King for the Time being*, as mentioned in this Act, muſt be underſtood of him who is *the Lawful and Rightful King*, by the fundamental Conſtitution; and cannot be applied to any other without Abſurdity.

Q. Did this King outlive his Queen?

A. Yes. For ſhe died, 11 *Feb.* 1502, leaving behind her *Henry*, then Prince of *Wales*. (by the Death of his Brother *Arthur*) to whom the Crown of *Right* deſcended, immediately upon the Death of the Queen his Mother.

Q. Did the Prince now aſſert his *Right* of Succeſſion?

A. He was yet too young to think of it himſelf: But, it is believ'd, he would have aſſerted it, if his Father had ſurvived a few Years longer.

Q. Did *Henry* after this enjoy the Crown in Peace?

A. Yes.

A. Yes. But, now his Thoughts were wholly bent upon heaping up *Riches*, by Devices however mean and oppreſſive. To this End, he had two wicked Inſtruments, *Empſon* and *Dudley*; who, by reviving obſolete *Penal Laws*, promoting vexatious *Informations*, and chargeable Proceſſes, packing and influencing *Juries*, impoſing heavy *Fines*, and other arbitrary Methods of Extortion, gratified their Maſter's avaricious Humour, but loſt him the Hearts of the People.

Q. When did he die?

A. He died of a Ptiſick, 22 *April*, 1509, aged 53 Years?

Q. What elſe happened moſt remarkable in this Reign?

A. The firſt Diſcovery of *America*, in 1492, by *Chriſtopher Columbus*, fitted out by the King of *Spain*.

xl. 20. HENRY VIII.

Q. Who ſucceeded King *Henry* VII?

A. His eldeſt ſurviving Son, King *Henry* VIII. the undoubted Heir to the Crown, by *Proximity* of Blood.

Q. How old was he at his Acceſſion?

A. Almoſt 18 Years; being born, 28 *June*, 1491.

Q. How was he educated in his Childhood?

A. In the Rudiments of *Learning* proper for *Holy Orders*; to which his Father deſigned him, with an Eye to the Archbiſhoprick of *Canterbury*: And tho', upon the Death of his Elder Brother, Prince *Arthur*, 2 *April*, 1502, he became *Heir* to the Crown, yet the King kept him ſtill cloſe to his Studies, (as it is thought) to prevent him

from conſidering his *immediate* Right of Succeſſion, after the Death of the Queen his Mother.

Q. How did he begin his Reign?

A. With an Act of great Popularity; encouraging his People to exhibit their Complaints againſt the Extortions of *Empſon* and *Dudley*.

Q. How were they proceeded againſt?

A. They were apprehended and ſent to the Tower: And, after ſome Time, made Sacrifices to the Reſentment of the People, in 1510, being firſt convicted upon Trial, and afterwards *attainted* by Act of Parliament.

Q. What was the next Affair of Importance?

A. The Debate in Council about the King's *Marriage*.

Q. How was that?

A. The late Prince *Arthur* had, by Proxy, married *Catharine* of *Spain*, 19 *May*, 1499, and in Perſon, 14 *Nov.* 1501. After which, they cohabited 'till 2 *April*, 1502, when he died: And the Princeſs was ſo generally thought to be left *with Child*, that *Henry* was not declar'd Prince of *Wales* 'till Ten Months after his Brother's Death. However, the King, his Father, having received 100,000 Crowns of Gold, as half of her Fortune, and loth to loſe the other half, or to refund what he had receiv'd, if he ſhould ſend her home again, projected to marry her again to his younger Son *Henry*; which was agreed to by her Parents. Previous to this ſecond Marriage, Pope *Julius* II. granted his *Diſpenſation*, 26 *Dec.* 1503, wherein, the former Marriage was expreſly ſuppoſed to have been *conſummated*. Upon which, *Henry* and *Catharine* were ſolemnly affianced; tho' it was ſo ordered, that the young Prince, when he came to the Age of fourteen, (*viz.* 28 *June*, 1505) made *ſecretly* a formal *Proteſtation*

teſtation againſt it. And thus it ſtood, when that *Henry* coming to the Throne, the Queſtion was debated in Council, whether the young King ſhould *conſummate* the Marriage or not.

Q. What was the Reſult of it?

A. Archbiſhop *Warham* argued againſt it, as really INCESTUOUS, contrary to God's Law, and conſequently not to be diſpenſed with. Biſhop *Fox* inſiſted upon the *Pope*'s *Authority*, and the Validity of the Diſpenſation; but withal, added other Arguments grounded on worldly *Politicks*. The latter carried it. Accordingly, they were *married* 3 *June*, 1509, and *crown'd* on the 24th.

Q. What Figure did he make in the World at this Time?

A. He minded his Affairs ſo little, for ſome Time, that he gave himſelf almoſt wholly up to *Diverſions*; in which he was ſo extravagant, that he had ſoon waſted 1,800,000 Pounds, which his Father had hoarded up. Mean while, he ſuffered himſelf to be drawn in, by his ſubtle Father-in-law, to a League with the Pope, the Emperor, and *him*, againſt *France*, for what he was *no way* concern'd in; and which could not be of any Advantage to him, as his *Allies* purſued only *their own* particular Ends elſewhere, leaving *England* alone, under the Burden and Expence of an unneceſſary War in *France*.

Q. Who had the principal Direction of the King's Counſels?

A. He made uſe at firſt of his Father's Counſellors: But, Biſhop *Fox*, finding his Intereſt at Court declining, introduced *Thomas Wolſey*, Dean of *Lincoln*, to the Office of Almoner and Privy-Counſellor; who, by his Dexterity and Addreſs, ſoon gained his Maſter's Favour, ſo as to become at length his *Prime Miniſter*, and to continue it

from conſidering his *immediate* Right of Succeſſion, after the Death of the Queen his Mother.

Q. How did he begin his Reign?

A. With an Act of great Popularity; encouraging his People to exhibit their Complaints againſt the Extortions of *Empſon* and *Dudley*.

Q. How were they proceeded againſt?

A. They were apprehended and ſent to the Tower: And, after ſome Time, made Sacrifices to the Reſentment of the People, in 1510, being firſt convicted upon Trial, and afterwards *attainted* by Act of Parliament.

Q. What was the next Affair of Importance?

A. The Debate in Council about the King's *Marriage*.

Q. How was that?

A. The late Prince *Arthur* had, by Proxy, married *Catharine* of *Spain*, 19 *May*, 1499, and in Perſon, 14 *Nov.* 1501. After which, they cohabited 'till 2 *April*, 1502, when he died: And the Princeſs was ſo generally thought to be left *with Child*, that *Henry* was not declar'd Prince of *Wales* 'till Ten Months after his Brother's Death. However, the King, his Father, having received 100,000 Crowns of Gold, as half of her Fortune, and loth to loſe the other half, or to refund what he had receiv'd, if he ſhould ſend her home again, projected to marry her again to his younger Son *Henry*; which was agreed to by her Parents. Previous to this ſecond Marriage, Pope *Julius* II. granted his *Diſpenſation*, 26 *Dec.* 1503, wherein, the former Marriage was expreſly ſuppoſed to have been *conſummated*. Upon which, *Henry* and *Catharine* were ſolemnly affianced; tho' it was ſo ordered, that the young Prince, when he came to the Age of fourteen, (*viz.* 28 *June*, 1505) made *ſecretly* a formal *Proteſtation*

teſtation againſt it. And thus it ſtood, when that *Henry* coming to the Throne, the Queſtion was debated in Council, whether the young King ſhould *conſummate* the Marriage or not.

Q. What was the Reſult of it?

A. Archbiſhop *Warham* argued againſt it, as really INCESTUOUS, contrary to God's Law, and conſequently not to be diſpenſed with. Biſhop *Fox* inſiſted upon the *Pope*'s *Authority*, and the Validity of the Diſpenſation; but withal, added other Arguments grounded on worldly *Politicks*. The latter carried it. Accordingly, they were *married* 3 *June*, 1509, and *crown'd* on the 24th.

Q. What Figure did he make in the World at this Time?

A. He minded his Affairs ſo little, for ſome Time, that he gave himſelf almoſt wholly up to *Diverſions*; in which he was ſo extravagant, that he had ſoon waſted 1,800,000 Pounds, which his Father had hoarded up. Mean while, he ſuffered himſelf to be drawn in, by his ſubtle Father-in-law, to a League with the Pope, the Emperor, and *him*, againſt *France*, for what he was *no way* concern'd in; and which could not be of any Advantage to him, as his *Allies* purſued only *their own* particular Ends elſewhere, leaving *England* alone, under the Burden and Expence of an unneceſſary War in *France*.

Q. Who had the principal Direction of the King's Counſels?

A. He made uſe at firſt of his Father's Counſellors: But, Biſhop *Fox*, finding his Intereſt at Court declining, introduced *Thomas Wolſey*, Dean of *Lincoln*, to the Office of Almoner and Privy-Counſellor; who, by his Dexterity and Addreſs, ſoon gained his Maſter's Favour, ſo as to become at length his *Prime Miniſter*, and to continue it

with great Reputation, (tho' not without Envy) about 17 Years.

Q. Did King *Henry* proceed in his War with *France?*

A. Yes. Having tranſported his Army to *Calais*, he put himſelf at their Head, during the Siege of *Terouenne*, 4 *Aug.* 1513, whither the Emperor *Maximilian* came, and ſerved under him in Perſon as a *Voluntier*; wearing the *Engliſh Badge*, and receiving 100 Crowns a Day for his *Pay*.

Q. What great Feats did he now perform?

A. The *French* Army approaching, was ſuddenly put to Flight at the *Battle of Spurs*; ſo call'd from their having made more uſe of their *Spurs* than their *Swords*. Upon which, *Terouenne* immediately ſurrendered; and *Tournay* (without any Reſiſtance,) was taken ſoon after, of which the King made *Wolſey*, Biſhop, and the Pope made him Adminiſtrator.

Q. What paſſed at home the while?

A. While the King was engag'd in *France*, his Brother-in Law, King *James* IV. of *Scotland*, made a Diverſion in *England*, in favour of his old Allies the *French*: But, being attack'd by the Earl of *Surry*, in *Flodden*-Field, 9 *Sept.* 1513, was worſted in a bloody Battle, and himſelf (moſt valiantly fighting) ſlain. After which, a Marriage between (the old) King *Lewis* XII. of *France*, and King *Henry*'s Siſter *Mary*, 9 *Oct.* 1514, reſtored Peace between the three Kingdoms, for ſome Time; tho' King *Lewis* died, 1 *January* following: Whereupon the Queen, his Widow, beſtowed herſelf upon *Charles Brandon*, Duke of *Suffolk*; as her elder Siſter *Margaret* (Widow of the late King of *Scotland*) had newly done to *Archibald Douglas* Earl of *Angus*.

Q. Was

Q. Was King *Henry* engaged in no other Wars abroad.

A. Yes. *Charles* V. (now Emperor and King of *Spain*) and *Francis* I. (the now King of *France*) being Rivals in Power, ſeverally courted him to their Intereſt: And the King unadviſedly engaged with the former, againſt the latter. His Fleet, joined with the Emperor's, made two Deſcents upon *France* in 1522. Again, in 1523, he ſent the Duke of *Suffolk* to invade *Picardy*, while the *Germans* and *Spaniards* attacked other Sides of the Kingdom.

Q. What was the Event of this War?

A. King *Francis*'s Army was routed, by the *Imperialiſts*, and the (then *Rebel*) Duke of *Bourbon*, at the Siege of *Pavia*, and himſelf taken Priſoner, in the Beginning of 1525. After a ſhort Confinement in *Italy*, he was carried into *Spain* (where the Emperor then was) committed to the Caſtle of *Madrid*, and there very ruggedly treated

Q. How did *Henry* now proceed?

A. He began to conſider the Balance of *Europe*: And, after interceding with the Emperor in vain by Ambaſſadors, he generouſly reſolved to uſe his utmoſt Endeavour to procure the *French* King his Liberty. Accordingly, he ſigned a defenſive Alliance with *Francis*: In the Apprehenſion of which, the Emperor agreed to a Peace with the Captive King, in 1526; tho' upon ſuch Terms as were little regarded, after each of them had endeavoured to *impoſe* upon the other! Soon after which, the Emperor having alſo made the *Pope*, and 13 Cardinals, *Priſoners* at *Rome*, the two Kings entered into a League offenſive againſt him, in 1527, in which, King *Henry* was probably the readier to join, on Account of his then

intended DIVORCE of his Queen *Catherine*, the Emperor's Aunt.

Q. What moved him to that Divorce?

A. His Queen had been the Wife of his Elder Brother, Prince *Arthur*, with whom ſhe had cohabited near five Months: After whoſe Death, himſelf had married her, by the *Pope*'s diſpenſing Authority, and ſhe had bore him three Children, of whom the Princeſs *Mary* was ſtill living. But now, after 18 Years Cohabitation, the King conceived a *Doubt* of the Lawfulneſs of his Marriage with his Brother's Widow, and the Validity of the Pope's Diſpenſation: Which *Scruple* (according to his own Account) was firſt raiſed, by the *French* Ambaſſador's having objected againſt the *Legitimacy* of the young Princeſs *Mary*; as the Council of *Spain* are alſo ſaid to have done two Years before.

Q. How did he proceed in order to the Divorce?

A. He ſtudied the Point himſelf very carefully, and conſulted Biſhop *Longland*, his Confeſſor: And being convinc'd, he cauſed his Suit to be moved in the Court of *Rome*, in 1527; alledging divers *Nullities* in the Bull of Pope *Julius* II's Diſpenſation, and the *Unlawfulneſs* of the Marriage. The now Pope *Clement* VII. made fair Promiſes, but artfully delayed the Performance, for Fear of the Emperor's Power and Reſentment. However, that Fear now partly abating, the Pope firſt gave ample Commiſſion to Cardinal *Wolſey* and the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* (or any other *Engliſh* Biſhop) 13 *April* 1528, and after that another, 8 *June*, 1528, to the Cardinals, *Wolſey* and *Campegio*, to try the Cauſe ſummarily and finally, in *England*; with a Promiſe not to revoke it, dated 23 *July* following: And, tho' he had

had actually given *Campegio* a Bull, formally *decreeing the Divorce*, yet, after he had a View to agree with the Emperor, he ſent expreſs Orders to *Campegio* to *burn* the Decretal, and *delay* the Divorce! And, at laſt, he was ſo diſingenuous, as to *revoke* the Cardinals Commiſſion, and to avocate the Cauſe to himſelf at *Rome*, 15 *July*, 1529.

Q. What were the Effects of all this Trifling and Prevarication?

A. The Ruin of Cardinal *Wolſey*, the Diſſolution of the King's *Marriage*, the utter Rejection of the *Pope*'s Power in *England*, and the *Reformation* of Religon.

Q. How was *Wolſey*'s Ruin effected?

A. He was indicted in a *Premunire*, in *Oct.* 1529, and adjudg'd to be out of the Protection of the Laws, for the Exerciſe of his Character of the *Pope*'s *Legate*, tho' he had the *King*'s *Authority* for it, under the Great Seal! Upon which, he loſt his Office of Lord Chancellor, his Houſe of *York* Place (now *Whitehall*) and all his immenſe Riches. He was alſo proſecuted in Parliament upon divers other Articles, for the Abuſe of his great Power as Prime Miniſter and Favourite. And, tho' the King granted him a full *Pardon*, and gave him ſome Intervals of Favour; yet, through the prevailing Influence of his Enemies at Court, he was ſoon after arreſted in his Dioceſe of *York*, for *High-Treaſon*, and died of a *Dyſentery*, at *Leiceſter*, in his Way to *London*, 29 *Nov.* 1530, aged 59. And thus fell that moſt 'capable, diligent, faithful and affectionate 'Miniſter, to whoſe Advices and Management '*Henry* had hitherto owed, in a great Meaſure, 'the *Glories* of his Reign, and the Figure he 'made in *Europe*.' Tho' 'tis ſuppos'd, he had

ſtill been capable of the King's Mercy, had he been either *leſs rich*, or *more humble*.

Q. How was the *Divorce* now managed?

A. The King had already (by *Wolſey*'s Advice) conſulted the moſt famous *Univerſities* in *Chriſtendom*, who concurred with the moſt learned Men in *Europe*, in their unbiaſs'd Judgment, That *his Marriage with his Brother's Widow was contrary to the Law of God, and therefore* NOT DISPENSABLE! Whereupon he reſolved, no longer to be deluded by the *Pope*, but to have it determined by the Authority of the *Engliſh* Church and State. After many learned Treatiſes written on the Subject, the Clergy in *Convocation*, declared, the Marriage was *contrary to the Law of God*, in the Beginning of 1531. At length, *Warham*, Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* dying, and *Cranmer* ſucceeding him, the new Archbiſhop, together with Biſhop *Gardiner* and others, proceeded to a judicial Diſſolution of *Catharine*'s Marriage as a *Nullity*, 23 *May*, 1533. After which, ſhe was never treated as more than Princeſs-Dowager of *Wales*, and died 8 *Jan.* 1535, aged 50.

Q. How did the King proceed in his Breach with the *Pope?*

A. The *Engliſh* Nation had at all Times complained heavily of the Uſurpations and Encroachments of the *Popes*, and ſeveral Acts had paſſed in Parliament to reſtrain them; tho' thoſe Remedies had proved of little Effect, by Reaſon of the temporal Intereſt of the ſeveral Courts, which prevented the Laws being put into Execution. But now, the King's Intereſt and that of his People being the ſame, he no longer delayed to free himſelf and his Subjects from the Burden of that Yoke; and *providentially* became an Inſtrument of a REFORMATION, without his ever intending

tending it. When he found it neceſſary to have his Divorce proſecuted in his own Kingdom, and apprehended the Court of *Rome* would proceed againſt him by Excommunication or Interdict, he publiſhed a Proclamation, in 1530, under ſevere Penalties; forbidding to receive any Bulls from *Rome*, contrary to the Prerogatives of the Crown: He procured himſelf to be acknowledg'd by the Clergy, under the extraordinary Title of *Sole Protector and ſupreme* HEAD of the Church of *England*, in 1531, which Title was afterwards confirm'd by Parliament, in 1534. He paſſed an Act in Parliament, diſcharging the Clergy from the Payment of *Annates*, or Firſt-fruits, to *Rome* in 1532. Another forbidding all *Appeals* to *Rome*, in 1533. And, in ſhort, the whole *Papal* Authority was utterly aboliſh'd in *England*, in 1534, when an *Oath* was impos'd (among other Things) expreſly aſſerting the King to be the *ſupreme Head* of the Church of *England*, and that the Biſhop of *Rome* has no more Juriſdiction than any *other* Biſhop; and promiſing Allegiance and Fidelity to the King and his *Heirs* by his now Queen *Anne*.

Q. Who was his Queen *Anne?*

A. Anne Boleyn, (Daughter of Sir *Thomas Boleyn* and the Lady *Elizabeth Howard*, Siſter to the Duke of *Norfolk*,) born in 1507. Her Father was created Viſcount *Rochford* in 1523, and afterwards Earl of *Wiltſhire* and *Ormond*, in Right of his Mother. *Anne*, at 7 Years old, had been carried into *France*, when *Mary the* King's Siſter was married to *Lewis* XII. Where ſhe continued afterwards, in the Service of King *Francis* the Firſt's Queen, and his Siſter the Dutcheſs of *Alenſon*, 'till the latter End of 1527, when ſhe returned home, with her Father from his Embaſſy

baſſy to that Court; and, before her Marriage, was created Marchioneſs of *Pembroke*, 1 *Sept.* 1532.

Q. But, was not the King's Paſſion for her the Ground of his Divorce from Queen *Catharine?*

A. No; It is impoſſible. For, that Divorce was reſolv'd upon *before* her Return from *France*; and probably before the King had ever ſeen or heard of her: And beſides, the firſt Match now propos'd for him, was with the Dutcheſs of *Alenſon* herſelf; whoſe Picture was brought over, by *Rochford*, with that View.

Q. When was *Anne* married to the King?

A. She was privately married, 14 *Nov.* 1532. Her Marriage was judicially confirm'd by *Cranmer*, 28 *May*, 1533. She was crown'd, 1 *June*, and brought forth her Daughter *Elizabeth*, 7 *Sept.* following.

Q. How did the *Pope* proceed after this?

A. Being exceedingly preſs'd by the Emperor, he at laſt precipitately diſpatched in *one* Conſiſtory, what was regularly the Buſineſs of *three*; publiſhing a Sentence, declaring the King's Marriage with *Catharine* good and lawful, and requiring him to take his Wife again; with Denunciation of *Cenſures* againſt him in Caſe of Diſobedience, 23 *March*, 1533. But the Breach was now ſo great, that his Authority was no longer regarded.

Q. Did none of the great Men now in *England* make any Stand, in Behalf of the *Pope*'s *Supremacy?*

A. Yes; *Fiſher*, Biſhop of *Rocheſter*, and Sir *Thomas More* (who had been Lord Chancellor after *Wolſey*) laid down their Lives in that Cauſe, in 1535. But, the Execution of the former (newly created a Cardinal) ſo inflamed the Pope and his Conclave, that a *Bull* was haſtily ſign'd,

to

to abſolve the Subjects from their *Allegiance*, incite them to Rebellion, and Foreign Princes to invade the Kingdom; tho' it was not publiſh'd 'till 17 *Dec.* 1538. As to the reſt of the *Biſhops* (and namely *Heath*, *Bonner*, *Tunſtall*, *Gardiner*, *Voyſey*, *Longland*, *Salcot* and *Warton*, how zealous ſoever they were *afterwards* in the ſame Cauſe) they did now, in general, with great Forwardneſs, *concur in all* the Meaſures taken, and particularly to ſuppreſs the Pope's, and advance the King's, *Supremacy*.

Q. Did the *Refrmation* of Religion now take place?

A. No. It is true, Dr. *Martin Luther* had appeared in *Germany*, againſt the received Doctrines, ſo early as 1517. The firſt Exception he took, was, to the great Abuſe of *Plenary Indulgences*; of which, the Pope's Agents made a public *Market*, under Pretence of a religious War againſt the *Turks*. This ſtarted a Controverſy; which, for ſome Time, was carried on only by the Pen. At length, as it grew warm upon Motion, and advanced from one Point to another, Pope *Leo* X. ordered his Legate *Cajetan* to take Cognizance of it; who treating *Luther* too ruggedly, inflamed the Breach. Upon which, the Pope publiſhing a Bull in Defence of his Indulgences, *Luther* appealed to a General Council; proceeding ſtill to more Exceptions, in 1519. The Pope cenſured certain Articles, prohibited the reading *Luther*'s Books, and ordered them to be burned; in return for which, *Luther* publickly burned the Pope's Bull and Decretals, and juſtified himſelf in a Manifeſto, in 1520: Which public Proceeding, having ſpread the Controverſy, gained him many Favourers; among whom was his Sovereign, the Elector of *Saxony*.

Q. Did

Q. Did King *Henry* eſpouſe the ſame Cauſe?

A. No. He wrote againſt *Luther*, in Defence of Indulgences, the *Papal* Authority, the 7 *Sacraments*, *&c.* and ſolemnly preſented his Book to the Pope in full Conſiſtory; for which, he returned him the Title of *Defender of the Faith*, in 1521. Notwithſtanding all which, the *Lutheran* Tenets prevailed much in *Germany*, and began to ſpread into *Swiſſerland*, *France*, and *England*. But, King *Henry*, even when he had renounc'd the Pope, ſhewed himſelf averſe to thoſe of the *New Religion*, (as the Followers of *Luther* were called;) not approving any of *their* Principles, except thoſe which oppoſed the *Pope*, and the *Friers*, of which he made his own Advantage.

Q. What was his Quarrel with the *Friers?*

A. They were generally diſaffected to the Proceedings on the Divorce and Supremacy; and, as ſuch, looked upon by the King with a jealous Eye: But, he had another Eye alſo upon the Lands and *Riches* of their Religious Houſes, which he aimed to confiſcate to his own Uſe. To this End, he ordered a general *Viſitation* of the Monaſteries, in 1535. The Viſitor General was *Cromwell*, their declared Enemy. Among ſuch a Multitude of Religious Houſes as then were in *England*, (moſt of which had not been ſtrictly viſited of a long Time) it is no wonder, if many Irregularities, and ſome groſs Enormities and Impoſtures were diſcover'd; eſpecially upon ſuch a ſevere *Inquiſition*. Such Abuſes as they found out, were induſtriouſly publiſhed to the World, the better to juſtify the Proceeding: After which, he paſſed an Act of Parliament, for ſuppreſſing all thoſe which did not exceed 200l. a Year. By this one Stroke, 376 Religious

ligious Foundations, amounting to the Revenue of 32,000l. a Year, fell into the King's Hands, with an immenſe Sum, in Plate, Church-Ornaments and other Goods; beſides what accrued to him by the Suppreſſion of the Monaſteries in *Ireland:* For the Churches and Cloyſters were *pulled down*, and the Materials ſold to the King's Uſe, in 1536. And, ſoon after, all the reſt of the Monaſteries and *Religious Houſes* fell into the ſame Hands: Among which, are computed in *England* and *Wales*, 645 Monaſteries, 90 Colleges, 2374 Chantries and Free Chapels, and 110 Hoſpitals; amounting together to 161,100*l.* 18*s.* 10*d. per Annum*, according to the laſt and loweſt Rate, at which they had been farmed, beſides perſonal Eſtate to an immenſe Value. A Sum ſo prodigious, (conſidering the different Value of Money then and now) that thoſe Lands, at 20 Years Purchaſe, have been reckoned at above 3,000,000, according to the Price in our Times. And the Damage to Learning, by the ſhocking Deſtruction of their curious *Libraries*, is neither to be repaired nor expreſs'd.

Q. Did not all this occaſion ſome Troubles in the Kingdom?

A. Yes. There was an Inſurrection in *Lincolnſhire* and *Yorkſhire*, in 1536, and another in *Cumberland*, in 1537, But, theſe were ſuppreſs'd with the leſs Trouble, becauſe the *great Men*, who had purchaſed theſe Lands of the King at very eaſy Rates, ſat down contented with *their* Share of the Spoils, and left the poor Sufferers to the King's Mercy!

Q. Was none of the Spoil of the Monaſteries applied to religious Uſes?

A. Yes. He founded 6 (inſtead of 16 intended) new *Biſhopricks*, and eſtabliſhed Canons in ſome Cathe-

Cathedrals, which the Monks had poſſeſſed; to all which, he did not aſſign above 8000l. *per Annum*. Moſt of the reſt was ſquandered away among the *hungry Courtiers*, ſo as to be of no Service either to the Church, or the State in general.

Q. What were the new *Biſhopricks* now erected?

A. Weſtminſter, in 1540, *Cheſter*, *Glouceſter*, and *Peterborough*, in 1541, and *Briſtol* and *Oxford*, in 1542; but the firſt of theſe, after the Tranſlation of its firſt and laſt Biſhop *Thirlby*, was reunited to *London*, 1 *April*, 1550, in the next Reign.

Q. Was not Queen *Anne* the main Inſtrument in all the Motions towards a Reformation?

A. Thoſe who were averſe to the preſent Meaſures, were of Courſe her Enemies, as well becauſe her Advancement was rais'd upon the Ruins of the Pope's Authority, as for that they feared, her Intereſt in the King might conduce to make the Breach ſtill wider. However, they ſoon took care to eaſe themſelves of that Fear, by removing her out of the Way.

Q. As how?

A. Knowing the King's natural Inconſtancy, and that he had already *another* Lady in his Affections, they took the Advantage of the Queen's chearful Temper, and unguarded Innocence, to poſſeſs the King with the Madneſs of *Jealouſy*, and to effect her Ruin. She is accus'd of a criminal Commerce with ſome of her Domeſticks, and even with her own *Brother* the Viſcount *Rochford*. In ſuch a Caſe, *Witneſſes* are ſeldom wanting to prove enough to condemn a Perſon already *prejudged*. Accordingly the Queen was condemn'd, and beheaded, 19 *May*, 1536, as were alſo the Lord *Rochford*, and four others.

Nor

Nor was the King's Reſentment againſt her appeaſed, without firſt procuring his *Marriage* with her alſo to be diſannull'd, under Pretence of a *Pre Contract* with *Percy*, Earl of *Northumberland*, (which he ſolemnly denied upon Oath;) and in Conſequence thereof, her Daughter *Elizabeth* to be declared *illegitimate*.

Q. Did he ever marry again, after this ſecond Repudiation?

A. Yes. The very next Day after Queen *Anne* was diſpatched, he married *Jane* the Daughter of Sir *John Seymour*; by which he diſcovered a Paſſion no way to the Honour of his former Conduct.

Q. How long did this Queen retain his Affection?

A. 'Till her Death; which happened (of a Diſtemper incident to Women in Child-bed) in a few days after ſhe had been ſafely deliver'd of Prince *Edward*, (12 *Oct.* 1537;) whoſe *Birth* put the Right of *Succeſſion*, for that Time, out of all Diſpute.

Q. Which of the *Biſhops*, or other neceſſary Witneſſes, were preſent at that nice Juncture, to prove the BIRTH OF A PRINCE, who was now to ſucceed, before both of his elder Siſters?

A. There was neither any Biſhop, or other Perſon, preſent on that Occaſion, but her Phyſicians and Women; not as Witneſſes, but as neceſſary Aſſiſtants to her ſafe Delivery: And it was a *ſufficient* Proof of *that Birth*, that a Letter was ſent to the Lords of the Privy-Council (ſign'd by the Queen) notifying, that it had pleaſed God to bleſs her Majeſty with a Prince.

Q. How had the Succeſſion been provided for in Parliament before this?

A. After ſettling it upon the Iſſue of the King, by his new Queen *Jane*, or by any other his future Queen, they acknowledged an extraordinary Power in the King, to declare the Order of his Succeſſors, by his Letters Patents, or Will. By which, it is obſerv'd, that the *Three Eſtates* in Parliament, in thoſe Days, had not Juſtice or Equity ſo much in view, as *pleaſing* the King their Maſter: And therefore this Act has never ſince been regarded as of any *Authority* in point of Law.

Q. In what Condition were thoſe now, who wiſhed for a *Reformation* of Doctrine?

A. Cranmer and *Cromwell* (who were at the Head of that Party) having found the King's impetuous Temper much ſoftened towards them by his two late Queens, *Anne* and *Jane*, were too ſenſible of their Loſs, not to promote another Match with a Princeſs of the ſame Diſpoſition. The King had been prevail'd with ſo far, as to authorize a *Primer* for Devotion, in *Engliſh*, *A. D.* 1535, an *Engliſh* Edition of the *Bible*, in 1536, and the *Creed*, the *Lord*'s *Prayer*, and the Ten *Commandments*, in the ſame Tongue, in 1538, with other Injunctions againſt the ſuperſtitious Uſe of *Images*, Relicks, and Beads, *&c.* He had alſo held Negociations with the *German* Reformers; tho' without any other than *political* Views. For, notwithſtanding his having renounced the Pope, he paſſed a bloody Statute of *Six Articles*, in 1539, whereby it was Death to deny Tranſubſtantiation, or to maintain Communion in both Kinds, or the Lawfulneſs of Prieſts Marriages, *&c.* So that now *Papiſts* ſuffered as *Traytors*, for not renouncing the Pope's Supremacy, and, at the ſame Time, *Proteſtants* ſuffered

ſuffered as *Hereticks* for renouncing the other Popiſh Doctrines!

Q. Did *Cranmer* and *Cromwell* procure ſuch another Match for the King, as they had projected?

A. They turned their Eyes towards *Germany*: And *Cromwell* undertook to negociate a Marriage with *Anne*, Siſter to the Duke of *Cleve*, and the Dutcheſs of *Saxony*; which being concluded, ſhe arrived, 27 *Dec.* 1539, and was married, 6 *January* following, tho' with apparent Marks of Diſlike on *his* Side.

Q. What Intereſt had this new Queen in the King's Affections?

A. None at all. For, as nothing but *political* Reaſons moved him to compleat the Marriage, after the firſt Sight of her; ſo, no ſooner did thoſe Motives ceaſe, but he determined to diſſolve it. Accordingly, under Pretence of a *Pre-Contract*, (tho' lamely prov'd) he procured a *Divorce* to be pronounc'd by the Convocation, 9 *July*, 1540, and confirm'd by Parliament, without ſo much as one diſſentient Vote in either.

Q. What Effect had this upon the Projectors of the Match?

A. It proved the Ruin of *Cromwell*: Who, tho' but newly created Earl of *Eſſex*, was ſent to the Tower, 11 *June*, attainted of Hereſy and Treaſon by Act of Parliament, and loſt his Head, without a Trial, or Hearing, 28 *July*, 1540; being the firſt, who ſuffered under ſuch an unjuſt and unreaſonable Proceſs of Law, of which he himſelf had been the Promoter. And now, the Duke of *Norfolk*, and Biſhop *Gardiner* (who were at the Head of the other Party) carried all before them, againſt a Reformation; eſpecially thro' the prevailing Intereſt of *Catharine Howard*.

Q. Who

A. After ſettling it upon the Iſſue of the King, by his new Queen *Jane*, or by any other his future Queen, they acknowledged an extraordinary Power in the King, to declare the Order of his Succeſſors, by his Letters Patents, or Will. By which, it is obſerv'd, that the *Three Eſtates* in Parliament, in thoſe Days, had not Juſtice or Equity ſo much in view, as *pleaſing* the King their Maſter: And therefore this Act has never ſince been regarded as of any *Authority* in point of Law.

Q. In what Condition were thoſe now, who wiſhed for a *Reformation* of Doctrine?

A. Cranmer and *Cromwell* (who were at the Head of that Party) having found the King's impetuous Temper much ſoftened towards them by his two late Queens, *Anne* and *Jane*, were too ſenſible of their Loſs, not to promote another Match with a Princeſs of the ſame Diſpoſition. The King had been prevail'd with ſo far, as to authorize a *Primer* for Devotion, in *Engliſh*, *A. D.* 1535, an *Engliſh* Edition of the *Bible*, in 1536, and the *Creed*, the *Lord*'s *Prayer*, and the Ten *Commandments*, in the ſame Tongue, in 1538, with other Injunctions againſt the ſuperſtitious Uſe of *Images*, Relicks, and Beads, *&c.* He had alſo held Negociations with the *German* Reformers; tho' without any other than *political* Views. For, notwithſtanding his having renounced the Pope, he paſſed a bloody Statute of *Six Articles*, in 1539, whereby it was Death to deny Tranſubſtantiation, or to maintain Communion in both Kinds, or the Lawfulneſs of Prieſts Marriages, *&c.* So that now *Papiſts* ſuffered as *Traytors*, for not renouncing the Pope's Supremacy, and, at the ſame Time, *Proteſtants* ſuffered

ſuffered as *Hereticks* for renouncing the other Popiſh Doctrines!

Q. Did *Cranmer* and *Cromwell* procure ſuch another Match for the King, as they had projected?

A. They turned their Eyes towards *Germany*: And *Cromwell* undertook to negociate a Marriage with *Anne*, Siſter to the Duke of *Cleve*, and the Dutcheſs of *Saxony*; which being concluded, ſhe arrived, 27 *Dec.* 1539, and was married, 6 *January* following, tho' with apparent Marks of Diſlike on *his* Side.

Q. What Intereſt had this new Queen in the King's Affections?

A. None at all. For, as nothing but *political* Reaſons moved him to compleat the Marriage, after the firſt Sight of her; ſo, no ſooner did thoſe Motives ceaſe, but he determined to diſſolve it. Accordingly, under Pretence of a *Pre-Contract*, (tho' lamely prov'd) he procured a *Divorce* to be pronounc'd by the Convocation, 9 *July*, 1540, and confirm'd by Parliament, without ſo much as one diſſentient Vote in either.

Q. What Effect had this upon the Projectors of the Match?

A. It proved the Ruin of *Cromwell*: Who, tho' but newly created Earl of *Eſſex*, was ſent to the Tower, 11 *June*, attainted of Hereſy and Treaſon by Act of Parliament, and loſt his Head, without a Trial, or Hearing, 28 *July*, 1540; being the firſt, who ſuffered under ſuch an unjuſt and unreaſonable Proceſs of Law, of which he himſelf had been the Promoter. And now, the Duke of *Norfolk*, and Biſhop *Gardiner* (who were at the Head of the other Party) carried all before them, againſt a Reformation; eſpecially thro' the prevailing Intereſt of *Catharine Howard*.

Q. Who

Q. Who was she?

A. She was Niece to the Duke of *Norfolk*, and Couſin-German to *Anne Boleyn*; with whom the King was already in Love, before he repudiated *Anne* of *Cleve*. This *Catharine* was declared Queen, 8 *Aug.* 1540, and for ſome Time held his Affection: But, being convicted, on an Accuſation of *Lewdneſs*, ſhe was attainted and beheaded, 12 *Feb.* 1542, together with ſeveral of her Relations, as Accomplices.

Q. Was it poſſible for him, after all this, to get another Wife?

A. Yes. The State and Grandeur of a Queen has ſo many Allurements, that *Catharine*, Daughter of Sir *Thomas Parr*, ventured to fill the Throne, 12 *July*, 1543. But, ſhe was a *Widow*, being the Relict of the late Lord *Latimer*. And, tho' the Enemies of the Reformation uſed their Arts to ruin her, as a Favourer of Hereſy; yet ſuch was her prudent Conduct, that ſhe ſecured herſelf from their Malice, and had the Happineſs to ſtand fair in the King's Favour when he died; whereas ſome of her greateſt Enemies fell into Diſgrace and Deſtruction.

Q. As how?

A. The Duke of *Norfolk* was known to be a principal Abetter of the Pope, tho' he made his Court to the King by outwardly complying with his Will in every Thing: And therefore, the King foreſeeing his Death, and conſidering the Duke and his Son the Earl of *Surry*, as the moſt likely to break all his Meaſures, in the Minority of the Prince his Succeſſor, reſolved to deſtroy them both; which he partly effected, by procuring them to be condemn'd, on a general Charge of practiſing againſt the State. In Purſuance of which, the Earl loſt his Head, 19 *Jan.* 1547,

and

and the Duke ſaved *his*, only by the King's dying the Night before his intended Execution. Biſhop *Gardiner* was alſo turn'd out of the Council, and left out of the Liſt of his Executors, and Counſellors of State to the young Prince, to which he had before been appointed by the King's Will.

Q. How did Archbiſhop *Cranmer* maintain *his* Ground under all thoſe Changes?

A. Tho' he was plainly for promoting a *Reformation* to a greater length than this King approved of, yet, he acted with ſuch Prudence, Diſintereſtedneſs, and Integrity, as gain'd and ſecured him the King's particular Eſteem and Affection, which the Artifices of the other Party were never able to remove; inſomuch, that he generouſly protected him againſt all their Attempts. And he was perhaps *the only* Perſon who retained this King's Favour and Friendſhip, without any Interruption, from the Time of his being firſt known to him, to that of his Death, which was about 17 Years.

Q. Had King *Henry* no Wars abroad in the latter Part of his Reign?

A. Yes; but not of any great Importance. After a fair Correſpondence with *France* for ſeveral Years, King *Henry* proclaimed War, landed at *Calais*, and took *Bouloign* in 1544, which was agreed to be reſtor'd, by Treaty, in 1546, wherein a Peace was alſo made with *Scotland*.

Q. What had been the Quarrel with that Nation?

A. Since the Death of their King *James* IV. at *Flodden*, the Government had been much diſturb'd with Factions about the Adminiſtration, during the Infancy of his Son King *James* V. King *Henry* took that Opportunity to interpoſe in their Affairs, under Colour of ſupporting the Intereſt

Intereſt of the young King, his Nephew; but found the *Scots* upon their Guard againſt his Deſigns. At length an Interview at *York* being agreed upon between the two Kings, and *James* failing to meet, *Henry* revived the Pretenſion of his Anceſtors to the Sovereignty of *Scotland*, and ſent an Army againſt them, in 1542, which was ſoon forc'd to retreat, for want of Proviſions: But the *Scots* entering *Cumberland*, under the Command of *Oliver Sinclair* (their King being ſick) were defeated, at *Solway*: Which Diſaſter lay ſo heavy upon their King's Spirits, that he died of Grief, 13 *Dec.* 1542, leaving the young Princeſs *Mary* his Heir, but ſeven Days old; whereby that Country was again unhappily expos'd to freſh Confuſions.

Q. What Advantage did King *Henry* make of this Juncture?

A. He projected an Union of the two Crowns, by a Marriage between his Son Prince *Edward*, and the Infant-Queen *Mary*. But, tho' the Scheme did not take *that* Way, an Union did afterwards ſucceed, in the Perſon of her Son, King *James*, as the undoubted *Heir* to both Kingdoms.

Q. What elſe was moſt memorable during this Reign?

A. The firſt Uſe of *Muſkets*, in the Wars againſt *France*, *A. D.* 1521. The Incorporation of *Wales* with *England*, in 1534. The Inſtitution of the Order of *Jeſuits*, by Pope *Paul* III. in 1540, and the Sect of *Preſbyterians*, by *John Calvin*, about the ſame Time. The Erection of *Ireland* into a Kingdom, in 1542; and the opening of (what is falſly and abſurdly call'd) the *General Council* of *Trent*, in 1545.

Q. When did this King die?

A. 28 *Jan.*

A. 28 *Jan.* 1546, in the 56th Year of his Age, and the 38th of his Reign.

Q. What was his true Character?

A. To enter into Particulars, would require more Words than we have Room for here: But, after what has been ſaid of him, there cannot be Occaſion for many. In ſhort, as he was in his Youth, a very promiſing Prince, both as to Perſon, Capacity, and Improvements; ſo his Reign was almoſt a continued Series of *Cruelty*, *Avarice*, and even *Sacrilege*. *Arbitrary* he was to a Degree beyond the moſt abſolute of all his Predeceſſors; at leaſt ſince the Conceſſion of *Magna Charta*: And, whatever Excuſe may be made for him, that the moſt violent of his Proceedings were commonly approved by his Three Eſtates of *Parliament*; yet, nothing can excuſe *Them*, who were ſuch abject *Slaves* to his Will, as to paſs upon their Fellow-Subjects the greateſt Acts of Tyranny, under the Sanction of *Law*; and thereby reduce the People of *England* to a greater Degree of SLAVERY, by the Concurrence of a ſervile and corrupt *Parliament*, than any King could do without one. As to his *Religion*, it is certain, he lived and died a Member of the Church of *Rome*; as were likewiſe all (or moſt of) thoſe who concurred in all his Meaſures relating to the *Supremacy*. So that, how good or bad ſoever the Proceedings of *that* Reign were, the reformed Church of *England* is not entitled to the Honour or Diſhonour of it. After all, he was a great Lover, and Patron of *Learning*, as appears by his noble Foundations in the two Univerſities, beſides a great Number of Grammar-Schools well endow'd; and a Diſcourager of Vice, as is evident from his utter Suppreſſion of the *Stews*: To which may be added, his diſtinguiſhed Gene-

rosity, in the Protection of his last Queen and Archbishop *Cranmer*, against the Malice of their Enemies. So that, notwithstanding his many exceptionable Sallies, and the Rigour of his Government, he was not without a Mixture of good Qualities and princely Virtues; whereby he was enabled to govern a People, 'who never obey so 'well as when a strict Hand is kept over them, 'and are too apt to despise *mild*, and trample upon *weak*, Princes!'

xli. 21. Edward VI.

Q. Who succeeded King *Henry* VIII?

A. His only Son and Heir, King *Edward* VI. at little more than 9 Years of Age; being born 12 *Oct.* 1537, King, 28 *Jan.* 1546, and crown'd, 20 *Feb.* following.

Q. How was the Government administred, during his Minority?

A. The late King had nominated 16 Executors of his last Will, who were also to be *Regents* 'till his Son should arrive at 18 Years of Age. To those also he added twelve others, as Counsellors. The Regents, or the major Number of them, were vested with an unlimited Sovereign Authority: By Virtue of which, they agreed to distinguish the Earl of *Hertford* (who was one of their Number, and the young King's Uncle) by the Title of *Protector*, for the more easy dispatch of Business, but without any Power to act, without the Consent of the rest; and, among others of them, who were design'd by the late King to have new Dignities, he was rais'd to be Duke of *Somerset*. The Protector, thus chosen, procured the *King*'s *Patent*, for his Office; wherein he took Care to engross to *himself* the whole Authority

thority in Effect, and to reduce the reſt of the Regents to the Condition of the other Counſellors, to be conſulted as *he* thought fit: And, having thus eſtabliſhed himſelf, he now proceeded to ſet forward a *Reformation* in the Church.

Q. How far did he proceed in it?

A. He iſſued Commiſſions for a Royal *Viſitation*, to prepare the Way for it. After which, he ſummoned a Parliament and Convocation: With the Concurrence of which, the *ſix Articles*, and other Statutes and Injunctions, formerly made, adverſe to a Reformation, were repeal'd and annull'd; *private Maſſes* were aboliſh'd; the *Cup* reſtor'd to the Laity in the Euchariſt; *Images* remov'd out of the Churches; the *Marriage* of the Clergy admitted; a Form drawn up for the Adminiſtration of the Holy *Communion* in both Kinds; the *Liturgy* reform'd; and the *Latin* Service aboliſh'd.

Q. Did the Protector meet with no Oppoſition in all theſe Proceedings?

A. Yes; not a little. The Lord *Wriotheſly*, Lord Chancellor, (now created Earl of *Southampton*) was his Oppoſite in Matters of Religion; for which he loſt the Great Seal, and, for ſome time alſo, his Place in the Council. *Bonner* alſo and *Gardiner* (the Biſhops of *London* and *Wincheſter*) gave great Advantage againſt themſelves by their Oppoſition; whereby they were brought into much Trouble. And, not to mention others of inferior Character, there were open *Rebellions* of the Commons in ſeveral Parts of the Kingdom, complaining at firſt of divers other *Grievances*, but at length declaring openly againſt the Alterations in *Religion*; which, at laſt, were ſuppreſs'd by the Execution of ſome few of the Ring-leaders, and a Promiſe of Pardon to the reſt.

Q. Was his Government disturbed by any other Wars?

A. Yes. A *Marriage* had been agreed upon, in the late Reign, between the now King *Edward*, and Queen *Mary*, the Infant-Queen of *Scotland*: But, through the Influence of *their* Queen-Mother, and the *French* Faction, the *Scots* refused to make good their Articles. Upon this, the *Protector* entered *Scotland* with an Army, having a Fleet also attending him on the Coast. But, being willing to make up the Breach without Bloodshed, he wrote to the Regent, a friendly Offer of Accommodation: Which being refus'd on their Part, a Battle ensued at *Pinkey*, near *Musselborough*, 10 *Sept.* 1547, wherein the *Scots* are said to have lost 14,000 Men, killed on the Spot, and 1500 Prisoners. After this, having plundered the City of *Edinburgh*, and left Garrisons in that Country, he returned home with great Honour, and small Loss. But, the next Year, the *Scots* received a Supply of 6000 Men from *France*, with which they faced the *English*; and thereupon resolved to convey their young Queen to *France*, to be married to the *Dauphin*.

Q. How did *France* behave on this Occasion?

A. King *Henry* II. succeeding to that Throne, in 1548, was influenced by the House of *Guise*, to oppose the *English* Attempts in *Scotland*. This had prevailed with him to assist the *Scots*. And afterwards, when the Protector was engaged with the Rebels at home, *Henry* took that Opportunity (contrary to former Treaties) to make an Attempt for the Recovery of *Bouloigne*; but after a fruitless Attack, thought fit to leave it, under a Blockade. The Protector, being sensible how inconvenient to his Schemes at home, a War abroad was like to be, proposed for Peace-sake to restore

reſtore that Town: But the *Faction* in the Council oppoſed him in it; tho' they *themſelves* could afterwards give it up, to ſerve *their own* Turn! And this was the State of Affairs abroad, at the Time of the Protector *Somerſet*'s Fall.

Q. How was *that* occaſion'd?

A. Chiefly through the Artifices of *Dudley*, Lord *Liſle*, (newly created Earl of *Warwick*) who watched every Advantage to ſupplant him. Nor was Occaſion wanting to promote his Ruin. For, they, who were averſe to a Reformation, hated him mortally for encouraging it. Moſt of the other Regents were diſaffected to him, for his having eclipſed their Authority; and more particularly *Southampton*, who had been diſgraced, and removed. But, among the reſt, nothing gave the Protector ſo much Trouble, as the Envy and Emulation of his own Brother, *Thomas* Lord *Seymour*, the Admiral. This aſpiring Nobleman could not bear the Preference which his elder Brother had in the Government: His Ambition had moved him to make his Addreſſes to the Lady *Elizabeth*, the King's Siſter; wherein, tho' he was not ſucceſsful, he prevailed with *Catharine*, the Queen-Dowager, ſoon after the King's Death, to marry him privately, without ſo much as the Knowledge of the Protector: Then he induſtriouſly inſinuated himſelf to gain the Aſcendant in the young King's Affections, and caballed with others, to the Ruin of his Brother; which was the Reaſon of the Protector's haſty Return from his Expedition into *Scotland*. All the gentler Methods towards reducing the Admiral to his Duty, proved ineffectual. And after ſome Time, being a Widower, by the Queen-Dowagers Death in Child-Bed, he did not only renew his Courtſhip to the Lady *Elizabeth*, but railed openly

againſt the Protector, as deſigning to enſlave the Kingdom, by Means of ſome Mercenary *Germans*, whom he had entertained in his Service; which raiſed great Diſcontents among the *Engliſh*, who were then juſtly jealous of *Foreign Auxiliaries*. At laſt, when nothing elſe would do, the Admiral was committed to the Tower by the Council, attainted by Parliament for practiſing againſt the State, and beheaded 20 *March*, 1548. Tho' this Difference between the two Brothers had been *underhand inflam'd* by their common Enemies; (hoping that by thus dividing them, and weakening the Family, the Protector himſelf would not be long able to withſtand them;) yet theſe were the moſt clamorous againſt him, for unnatural Cruelty to his own Blood! And now, the Earls of *Southampton* (who had reſumed a Place in the Council) and *Warwick*, with their Aſſociates, ſpread Reports among the People, to render him odious, and concerted other Means to ruin him. The Protector, fearing a Deſign to take the King's Perſon out of his Hands, put his own Servants about his Majeſty, whom he removed to *Windſor*. Upon this, the diſaffected Counſellors appearing openly againſt him, gained the City and Tower to their Party; which was ſoon follow'd by a Defection of moſt of the other Counſellors from the Protector's Intereſt, whom they now declared *unworthy* of the Protectorſhip, and ſent to the Tower.

Q. Whom did they chuſe *Protector* in his Room.

A. They did not diſtinguiſh any one, by a Title ſuperior to the reſt: But *Warwick*, who had been the chief Promoter of *Somerſet*'s Ruin, was ſuffer'd to take upon himſelf the principal Adminiſtration of the Government; which he exer-

exerciſed in a more imperious Manner, tho' not by ſo good a Title.

Q. How did they proceed againſt the Duke of *Somerſet?*

A. They charged him with ſeveral Articles, relating chiefly to his engroſing and abuſing the Authority of his Office: And, at the next Meeting of the Parliament, he was *attainted*, and upon his Submiſſion, puniſh'd with a Fine and the Forfeiture of all his Places; after which, he was reſtored to his Liberty, and in a little Time, alſo to a Seat at the Council-Table, in *April*, 1550.

Q. Did he eſcape thus?

A. Only 'till his Enemies could more effectually accompliſh his Deſtruction. *Warwick* (now rais'd to be Duke of *Northumberland*) being afraid of *Somerſet*'s Recovery of his former Poſt, procured him to be charg'd with trayterous Deſigns againſt the King, as well as other Crimes againſt *himſelf*. Upon this, he was again committed to the Tower: And being brought to a Trial before his Peers (among whom *Northumberland* himſelf ſate as one) he was acquitted of *Treaſon*, but condemn'd of *Felony*, and beheaded, 22 *January*, 1551.

Q. Did not this Change in the Adminiſtration break the Meaſures at Court, relating to the *Reformation?*

A. No. Tho' *Northumberland* was averſe to it in his Heart, yet, finding *that* was the Way at that Time to pleaſe the King, and advance his Fortune, he openly declared in its Favour. Accordingly, *Bonner* and *Gardiner* (Biſhops of *London* and *Wincheſter*) were depriv'd of their Sees; as were alſo *Heath* and *Day*, (the Biſhops of *Worceſter*, and *Chicheſter*) all for their oppoſing

the Reformation: The *Liturgy* was review'd and authoriz'd, with the new *Ordinal* for conſecrating and ordaining Biſhops, Prieſts, and Deacons: The *Marriage* of the Clergy declar'd to be lawful: A Confeſſion of *Faith* drawn up in 42 Articles of Religion; and every Thing elſe diſpatch'd according to the former Plan.

Q. Was not an UNIFORMITY in Divine Worſhip now well eſtabliſh'd.

A. Yes, as far as the public *Authority* both of the Church and State could provide for it. But, nevertheleſs, it met with great Interruption, through the miſtaken Charity, or falſe *Policy*, of ſome of thoſe who ſeem'd to have it moſt at heart. For, under Pretence of *Perſecution* abroad, a Shoal of *Foreign Proteſtants* (ſo call'd!) were encourag'd to ſettle here, by the Privileges of *Naturalization*, and *Liberty of Conſcience*. But, no ſooner were they incorporated under their own Superintendents, but, inſtead of conforming to the Church Eſtabliſh'd, their Buſineſs was to ſtart Controverſies, and ſcruple Obedience to *Authority*, even in *Ceremonies*, *Habits*, and other Matters confeſſedly lawful and indifferent! Hence aroſe a groundleſs *Nonconformity* in the very Infancy of our otherwiſe happy *Reformation*. And, among the other Effects thereof, it was diſcover'd, that ſome ſubtle *Popiſh* Emiſſaries (by the Advice of their *Politicians* in the Council at *Trent*) were ſent over, to Biſhop *Gardiner*, under his and his Friends Protection, to propagate Diſſentions and *Non-conformity*, as being the moſt likely Means to ſupport the Intereſt of the *Papacy!*

Q. Was there no Complaint of Irregularity in any of the Proceedings towards the Reformation?

A. Yes;

A. Yes; and that too, not without Grounds. Eſpecially, as to the SACRILEGIOUS Alienation of Church-Lands, Plate, and Ornaments, among the great Courtiers; a Practice too common and ſcandalous in *this* Reign, as well as in thoſe of his *Father*, and one of his *Siſters*. But, whatever Objections may be made, to the particular Conduct of any of the *Inſtruments*, it cannot fairly reflect upon the *Reformation* itſelf; ſince That was brought about in a *lawful Manner*, and by a *competent Authority*, both Eccleſiaſtical and Civil. Neither are the moſt exceptionable Proceedings in this Reign, to be imputed to the *Reformers*, properly ſo called; ſo much as to thoſe *prevaricating Compliers*, who only *pretended* a Zeal for Reformation, the better to enable them to purſue their *political* Views of private Intereſt! For, it was chiefly owing to the prevailing Influence of *Northumberland*, that ſeveral of the *Biſhops were depriv'd*, and others oblig'd to hold their Sees of the *Crown*, on Condition of good Behaviour! that the rich Biſhoprick of *Durham* was diſſolv'd, to make its Temporalities a *County-Palatine* for that aſpiring Duke himſelf! that moſt of the Church-Plate, Jewels, Copes, Altar-Cloths, and other Ornaments, were ſacrilegiouſly ſequeſter'd, under Colour of Superfluities! and an USURPATION of the *Crown* itſelf projected, under the ſpecious Pretence of ſecuring the *Proteſtant* Religion, by the *Excluſion* of the *Popiſh Succeſſor!* And yet, what Sort of a REFORMER this grand Projector himſelf was, appeared afterwards, by his *Dying Speech*, wherein he declared, that he had been all the while a *Papiſt* in his Heart!

Q. What was the *Uſurpation* he projected?

A. The young King, being ſickly, and knowing his elder Siſter *Mary*, to be obnoxious to the

Odium of *Popery*, was under great Concern for the future State of Religion under her Succeſſion. This Anxiety in the King was induſtriouſly improv'd by the Inſinuations of *Northumberland*; inſomuch, as to prevail with him to make a *Settlement* of the Crown upon the Lady *Jane Grey*, now married to Lord *Guilford Dudley*, one of *his* Sons.

Q. What plauſible Pretence could he uſe to bring it about?

A. The Lady *Jane* was a *remote* Branch of the Royal Family; being the Eldeſt Daughter of the Marqueſs of *Dorſet* (newly created Duke of *Suffolk*) by *Frances* the Daughter and Heireſs of *Charles Brandon*, late Duke of *Suffolk*, by *Mary* the younger Siſter of King *Henry* VIII. As to the *nearer* Branches of the ſame Line, the King's two Siſters, *Mary* and *Elizabeth*, had ſeverally lain under the *Imputation* of Illegitimacy: And, the Poſterity of King *Henry*'s Elder Siſter *Margaret* (of whom the Queen of *Scots* was the right Heir) had been ſtrangely overlook'd by the ſame King in his laſt Will. Therefore, ſuppoſing all theſe to have been *lawfully* diſabled to ſucceed, the Lady *Jane* would have been the next lawful Heir to the Crown, except her own Mother, ſtill living; who probably might wave her Claim, in her Daughter's Favour. Add to this, that *Jane* was a young Lady of admirable Accompliſhments both in Body and Mind, a zealous Promoter of the Reformation, and highly eſteem'd by the young King.

Q. How did *Northumberland* proceed in it?

A. In the firſt Place, he prevailed with the young King, to interpoſe (in a very *unbecoming* Manner) by Letters to the Sheriffs, recommending *particular* Perſons by Name, (and all Courtiers)

tiers) for a new *Parliament*, to be ſubſervient to his Meaſures: And then, having gain'd the King's Conſent, ſome of the Judges were requir'd to draw the *Settlement*. They declared, ſuch an Act would be *Treaſon* in them, and all the Counſellors who ſhould *conſent* to it. But, after many *Menaces*, they were prevail'd with, by the Promiſe of a *Pardon* under the Great Seal, to draw the Inſtrument; which was ſubſcrib'd by all the Judges (*Hales* only excepted, tho' himſelf a firm *Proteſtant*) as well as by all the Privy-Counſellors, 21 *June*.

Q. How long did the King ſurvive this?

A. A very few Days: For, he died, 6 *July*, 1553, in the 16th Year of his Age; and not without the Suſpicion of *Poiſon*.

Q. What was the true Character of this young King?

A. Cardan, a famous *Italian* Philoſopher, ſpeaks of him as a *Miracle*. It is agreed, that the Progreſs he had made in the learned Languages, and liberal Arts, was wonderful. But, it muſt be own'd, ſome of the *Politicians* about him, had form'd his Mind to *their Intereſt*, and tinctured him ſo deep with *Eraſtian* Notions, that he looked upon Himſelf as the Fountain of all Spiritual as well as Temporal Power; and ſeemed never to have conſider'd St. *Paul*'s Expoſtulation with thoſe who *abhor Idols*, and yet *commit Sacrilege*; or the Sin and Danger of *doing Evil that Good may come* of it!

xlii. 22 MARY.

Q. Who ſucceeded King *Edward* VI?

A. The Lady *Mary*, his Elder Siſter, who

was the Daughter of King *Henry* VIII. by *Catharine* of *Spain*, his firſt Wife.

Q. Was there not ſome Objection to her *Right* of Succeſſion?

A. Yes. The declar'd Nullity of her Parents Marriage had conſequently rendered her Illegitimate: But, the ſame Authority, which had *diſabled* her, did afterwards render her *capable* of the Succeſſion. Neither did her Siſter, or the Queen of *Scots*, ever *diſpute* her Right to it. It is true, a *remoter* Claim was ſet up againſt her, in Favour of Lady *Jane*, by the Contrivance of that Lady's Father-in-Law, the Duke of *Northumberland*: And accordingly, *Jane* was put into *Poſſeſſion* of the Throne, ſo ſoon as King *Edward*'s Death was made publick.

Q. Where was Queen *Mary* at that Time?

A. She was in the Country. So ſoon as *Northumberland* had procur'd his projected Settlement to be ſubſcrib'd, he diſpatched Letters, in the King's Name, to the two Princeſſes, to bring them both to Court, (as pretended) to entertain him in his Sickneſs. On the Road, within half a Day's Journey of *London*, ſhe met private Intelligence, from the Earl of *Arundel*, of the King's Death, and *Northumberland*'s Plot to entrap her. Upon this, ſhe withdrew into *Suffolk*; from whence ſhe wrote to the Council, 9 *July*, 1553, aſſerting her *Right*, and commanding them to proclaim it. On the contrary, the Council (under *Northumberland*'s Influence) returned her an inſolent and abſurd Anſwer; adviſing her to drop her Claim, and behave herſelf like a good Subject to her Sovereign Queen *Jane!* In the mean Time, the two Dukes (*Jane*'s Father and Father-in-Law) went to acquaint their Daughter with the Honour intended her. The

good

good Lady, aſtoniſh'd at the Propoſal, declared her *Averſion to* USURP *another's Right:* But, being overpreſs'd with their *plauſible* Arguments, and the endearing Importunity of her Huſband, ſhe ſurrendered to their Diſpoſal, tho' with great *Reluctancy*, and thereupon was, with the cuſtomary Solemnity, proclaim'd in *London*, 10 *July*.

Q. What Regard was had to this *Mock-Sovereignty?*

A. Being painted over with the faireſt Colours ſuch a Piece of *Pageantry* could bear, they prepared Inſtructions for Ambaſſadors, to notify abroad the Acceſſion of their new Queen *Jane*, and took all other Meaſures to ſupport her in the *Poſſeſſion* of the Throne. And particularly, many of the *London* Clergy (and even their *Biſhop* himſelf at their Head) were unhappily engag'd to ſow the TARES of *Treaſon from the Pulpit*; declaiming loudly againſt a *Popiſh Pretender*, and preſſing their Audience to adhere to the *De-Facto* Queen: As if to take the Protection of their Religion and Liberties into *their own* Hands, in Defiance of *God's Providence*, were not the more likely Way to bring upon them the JUDGMENTS they dreaded, than to ſecure them againſt them?

Q. Was the prior Right of Queen *Mary* then quite neglected?

A. No. Thoſe who privately adhered to her in *London*, indeed, durſt not yet oppoſe the Torrent, for fear of *Northumberland's* Power: But others, farther out of *his* Reach, being convinc'd, that the Principles of TRUE RELIGION do not warrant us to depart from the Rules of Juſtice and Equity, declared for *her*, whoſe *Right* it was, and furniſhed her with Troops to maintain the Juſtice of her Title.

Q. What

Q. What Meaſures did *Northumberland* now take to ſupport the *Uſurpation?*

A. He cauſed Levies to be made with all Haſte in ſeveral Places, and deſigned the chief Command to the Duke of *Suffolk*. But, thoſe of the Council, who ſecretly favoured Queen *Mary*, inſinuating to *Jane*, the great Dangers her Father would be expoſed to, and to *Northumberland* the Neceſſity of *his* undertaking the Command *himſelf*, prevailed to remove *him* to a Diſtance, by whoſe Preſence alone, they had been overaw'd from their Duty. Accordingly, he left *London*, 14 *July*, advancing to *Cambridge*, and *Bury*. There he heard of the Progreſs of the *Norfolk* and *Suffolk* Men, in Favour of Queen *Mary*, as well as of the Revolt of Sir *Edward Haſtings* in *Buckinghamſhire*, and 6 Men of War cruizing on the Coaſt of *Suffolk:* Upon which, he returned to *Cambridge*, to wait for Supplies from Court.

Q. And what were the Council doing the while?

A. Such of them as were *conſcious* of their Treaſon, found a fair Pretence to meet together by themſelves, 19 *July*. There the Earl of *Arundel* repreſenting to them the *true* State of their Caſe, they immediately ſent for the Lord-Mayor and Aldermen, and proclaimed Queen *Mary*. Then, after a ſolemn *Te Deum*, they ſent Orders to the Duke of *Suffolk*, to deliver up to them the *Tower*, with which *Northumberland* had intruſted him, and that his Daughter *Jane* ſhould lay aſide the *Royal Stile*; to which they both readily ſubmitted.

Q. How did *Northumberland* behave upon this?

A. Hearing what had paſs'd at *London*, he did not wait for the Council's Orders: But, making a Virtue

a Virtne of Neceſſity, appeared in the Market-Place, and proclaimed Queen *Mary*, with an *Air* of great Loyalty, 20 *July*. But, being arreſted the next Day, by the Earl of *Arundel*, he ſunk to the loweſt Degree of Abjectneſs; and was ſent to the Tower, with ſeveral of his Followers, 25 *July*. After which, the *Authority* of Queen *Mary* was every where acknowledg'd.

Q. And how did ſhe exerciſe it?

A. For ſome Time with extraordinary *Clemency*. The Duke of *Suffolk* was preſently ſet at *Liberty*; two of *Northumberland*'s own Sons, and Brother, were *pardon'd*: And, in a Word, none of all the Perſons concern'd in that Revolution were yet put to Death for it, but *Northumberland* himſelf, with Sir *John Gates* and Sir *Thomas Palmer*, who had been his wicked Inſtruments in the Deſtruction of the Duke of *Somerſet*.

Q. What was moſt remarkable at the Trial and Execution of the Duke of *Northumberland*?

A. Being tried by his Peers, 18 *Aug.* he made no Defence as to the Fact; but ſtarted two Queſtions in Point of Law: 1. *Whether a Man acting by Order of Council, and the Authority of the Great Seal, could be guilty of* TREASON *in ſo doing?* And, 2. *Whether Perſons who had acted with him in the ſame Affair, and were equally guilty, could ſit upon his Trial as his* JUDGES? In anſwer to which, the Court adjudged, 1. *That the Great Seal of an* USURPER *could give* NO AUTHORITY *nor Indemnity to thoſe who acted by it*; (which is the more remarkable, as being the firſt, and moſt ſolemn, Judgment given upon the famous Statute of 11 *Henry* VII.) And, 2. *That none of the Peers who ſate in Judgment upon him, were attainted, or accuſed of the Crime, and therefore could not be deprived of their Right.* Upon which,

Sen-

Sentence of Death paſſed upon him; and was executed, 22 *Aug.* 1553. At which Time he made a frank Declaration to the People, againſt the *New Teaching* (as he called the reformed Doctrine;) exhorting them to return to *Popery*, and profeſſing *himſelf to have* ALWAYS *been a* Roman *Catholick in his Heart!*

Q. How did the Queen now proceed?

A. As her Title and the Proceedings in the Reformation were inconſiſtent, it was natural for her to diſcourage the Reformed, to make way for the Return of Popery. In order to this, ſhe replaced the Popiſh Biſhops in the Poſſeſſion of their Sees; and made one of them *(Gardiner)* Lord Chancellor. Then ſhe ſent for Cardinal *Pole* to come over, as the *Pope's Legate*; but, through *Gardiner's* Policy, *Pole's* Arrival was delay'd 'till 24 *Nov.* 1554. In the mean Time, ſhe declar'd her Reſolution, *not to force the Conſciences of her Subjects.* But, the *Zeal* of both Parties being now inflam'd, divers Acts of Intemperance were committed, for which ſeveral of the *Reformers* were preſently call'd in Queſtion, and ſent to Priſon. Upon this, many took the Alarm, and fled beyond the Seas, for fear of Perſecution.

Q. Was any Alteration yet made in Religion?

A. Not by *Authority*; tho' ſome *Zealots* preſuming upon the Queen's Inclination, outran the Proceedings of the Law, and reviv'd the *Latin* Service, and other Uſages. The Queen was crown'd 1 *Oct.* 1553, and met her Parliament on the 5th; in the ſecond Seſſion of which, the *Divorce* of the Queen's Mother was reverſed, and *Religion* reduced to the State it was in at the Death of King *Henry* VIII.

Q. What was the next conſiderable Occurrence in this Reign?

A. Arch-

A. Archbishop *Cranmer*, the Lady *Jane*, the Lord *Guilford Dudley*, (her Husband) and two of his Brothers, were tried at *Guildhall*, 13 *Nov.* and convicted of *Treason:* The two last of whom were pardon'd; and the rest not put to Death 'till after a *fresh* Provocation.

Q. What was that?

A. The Queen being contracted to *Philip* of *Spain*, (the Emperor's Son) the People were the more deeply possessed with Fears and Jealousies, not only of their Religion, but of their Civil Rights. Upon this, a *Rebellion* was concerted, by Sir *Thomas Wyat*, in Kent, Sir *Peter Carew*, in *Cornwall*, and others; into which, the Duke of *Suffolk* was unhappily drawn, on a Prospect of recovering the Crown for his Daughter: But, *Carew*, being too hasty, broke their Measures, and escaped into *France*. *Wyat*, after a desperate March to *London*, was there taken; as also was the Duke of *Suffolk*, in *Warwickshire*. His *second* Revolt, after a *Pardon* receiv'd, proved fatal, not only to himself, but to his Daughter; whom the Queen had hitherto treated with great *Clemency*. But, now, it was NECESSARY to take off the one, for the *Preservation* of the other. The unhappy Lady, expecting certain Death, mounted the Scaffold undismayed. She owned the GUILT of her *Usurpation*, and consequently the *Justice* of her Sentence; not that she had *grasped* at the Crown, but because she had not Resolution to *refuse the Offer of it*. And thus died the Lady *Jane*, 12 *Feb.* 1553, in her 17th Year, generally belov'd, and *universally pitied*, even by those to whom *Usurpation* itself is detestable. At the same Time, suffer'd her Husband; and her Father a few Days after. Among the rest, who were sacrificed to Justice, was *Brett*, an

in-

Sentence of Death paſſed upon him; and was executed, 22 *Aug.* 1553. At which Time he made a frank Declaration to the People, againſt the *New Teaching* (as he called the reformed Doctrine;) exhorting them to return to *Popery*, and profeſſing *himſelf to have* ALWAYS *been a* Roman *Catholick in his Heart!*

Q. How did the Queen now proceed?

A. As her Title and the Proceedings in the Reformation were inconſiſtent, it was natural for her to diſcourage the Reformed, to make way for the Return of Popery. In order to this, ſhe replaced the Popiſh Biſhops in the Poſſeſſion of their Sees; and made one of them *(Gardiner)* Lord Chancellor. Then ſhe ſent for Cardinal *Pole* to come over, as the *Pope*'s *Legate*; but, through *Gardiner*'s Policy, *Pole*'s Arrival was delay'd 'till 24 *Nov.* 1554. In the mean Time, ſhe declar'd her Reſolution, *not to force the Conſciences of her Subjects.* But, the *Zeal* of both Parties being now inflam'd, divers Acts of Intemperance were committed, for which ſeveral of the *Reformers* were preſently call'd in Queſtion, and ſent to Priſon. Upon this, many took the Alarm, and fled beyond the Seas, for fear of Perſecution.

Q. Was any Alteration yet made in Religion?

A. Not by *Authority*; tho' ſome *Zealots* preſuming upon the Queen's Inclination, outran the Proceedings of the Law, and reviv'd the *Latin* Service, and other Uſages. The Queen was crown'd 1 *Oct.* 1553, and met her Parliament on the 5th; in the ſecond Seſſion of which, the *Divorce* of the Queen's Mother was reverſed, and *Religion* reduced to the State it was in at the Death of King *Henry* VIII.

Q. What was the next conſiderable Occurrence in this Reign?

A. Arch-

A. Archbishop *Cranmer*, the Lady *Jane*, the Lord *Guilford Dudley*, (her Husband) and two of his Brothers, were tried at *Guildhall*, 13 *Nov.* and convicted of *Treason*: The two last of whom were pardon'd; and the rest not put to Death 'till after a *fresh* Provocation.

Q. What was that?

A. The Queen being contracted to *Philip* of *Spain*, (the Emperor's Son) the People were the more deeply possessed with Fears and Jealousies, not only of their Religion, but of their Civil Rights. Upon this, a *Rebellion* was concerted, by Sir *Thomas Wyat*, in Kent, Sir *Peter Carew*, in *Cornwall*, and others; into which, the Duke of *Suffolk* was unhappily drawn, on a Prospect of recovering the Crown for his Daughter: But, *Carew*, being too hasty, broke their Measures, and escaped into *France*. *Wyat*, after a desperate March to *London*, was there taken; as also was the Duke of *Suffolk*, in *Warwickshire*. His *second* Revolt, after a *Pardon* receiv'd, proved fatal, not only to himself, but to his Daughter; whom the Queen had hitherto treated with great *Clemency*. But, now, it was NECESSARY to take off the one, for the *Preservation* of the other. The unhappy Lady, expecting certain Death, mounted the Scaffold undismayed. She owned the GUILT of her *Usurpation*, and consequently the *Justice* of her Sentence; not that she had *grasped* at the Crown, but because she had not Resolution to *refuse the Offer of it*. And thus died the Lady *Jane*, 12 *Feb.* 1553, in her 17th Year, generally belov'd, and *universally pitied*, even by those to whom *Usurpation* itself is detestable. At the same Time, suffer'd her Husband; and her Father a few Days after. Among the rest, who were sacrificed to Justice, was *Brett*, an

in-

inveterate Revolter, who had *thrice refuſed* the Queen's Pardon; *Wyat*, the principal Conſpirator; and one *William Thomas*, who had adviſed to *aſſaſſinate* the Queen, and would have *juſtified* his horrid Treaſon to the laſt!

Q. How did the Queen now proceed towards the Body of the *Reformed?*

A. As too many *great Men* among them had given ſo fair a Handle to their Enemies, to prejudice the Queen, (as if the *Principles* of the Reformation had allow'd of *Reſiſtance* of lawful Authority, and of *Rebellion*, under Colour of *Religion*,) it is no Wonder, that the whole Party was now proſecuted with great Severity, and Methods taken to ſuppreſs them. And, thereupon, ſome of the reformed Biſhops were *deprived*, for breaking their *Vows* of Celibacy; ſome for erroneous *Doctrines* and Miſbehaviour; and others for Defect of *Title:* The *married Clergy* in general were remov'd; and ſuch of them as had been devoted to a ſingle Life, were oblig'd to part with their Wives. Then, a Sort of a *Diſputation* was held at *Oxford* with *Cranmer*, *Ridley* and *Latimer*; in conſequence of which, they were pronounc'd *Hereticks* and excommunicated, 20 *April*, 1554.

Q. Was the *Pope*'s Authority, now reviv'd in *England?*

A. Not yet. King *Philip* and Queen *Mary* were married at *Wincheſter*, 25 *July*; in the 29th of *his*, and the 38th of *her* Age. And Cardinal *Pole*, arriving, 24 *Nov.* formally reconciled the Kingdom on the 30th; giving the Parliament *Abſolution* from Schiſm, and all other Cenſures, on their Promiſe to repeal all the Laws made againſt the Papal Authority; which was accordingly perform'd, in *January* following.

Q. How

Q. How did King *Philip* behave on this Marriage?

A. He endeavoured to gain the Affections of the *Engliſh*, by generous and popular Actions. He brought over many Cartloads of *Bullion* and ready *Coin*, to convince them, that he came not to *plunder* the Nation; he procured *Liberty* to the Princeſs *Elizabeth*, and the Earl of *Devonſhire*; who had been confin'd, under an Accuſation of being concern'd with *Wyat*: And a *Pardon* for Archbiſhop *Holgate*, and ſeveral others, impriſon'd in the Tower.

Q. Did not the Return of *Popery* cauſe a Reſtitution of the *Lands* which had been alienated from the *Church*?

A. No. The very Act of Parliament, which revived the Pope's Juriſdiction, contained ſeveral Reſtrictions upon the Papal Power; and particularly, that the Poſſeſſors of the *Church Lands* ſhould not be ſubject to any Cenſures or Proſecutions on that Account: And it was further enacted, that whoever *diſturbed* the Subjects in Poſſeſſion of any ſuch Lands or Goods, on Pretence of any Eccleſiaſtical Authority whatſoever, ſhould incur a *Præmunire*.

Q. Was there no other remarkable Proceeding in this Parliament?

A. Yes. There was a Revival of the old Laws againſt *Heretick*s; which was attended with a ſharp Perſecution of thoſe who were then accounted ſuch: But, the Majority, having *complied* with all the late Revolutions in Church and State, found an eaſy Way, by a *freſh Compliance*, to ſcreen themſelves from Danger; ſo that none ran a Hazard of Life and Fortune, but THE FEW, whoſe true *Church-of-England*-Principles taught them PASSIVELY to OBEY, rather than

to

to *comply* with what was *unlawful*, or to *resist lawful Authority*, however unlawfully exercised. Several considerable *Confessors*, then in Prison for Religion, thought fit to publish a Declaration of their *Faith*, with a Censure of the contrary Doctrines: But, withal, they made the strongest Protestation of their *Loyalty* to the Queen; exhorting the People to *Passive Obedience*, and pressing that Duty to the last Degree; whereas others, of more *Zeal* than *Principle*, broke out into divers unjustifiable Sallies; *insulting* the Religion then establish'd, *ridiculing* the Priests, *shooting* at one of them in the Pulpit, *wounding* another at the very Altar, playing a lewd *Imposture* against the Government (call'd the *Spirit in the Wall,)* personally *aspersing* the Queen's Honour; and even *blasphemously cursing* her in their Prayers.

Q. What was the Consequence of such Provocations?

A. To bring on a Series of Sufferings upon more *sober* Men of the same general Denomination; and that (as it is natural) with more Severity: But, the Heat of this Persecution is not so justly imputed either to the *Queen* or the *Cardinal*, as to the Cruelty of *Gardiner*, and the Fury of *Bonner*; who had been formerly two of the *most active* in the King's *Divorce*, and the abolishing the *Pope*'s Jurisdiction!

Q. Were not *all* the *Popish* Bishops then chargeable with the same bloody Zeal?

A. No. For, we are told, that in the whole Province of *York* there was but *one* brought to the Stake; and in all the four *Welsh* Dioceses, but *three*; in those of *Exeter*, *Wells*, *Peterborough* and *Lincoln*, but *one each*; in that of *Ely*, but *two*; in those of *Bristol* and *Salisbury*, *three each*;

each; and in thoſe of *Oxford*, *Glouceſter*, *Worceſter*, and *Hereford*, none at all, except ſome few, who were ſent down from *London* to ſuffer there. So that this *perſecuting* Spirit ſeems to have rather poſſeſs'd ſome *particular Men*, of revengeful and ſanguinary Tempers, than the whole *Order* or *Party*.

Q. Who were the moſt eminent among the Sufferers in this Martyrology?

A. Mr. *Rogers*, Prebendary of St. *Paul's*, burn'd in *Smithfield*, 4 *Feb.* 1554. Biſhop *Hooper*, at *Glouceſter*, and Dr. *Taylor*, at his Parſonage of *Hadley* in *Suffolk*, on the 9th. Biſhop *Farrar*, at *Caermarthen*, 30 *March*, 1555. Mr *Cardmaker*, Chancellor of *Wells*, in *Smithfield*, 30 *May*, and Mr. *Bradford*, Prebendary of St. *Paul's*, 1 *July*: The Biſhops, *Ridley* and *Latimer*, at *Oxford*, 16 *Oct.* Mr. *Philpot*, Archdeacon of *Wincheſter*, in *Smithfield*, 18 *Dec.* and Archbiſhop *Cranmer*, at *Oxford*, 21 *March* following.

Q. Was there not ſomething particularly remarkable in *Cranmer's* Sufferings?

A Yes. He had been condemn'd as an *Heretic*, for refuſing to ſubſcribe to the Popiſh Doctrine; and formally degraded in a moſt ignominious Manner. All this he bore with great Fortitude. But, after that, being treated with extraordinary Marks of Civility, and Reſpect, and tempted with fair (but falſe) Promiſes, he became a Prey to *Flattery* and Hypocriſy, and was artfully *drawn in* to ſubſcribe ſix ſeveral Forms of Recantation, every one more expreſs than the other. But, at laſt, being call'd to the fiery Trial, he recovered his Reſolution, retracted his Recantations, made a *Burnt-Offering* of his *Hand*, which had ſign'd them, ſuffered Death with

with great Conſtancy, and after all, his *Heart* was found entire, among the Aſhes of the reſt of of his Body!

Q. What became of the CHURCH of *England* in thoſe Times?

A. Beſides the Multitudes who ſuffered Death at home, or Exile abroad, there were many noble *Confeſſors*, who kept up an ORTHODOX Worſhip, in *private Aſſemblies*, when they were depriv'd of it in the public, even at the Hazard of their Lives; according to the Pattern of the *primitive Chriſtians*: Among whom were Biſhop *Harley*, Mr. *Scambler* (afterwards Biſhop of *Peterborough*,) Mr. *Bentham* (afterwards Biſhop of *Lichfield*) and others leſs known. And out of theſe Seminaries, after a ſhort *Perſecution*, the Church of *England* aroſe the brighter, *like Gold tried in the Fire.*

Q. Had the Queen no Iſſue?

A. No. She was thought to be with Child, in 1555, but it prov'd a falſe Conception. Upon which, King *Philip* (diſappointed of an Heir) cooled in his Affections towards the Queen, and went to look after his own Affairs abroad; his Father, the Emperor, reſigning to him all the *Spaniſh* Dominions.

Q. Was *England* engag'd in no Wars in this Reign?

A. Yes. King *Philip*, being engaged in a War with *France*, came over again, and found Means to draw his Queen into the ſame, in 1557. The Event of which, was the Loſs of *Calais*, and all that remained of the *Engliſh* Acquiſitions in *France.*

Q. What Effect had this at home?

A. The Queen was ſo affected with that Loſs, and the Coldneſs of her Huſband, that ſhe laid it

to

to Heart; which, together with a Dropſy, (of which ſhe had laboured ſome Time,) carried her off, 17 *Nov.* 1558, in the 43d Year of her Age, and 6th of her Reign.

Q. Was not this *Popiſh* Queen inclined of courſe to ARBITRARY Power?

A. No. So far from it, that when a Project was put into her Hand, how to make herſelf abſolute, over the Laws, and the Liberties of her People, ſhe *rejected* the Propoſal with a generous Indignation, and threw the Scheme into the Fire!

xliii 23. ELIZABETH.

Q. Who ſucceeded Queen *Mary?*

A. Her Siſter, the Princeſs *Elizabeth*; the only ſurviving Iſſue of King *Henry* VIII. being the Daughter of his Queen *Anne*, born 7 *Sept.* 1533, and now little more than 25 Years of Age.

Q. Was there no Oppoſition made to her Succeſſion?

A. No. The Council communicating the News of the late Queen's Death, to the Houſe of Lords then ſitting, and theſe to the Commons, *Elizabeth* was proclaim'd, as the *next* undoubted Heir, without ſo much as one Motion to EXCLUDE her from her *Right*, for DIFFERENCE IN RELIGION.

Q. In what Condition did ſhe find the publick Affairs?

A. Much perplexed. The War with *France* and *Scotland*, not ended: The *Pope* openly averſe to her; and the *French* King ſoliciting him, to declare her illegitimate, in favour of his then Daughter-in-Law, the Queen of *Scots*: Her Council and Magiſtrates, and all the benefic'd Clergy, profeſs'd *Papiſts*: The *Iriſh* generally dif-

diſaffected, and ready to revolt: Her Finances very low; And no Ally to aſſiſt her, but her Brother-in-Law, *Philip* of *Spain*. Add to all this, that (among ſeveral others) *Philip* himſelf was now an earneſt Suitor to her for *Marriage*; whom it was not ſafe to diſoblige: Nor could ſhe accept of him for a Huſband, without a *Diſpenſation* from the *Pope*; which would have been an Acknowledgment of the Invalidity of her *Mother*'s *Marriage*, and conſequently of her own Illegitimacy.

Q. How did ſhe extricate herſelf out of all theſe Difficulties?

A. Having notified her Acceſſion to the *Pope* himſelf, as well as to the ſeveral neighbouring Princes, ſhe form'd her Council of thirteen of her Siſter's *Popiſh* Counſellors, and eight others inclined to the Reformation. Theſe laſt, ſhe conſulted as a ſelect Cabinet-Council; by whoſe Advice, it was reſolv'd to keep fair Terms with King *Philip*, but to forward the Reformation with all prudent Expedition. To this End, as a Means to ſtrengthen herſelf, and weaken her moſt dangerous Neighbours, it was thought politically neceſſary, to foment the *religious Diviſions* abroad, and to give all private Encouragement to the *Proteſtants*, particularly in *France*, *Scotland*, and the *Low-Countries*. againſt their own Soveraigns.

Q. Was there any Advance yet made towards a *Reformation* in *Scotland*?

A. Not regularly. Tho' many of the People there had ſuck'd in ſome of the reform'd Principles, from the *Engliſh* Refugees in the late Reign, and grown very averſe to thoſe of Popery, yet, they had not any *Authority* of Church or State to warrant their Proceedings. The Queen-Mother, indeed, to ſupport herſelf in the Regency, during the Minority of her Daughter,

(Queen

(Queen *Mary*) had, out of *politic* Views, ſhew'd them ſome Marks of private Favour: But, no ſooner was the Marriage completed between that young Princeſs and the Dauphin of *France*, 24 *April* 1558, but the Queen-Regent began to look cool upon that Party, as uſeleſs to her. In the mean Time, the *Proteſtants*, having ſome Men of Quality among them, had entered into an *Aſſociation*, calling themſelves *The Congregation of the Lord*, and obtained a *Permiſſion* from the Regent, to celebrate Divine Service in their *vulgar Tongue*, without Tumult or Diſturbance; from which they took Courage to make, and inſiſt upon ſtill further Demands, than were conſiſtent with the Duty of *Subjects* towards their Sovereign, threatning, to diſown her Authority, and *renounce their Allegiance!* And *theſe* were the People whom Queen *Elizabeth* reſolved to ſupport; as ſhe afterwards did, to the Deſtruction of their lawful Sovereign, and the no ſmall *Scandal* of the Reformation!

Q. What Meaſures did ſhe take, in the mean Time, to perfect the Reformation in her own Kingdom?

A. She diſcharged thoſe who had been caſt into Priſon for Religion, in the laſt Reign, and gave Leave to thoſe in Exile, to return home: Then, to prevent Controverſies, ſhe ordered, (as Queen *Mary* had done before) that none ſhould preach without her Licence; but permitted the Uſe of the Lord's-Prayer, Creed, Commandments, Litany, Epiſtles and Goſpels in *Engliſh*. She diſtinguiſhed ſeveral Proteſtants with the Honour of Peerage. After which, being crown'd, 15 *Jan.* 1558, ſhe convened a Parliament, wherein ſhe repealed ſeveral Laws made by Queen *Mary*, and enacted, that the public Worſhip ſhould be ſo-

lemnized by the *Engliſh* Book of *Common-Prayer*, from and after, 24 *June* following; and, in ſhort, reſtored Religion to the State it was in, under King *Edward* VI. only changing the Stile of *Supreme Head* into that of *Supreme Governor*.

Q. How were theſe Alterations received?

A. The Lower Houſe of Convocation preſented to the Queen certain Articles, in Defence of their *(Popiſh)* Religion; in which, both the Univerſities concurred. This gave Occaſion to a Conference or Diſputation at *Weſtminſter*, in *April*, 1559, whereat Sir *Nicholas Bacon*, the Lord-Keeper, preſided to keep the Diſputants to the Terms agreed on by both Parties: But, the Biſhops not proceeding according to their Agreement, the Conference broke up in a Squabble; and two of them *(Watſon* and *White)* who had groſly miſbehaved, and threatened the Queen with *Excommunication*, were committed to the Tower. But, the *Oath* of the *Regal Supremacy*, was, what ſtuck moſt with them all.

Q. Had they not taken the ſame Oath in the Reign of King *Henry* VIII. and King *Edward* VI. which now they refuſed?

A. Yes, undoubtedly; either as Biſhops or Prieſts, or both. However, that would not have been a ſufficient Reaſon for their *repeating* ſuch a ſolemn Engagement, if now, upon Recollection, they had diſcovered any thing *unlawful* in the Matter or Form of the *Oath* itſelf, or in the *Authority* which impoſed it.

Q. But were not ſuch as now refuſed this Oath of Supremacy, depriv'd of their Sees, by a Lay-Power?

A. Yes; they were *diſpoſſeſs'd* indeed by a *Lay-Power*, but ſuch, as had a competent *Authority* to diſpoſſeſs all unjuſt Invaders and Uſurpers.

pers. But the Sees, of which theſe Men were now diſpoſſeſs'd, were not properly *Theirs*; but either ſuch as they had unjuſtly been intruded into, or had no regular *Title* to (according to the common Principles of the Univerſal Church) by their *Schiſmatical* Conſecrations. And moreover, their Refuſal to ſubmit to the Uſe of the *Common-Prayer-Book*, drawn up by the Authority of the *Church*, and enforced by the *State* in the Acts of *Uniformity*, would of itſelf have juſtly incurred a Deprivation.

Q. How were the Epiſcopal Sees now filled on this Voidance?

A. Canterbury was vacant. For, Cardinal *Pole*, who ſucceeded *Cranmer*, died within a few Hours after Queen *Mary*: And now Dr. *Matthew Parker* was promoted to the Archbiſhoprick; and the other Sees were fill'd ſoon after.

Q. Was there no Objection to *Parker*'s Conſecration?

A. Not at *that* Time; nor in many Years *after* his Death. For, it was perform'd by four Biſhops, *Barlow*, *Scory*, *Coverdale*, and *Hodgkins*; who had all received their *Epiſcopal* Character through the *ſame Hands*, with the greateſt Biſhops of Queen *Mary*'s Time; and two of them alſo by the very *ſame Form* of Conſecration: Nay, the laſt of them was, together with *Heath* and *Bonner*, a Conſecrator of Biſhop *Thirlby*; who, with the ſame *Heath* and *Bonner*, and others, had conſecrated Cardinal *Pole* himſelf, and moſt of the Biſhops in the laſt Reign.

Q. But, was it not this ſame *Parker*, of whoſe Conſecration there has been ſo much Noiſe; as if it had been done clandeſtinely, at the *Nag's-Head* Tavern?

A. The ſame. But, not one Word of that ſcandalous Story is true. The Conſecration was publickly ſolemnized in *Lambeth*-Chapel, 17 *Dec.* 1559; as hath been fairly prov'd by Eye-Witneſſes, of undoubted Honour and Veracity, ſtill living when that Fable was firſt forg'd; as well as by the Authentic Records both of the Church and State, yet to be ſeen in the proper Offices: Inſomuch, that the Propagators of this Scandal, have been fairly and publickly CHALLENGED, to produce ſo good Proof, of *any one Fact* in Diſpute between the two Churches of *England* and *Rome*. But, as to the *Nag*'s-*Head* Fable, the Forgery of it is evident to all unprejudic'd Perſons, if it were only from *this* Conſideration alone, that every ſeveral Reporter of it differs from the reſt in ſome of the moſt material Parts of the Relation!

Q. Does not the Church of *England* derive her Succeſſion of Order, from this Conſecration of Archbiſhop *Parker*?

A. Yes; but not from that *alone*. For, our Biſhops are able to prove an *uninterrupted* Succeſſion, through the Epiſcopal Lines of *other* Churches, not objected to by our Adverſaries, (and namely, *Scotland*, *France* and *Ireland*, yea, and even *Italy* itſelf;) ſo that the Objection againſt *Parker*'s Conſecration (if granted) would not prove a *Nullity* of the Prelatic Order in our Church, as our Adverſaries do pretend to call it.

Q. How did the *Pope* behave on this Occaſion?

A. On the Queen's Acceſſion to the Throne, he was very haughty; pretending to a *Temporal Sovereignty*: But, finding, how little Regard was had to his Pretenſions, he would have been content with a *Spiritual Juriſdiction*. At length, he

he ſet all Engines of *Policy* to work, in Oppoſition to the Queen and the Reformation in hand. And now, by *his* Intrigues, and the Ambition of the Court of *France*, the young Queen of *Scotland* was oblig'd to aſſume the Royal Title and Arms of *England*, as Heir to the late Queen *Mary*.

Q. How did Queen *Elizabeth* reſent this Affront?

A. With a very juſtifiable Indignation, if ſhe had not carried it too far. When ſhe found the *French* preparing to ſend Forces into *Scotland*; to ſecure herſelf from an Attack on *that* Side, ſhe ſtrengthened the Hands of the *Proteſtants* there; who, taking upon them to reform themſelves according to the *Genevan* Plan, made no Scruple of *Conſcience* to fly openly in the Face of lawful Authority, and riotouſly to plunder and deſtroy ſeveral Churches, and other Religious Houſes. In Defence of theſe Proceedings, they enter into a ſecond *Aſſociation* or *Covenant*, (and after that a third, and fourth) and fly out into open *Rebellion*; incited thereto, by *Knox*, and other Pulpit-Incendiaries; which, in the Concluſion, dethroned and murdered their Queen, and, inſtead of *Popery*, ſet up a Face of Religion WITHOUT A CHURCH!

Q. How could Queen *Elizabeth* ſhew any Countenance to ſuch a *Mob-Reformation* as this?

A. It was ſo manag'd, that theſe *Scots* Reformers, the better to make their Court to *her*, made uſe as yet (and for many Years afterwards) of no other publick Worſhip, but that of the *Engliſh* Book of *Common-Prayer*, tho' they were equally diſaffected to Liturgies of all Kinds. And, tho' they now proceeded, (contrary to the *Principles* of that Book, as well as of *the Bible* itſelf,)

even to declare the Queen Regent *depoſed*, yet, ſo far did the POLITICKS of the *Engliſh* Court prevail over the Principles of *Religion*, and the common Intereſt of all Sovereign Princes, that Queen *Elizabeth* entered into an actual Alliance with thoſe *Rebels*, promiſing to *aſſiſt* them with Men and Money, (27 *Feb.* 1559) notwithſtanding ſhe believed they were all *Hypocrites* at bottom.

Q. How did they now proceed, under her avowed Protection?

A. Not far at preſent, tho' there were both *French* and *Engliſh* Forces in *Scotland*. For, King *Henry* II. of *France*, dying, 10 *July*, 1559, and the Affairs of that Country growing mutinous at home, under the Adminiſtration of the Houſe of *Guiſe*, during the Minority of King *Francis* II. occaſioned a Treaty at *Edinburgh*, 6 *July* 1560; whereby, the now King and Queen of *France* and *Scotland* were to *lay aſide* the Royal Title and Arms of *England*; and to paſs an *Oblivion*, in Favour of the Rebels in *Scotland*. The Articles relating to the *Scots* were accordingly perform'd: But thoſe relating to *England* were not ratified, when King *Francis* alſo died, 5 *Dec.* 1560, aged 18, leaving the *Queen*, Sovereign of *Scotland*, and Dowager of *France*. In the mean Time, the *Scots* preſumed, of their own Heads, to convene, under the Name of the *Three Eſtates*, and drew up a Scheme of DISCIPLINE for themſelves; reforming the Church with a Spirit like that of the *Goths* and *Vandals!* For it is obſerv'd, that 'almoſt all the *common* People of *Scotland* 'were (at that time) *Proteſtant Fanatics:* The 'Majority of the *Nobles* had embraced the ſame 'Religion, becauſe they found *their* Account in 'poſſeſſing the *Church-Lands*, which they ſeized 'at the Beginning of the Reformation' there.

Q. How

Q. How ſtood the *Engliſh* Intereſt now beyond the Seas?

A. King *Philip* of *Spain* cooled in his Regards for Queen *Elizabeth*, ſo much as to return her the Enſigns of the Garter. The Pope, *Pius* IV. had been much ſollicited to excommunicate her; But, he rather choſe to try gentler Methods firſt; offering (as it is ſaid) to confirm the *Engliſh Liturgy*, to allow the *Cup* to the Laity in the Euchariſt, and to reverſe the Sentence of her Mother's *Divorce*, on Condition, that ſhe would own his *Supremacy*. The Minority of *Charles* IX. now King of *France*, was much troubled with a Faction of the *Hugonots*. And the Queen of *Scots*, immediately upon her Huſband's Death, *forbore* to uſe the *Engliſh* Title and Arms, and *diſclaimed* all Right to *England*, during the Life of Queen *Elizabeth*, or her Iſſue.

Q. Did not this Diſclaimer reconcile the two Queens?

A. Nothing could ever do that. On the contrary, when the Queen of *Scots* deſired a *ſafe Conduct*, in her Return home from *France*, Queen *Elizabeth* did not only *deny* her that common Favour or Civility, but even fitted out a Fleet (as ſome ſay) to *intercept* her Paſſage. However, ſhe landed in Safety, 18 *Aug.* 1561, was fairly receiv'd, governed very gently, indulged her Subjects in their Reformation, and ſettled the Kingdom to great Commendation: And now ſhe created her Natural-Brother, *James Stuart*, Earl of *Murray*; who had a principal Hand in the late Troubles, as well as in all thoſe afterwards, which proved her Ruin.

Q. What Meaſures did Queen *Elizabeth* purſue next?

A. She concluded a Treaty, in 1562, with the *Hugonots* of *France*, to ſupport them againſt the Houſe o. *Guiſe*, from whence the Queen of *Scots* deſcended by her Mother. But the Duke of *Guiſe* being piſtoll'd at the Siege of *Orleans*, a Peace was made between the King and the *Hugonots*; who thereupon diſtinguiſhed their *Loyalty* more than their *Gratitude*, by driving the *Engliſh* out of *France*, as *Enemies*, into which they had lately invited them as *Protectors*. But at laſt, a Peace was alſo made between thoſe two Crowns, 2 *April*, 1564.

Q. What was the next material Occurrence?

A. The ſecond Marriage of the Queen of *Scots*; *viz.* with *Henry Stuart*, Lord *Darnly*, Grandſon to Queen *Margaret* of *Scotland*, by her ſecond Match with the Earl of *Angus*, as Queen *Mary* herſelf was her Grand-Daughter and Heir, by King *James* IV. her firſt Huſband. So that he was *next to her* of the Royal Line.

Q. How did Queen *Elizabeth* reſent that Marriage?

A. With her uſual Manner of Behaviour, towards that unhappy Princeſs. For, tho' ſhe had ſolicited her to marry ſome *Engliſh* Nobleman (for fear of her growing more powerful by a Foreign Alliance) meaning Lord *Robert Dudley*, afterwards created Earl of *Leiceſter*; (a very improper Match for her, on many Accounts,) and intimating the Lord *Darnly* likewiſe; yet now, when ſhe found her reſolv'd upon *this Match*, with one, whoſe Father, (the Earl of *Lenox*,) had large Poſſeſſions in *England*, ſhe uſed all her Endeavours to prevent it: And, among the reſt, ſhe incited the *Aſſociators* of her Party to freſh Commotions, in hopes thereby to interrupt the intended Marriage, which, notwithſtanding all

their

their Oppoſition, was ſolemnized, 29 *July*, 1565, and the next Day they were proclaimed King and Queen.

Q. Did the Aſſociators *take Arms* againſt their Queen on this Occaſion?

A. Yes: But, being ſummon'd and refuſing to ſubmit, ſhe purſued them ſo cloſe, that they were driven into *England*; where they were *protected* and *privately encouraged*, (contrary to an expreſs Treaty between the two Queens;) tho' Queen *Elizabeth*, in publick, affected to call them REBELS *and* TRAITORS! as they really were.

Q. What Colour of Diſguſt had thoſe aſſociated Rebels?

A. Several Pretences were made uſe of: As the great Favours ſhewn to *David Rizzio*, a Foreign Muſician, occaſionally imploy'd as her *French* Secretary; the Declenſion of *Murray*'s Intereſt at Court; and, above all, the *Danger of their Religion*, the new King being a *Papiſt!* The *firſt*, of which, was audaciouſly aggravated, to the Queen's * Diſhonour, by the learned (but mercenary) *Buchanan*, one of *Elizabeth*'s Penſioners; tho', we are well aſſur'd he *retracted* all his Calumnies againſt her, on his Death-Bed.

Q. What Uſe did the Conſpirators make of all theſe *Prejudices!*

A. They artfully inſinuated into the weak and paſſionate King a *Jealouſy* of the Queen: In the Heat of which, he was drawn into a concert with the Earl of *Morton*, and others of the Rebels, to

 murder

* *N. B.* For the clearing her Majeſty of all Suſpicion *on this* Head, the Reader may find abundant Authority, in Mr. CARTE's Hiſtory, Vol. III. Fol. 447, and 474, and the *Appendix* at the End thereof.

murder *Rizzio*; which was perpetrated, in a barbarous Manner, 9 *March*, 1565, even in the Preſence of the *Queen* herſelf, (with ſeveral other Perſons of Quality then together at Supper;) whom they inſulted alſo and confined, tho' then *big with Child!* And, now the Murderers fled into *England*; from whence *Murray*, and the other *Rebels*, returning, were all pardon'd by the King.

Q. What Effect had this Violence on the pregnant Queen?

A. Not ſo bad as the Conſpirators intended. For, having happily found Means to eſcape out of Confinement, ſhe was ſafely deliver'd, 19 *June*, 1566, of Prince *James*, who afterwards happily united the two Kingdoms; being the *ſixth* of his Name in *Scotland*, and the *firſt* in *England*.

Q. How did the two Queens now ſtand affected to each other?

A. With a mutual Jealouſy, tho' diſguiſed with fair Words. Queen *Elizabeth* always affected to call the other *her good Siſter!* and ſent a ſplendid Repreſentative to appear for her, at the Prince's Chriſtening. Yet, neither would ſhe ever acknowledge the Queen of *Scots* Right of Succeſſion: Neither, on the other Side, would Queen *Mary* ratify the Treaty of *Edinburgh*, made in the Time of her firſt Huſband King *Francis*.

Q. What were their Reaſons for ſuch Refuſal?

A. The *Scots* Queen had diſcover'd an Article in that Treaty, ſo *ambiguouſly* worded, as might have utterly excluded her from the Succeſſion; (tho' ſhe was always ready to renounce all Claim to it, during the Life of Queen *Elizabeth* or her Iſſue;) being aware, that ſome of the *Engliſh* Pro-

Proteſtants would have been glad of ANY PRETENCE, to exclude a *Popiſh* Heir! And it is not denied, but *Elizabeth* intended to have taken that Advantage, if *Mary* had been ſo unwary as to give it her.

Q. What was the next important Occurrence?

A. The ſudden Death of the King of *Scotland*; whoſe Apartment was blown up with Gun-Powder, and his Body found in the Garden, 10 *Feb.* 1566, which was whiſper'd, to have been perpetrated by the Procurement of *Murray*, and the Earl of *Bothwell*, (who now aſpired to the Queen's Favour, as *Murray* did to the Crown) the better to give her Enemies a Pretence to lay the Guilt of it at *her* Door. However, *Bothwell* being brought to his Trial, before a Court of *Murray*'s Faction, was acquitted of it. On the other Hand, the whole Guilt is plainly imputed to *Murray* and his Aſſociates; by whoſe Artifices alſo *Bothwell* was emboldened afterwards, by an armed Force, to ſeize the *Queen*'s *Perſon*, and keep her in *Reſtraint*, 'till he had extorted her Conſent to accept Him for her *third* Huſband, who was concern'd in the Murder of her *ſecond*, plainly with Deſign to blemiſh her Reputation, and make Way for her Ruin. This is certain, the *Aſſociators* themſelves, who had thus contriv'd to draw her into the Snare, exclaimed bitterly againſt it, and from thence took Occaſion to appear again in *Arms:* And, the Queen, finding herſelf too weak to reſiſt, ſurrendered herſelf to them, who committed her a *Priſoner* to the Cuſtody of *Murray*'s inſulting Mother: *Bothwell* (with *their* Connivance) flying into the *Iſles*, and dying an Exile in *Denmark*.

Q. How did they now proceed againſt her?

A. The *Rebels*, having now maſter'd all Oppoſition, reſolved to improve that miſcall'd *Providence*, into an ABDICATION of the Throne, and a Thorow-Reformation of the Church, by the Help of their *General-Aſſembly*, under the Management of *Buchanan* and *Knox*. To this end, partly by their Arts, and partly by the Inſinuations of the *Engliſh* Ambaſſador (whoſe *pretended* Buſineſs was to concert Meaſures for the *Reſtoration* of her Liberty and Authority,) ſhe was not only robbed of her Revenues, but even forc'd, by the Menaces of Death, to ſign a formal Act of *Reſignation* of the Crown, 24 *July*, 1567. Whereupon, the Prince, her Son (then but a Year old) was inaugurated as King, on the 29th of the ſame Month.

Q. Who took upon him the Adminiſtration, on this extraordinary Revolution?

A. The Earl of *Murray* (lately gone to *France*) was ſoon call'd home, and declar'd *Regent* by his Confederates; (tho', out of Grimace, he affected at firſt to decline it;) having, in his way home, obtain'd of Queen *Elizabeth* a Penſion of 4000l. a Year. And, on his Return, he treated the Queen ſo reproachfully, as almoſt broke her Heart! In the mean Time, ſeveral Lords and others, retained ſo much Loyalty, as to refuſe Submiſſion to the Regent, and his *Convention* of the pretended States; looking upon the whole *Revolution*, as an unnatural *Uſurpation*. And the Queen eſcaping out of Confinement, was ſoon join'd with a Body of Troops: But, being unhappily defeated by the Regent, near *Glaſgow*, 13 *May*, 1568, was forc'd to put herſelf into the Hands of HER GOOD SISTER of *England*, for her promiſed *Protection* againſt Rebels and Regicides!

Q. Was

Q. Was there no farther Examination made, into the Murder of the late King?

A. Yes. Soon after that Revolution, one *Hepburn*, and three of *Bothwell*'s Servants, were brought to their Trial for it. It is ſaid, they confeſſed the Crime; but, at the ſame Time, diſcovered *more than* the Regent expected. By their dying Speeches, it appeared, that the *Murder* was ſuggeſted and carried on by the Earls of *Murray*, *Morton*, and *Bothwell*; but without the leaſt Suſpicion of the *Queen* herſelf. *Bothwell* alſo, to his laſt Moment, ſolemnly averred *her* being wholly unacquainted with it: And ſo did *Morton*, when he was beheaded for it, 14 Years afterwards. Nor can it be credible, that *ſhe* could be any way acceſſary to his *Murder*, when, 'tis certain, ſhe would not conſent to a *Divorce* from him, when propos'd to her by the Lords, notwithſtanding, his many provoking Offences againſt her.

Q. What Protection did the unhappy Queen find in *England?*

A. Queen *Elizabeth* had given her many *repeated Aſſurances* of Protection and Succour, in caſe of Need; and had preſented her a certain Diamond as a TOKEN of it. This Token, the *Scots* Queen ſent to her, before ſhe entered *England*, by one *Beaton*, who brought back large Promiſes of *kind Uſage*. Notwithſtanding which, no ſooner did the News reach the Court, that *Mary* was already in *England*, but *Elizabeth* ordered her to be *confined* at *Carliſle*, and *refuſed to ſee her*; ſeeking for any plauſible Pretence to detain her. For, the Point debated in the *Engliſh* Council, was not what was moſt conſonant to *Juſtice* or *Generoſity*, but what was moſt ADVANTAGEOUS. And, tho' Queen *Elizabeth* affected

fected to appear much concern'd for the Honour and Safety of her Royal Captive, yet *(the Rebels knew)* ſhe delayed all the Methods neceſſary to *either*, 'till ſhe found an Opportunity to take other *ſelfiſh* Meaſures.

Q. What paſſed in *Scotland* the while?

A. Murray, the Regent, called a Parliament of his Faction, to condemn the Queen's Adherents. They apply to *Elizabeth* to become *Umpire* of the Differences. She procures a Hearing of the Cauſe, before Commiſſioners at *York*; which was adjourn'd to *Weſtminſter*, and *Hampton-Court*. The Regent and his Party (who were *themſelves* the execrable *Murderers* of their late King, and notoriouſly guilty of *Rebellion* and *Uſurpation* of the Sovereignty) were permitted here, to produce all they had to alledge againſt their injur'd Queen (not excepting even *Buchanan*'s infamous *Libel,)* before they had clear'd themſelves of that very Murder, with which they had been charg'd by ſeveral of their own dying Accomplices! After all, *Elizabeth* was ſo *partial*, that ſhe countenanced the ſpreading abroad thoſe very *Calumnies*, which by her own Confeſſion ſhe DID NOT BELIEVE: And tho' ſhe ſaid ſhe would not *ſee* the Regent any more; yet at the ſame Time, ſhe had ſeveral *private* Conferences with him; wherein he poſſeſſed her with ſuch falſe Informations, to the Prejudice of his Queen, and the Noble Duke of *Norfolk*, as afterwards were made uſe of to the Ruin of them both: And, at laſt the *Regent*, and his Collegues were licenced to return home, without being queſtion'd for their own Crimes, or any Step taken in favour of injur'd Innocence; having privately made a Verbal League with *Elizabeth* for *mutual* Aſſiſtance.

Q. Were

Q. Were the other neighbouring Princes unconcerned at all this?

A. France was employ'd in ſuppreſſing the *Hugonots*; who were aſſiſted by Queen *Elizabeth* with Money and Arms. At the ſame Time, ſhe gave a Refuge to many *Flemings*, who were ſeverely perſecuted by the Duke *de Alva*, the *Spaniſh* Governor. And, ſoon after, a Quarrel happening, occaſion'd mutual Depredations between the Merchants of *England* and *Spain* (to the great Decay of Trade) tho' there was yet no open War between the two Crowns. For, the Queen's Title to the Throne being queſtion'd by the *Papiſts* in general, it was her Policy to keep out of a War as long as poſſible: So that ſhe did not even proſecute the Recovery of *Calais*, when the *French* were bound by expreſs Treaty to reſtore it.

Q. How was *Norfolk*'s Ruin effected?

A. A Marriage was privately concerted, (by *Murray*, with the Earl of *Leiceſter*, and others,) to be contracted between the Queen of *Scots* and that Duke; tho' not to be conſummated without the *Conſent* of Queen *Elizabeth*. But, the ſubtle *Leiceſter*, inſtead of moving it to the *Engliſh* Queen for her Approbation, (as he had promiſed) diſcovered it to her in ſuch an artful and treacherous Manner, as enflamed her Jealouſy and Reſentment: And *Murray*, the Regent, adding ſome farther Inſinuations to her from *Scotland*, that ever-loyal Duke was ſent to the Tower. 11 *Oct.* 1569. And, ſoon after, the Earls of *Northumberland* and *Weſtmorland* appearing in open Rebellion, in hopes to enlarge the Queen of *Scots* and the Duke of *Norfolk*, as well as to re-eſtabliſh Popery, that Queen was remov'd to *Coventry*; but the Earls, being unſucceſsful, withdrew, the

latter

latter into the *Netherlands*, and the former into *Scotland*; from whence he was deliver'd up afterwards by the Regent *Morton*, and loſt his Head, 22 *Aug.* 1572.

Q. Did Queen *Elizabeth* meet with no other Oppoſition in the eſtabliſhing of the Church of *England?*

A. Yes; from *Papiſts* on the one Hand, and *Puritans* on the other. Tho' the Papiſts at firſt acquieſced in the Reformation, and frequented the Worſhip of the Church of *England* for about 10 Years: But, after the Pope found all his other Methods ineffectual againſt the Eſtabliſhment, he altered his Meaſures, and ſent over his *Emiſſaries*, in various Shapes, furniſh'd with *Diſpenſations*, to conform outwardly, and propagate whatever Doctrines or Principles they ſhould find moſt likely to *take* with the People, under pretence of greater *Purity*, and a farther *Reformation*; as being the more engaging *Method*, to foment *Sedition* in the *State*, and *Schiſm* in the *Church*. Thus were *Faithful Comyn*, a Frier, and *Heath*, a Jeſuit, and many more inſtructed to inſinuate themſelves among the unwary Multitude, as zealous Aſſertors of a purer *Reformation*: But, at the ſame Time, they preached up for *Extempore* Prayer, and reflected on the *Engliſh* Liturgy, as if it had been but a bad Copy of the Popiſh *Maſs-Book!* But, theſe were openly detected; and (tho' the former eſcaped back to *Rome*, where he was rewarded) the latter met with a condign Puniſhment for his IMPOSTURE.

Q. What Effect had this upon the People?

A. Several of our *Exiles* in the late Reign, had ſuck'd in the Errors and Prejudices of *Calvin*, and other Sectaries abroad; and returning home, full of *Zeal* againſt Popery, and but weakly grounded

grounded in better Principles, were too eaſily drawn away by Seducers, to believe our Ceremonies and Habits, *Superſtitious*, our Doctrine, Diſcipline and Worſhip, *Popiſh*, and the very Government of the Church by Biſhops, *Anti-Chriſtian:* Nor were the Diſcoveries of the many Impoſtures among them, able to open their Eyes, or remove their Prejudices; to which are owing, the many Sects of DISSENTERS among us, to this Day.

Q. Was not Queen *Elizabeth* very indulgent to *theſe* Diſſenting Brethren?

A. So far the contrary, that the Laws for Conformity and Uniformity were executed with great Steadineſs; and if the *Non-Conformiſts* ever had Cauſe to complain of *Penal Laws*, it was of thoſe made in *her* Reign. And yet (ſuch is *their Spirit*, that) they idolize *her Glorious Memory*, who proſecuted them to the *Gallows*, or Baniſhment; and, at the ſame Time, load a moſt *merciful Race* of Princes with Calumnies, who indulged them to their own Ruin!

Q. Was there any thing more particularly remarkable in the Behaviour of the *Puritans* in thoſe Days?

A. At the very Time that Pope *Pius* V. had thundered out his *Excommunications* againſt Queen *Elizabeth* and her Adherents, declaring all her Subjects abſolved from their Oaths of Allegiance; the *Puritans* took Advantage of the Occaſion to project new Schemes, and force the Government into a farther Reformation according to the *Geneva* Plan. But, this was neither particular to this Reign, nor to this Occaſion. For, they did the like afterwards, on the *Spaniſh* Invaſion: And generally on all Occaſions, while the *Jeſuitical* Emiſſaries have been moſt troubleſome with

with their *Popiſh* Plots, the *Diſſenters* have been as buſy with their *Fanatical* ones; as if they had been the Inſtruments of Popery, and Fellow-Labourers with the Jeſuits, to diſtract our Church and State.

Q. What was the next conſiderable Occurrence in the State?

A. The Regent *Murray* had made a Treaty, in *October* 1569, with Queen *Elizabeth*, whereby he was to put the young *Prince* (with ſome of the *Scots* Fortreſſes) into *her* Hands; and ſhe to deliver up the *Queen* (his Sovereign) into *his* Power and Diſpoſal. But, as this deteſtable Project was for ſome Time prevented, by an Inſurrection in the North; ſo it was rendered impracticable by the ſudden Death of that Arch-Rebel, *Murray* himſelf, who was piſtoll'd by one *Hamilton*, in Revenge of a perſonal Injury, 23 *Jan.* 1569, Nor was his Death ſo much lamented by any, as by the two *Queens*: By the *Engliſh* as a *Politician*, for the Loſs of a moſt uſeful Inſtrument to ſerve her Purpoſes; but by the *Scots* Queen, as a *Chriſtian*, for his being cut off in the Midſt of his manifold Sins, without any Time for *Repentance and Reſtitution!* Some Time after which, the Earl of *Lenox* (Father to the late King) was choſen *Regent*, with the Approbation of Queen *Elizabeth*; his Lady and Children being in her Power. Yet, this did not unite the different Intereſts; but continued the Diviſions there as *Elizabeth* deſigned: For, tho' ſhe always profeſſed a *Deſire* of their Union, ſhe underhand employed Agents to *prevent* it; and openly ſent Forces into *Scotland* to over-power the Queen's Party.

Q. How did the new Regent govern?

A. Under

A. Under the like Influence as the former. He ſurprized *Dunbarton*, and therein took ſeveral of the Queen's Adherents. Among whom, *John Hamilton*, Archbiſhop of St. *Andrews*, being one, was infamouſly hang'd; who was the firſt Biſhop that ſuffered in the Forms of Juſtice in that Kingdom; and that too moſt abſurdly, for a pretended *Treaſon* againſt the Infant *Prince* in the Behalf of the injur'd *Queen*, his Mother: But, this Regent did not long enjoy his Honour! For, he was ſurpriz'd by ſome of the *Loyaliſts*, and kill'd, to prevent a Reſcue, 4 *Sept.* 1571. And thereupon the Earl of *Marr* was preferr'd, tho' the Earl of *Morton* (ſupported by the *Engliſh* Court, of which he was a *Penſioner*) aſpired to that Dignity.

Q. Did not the Regent *Marr* proceed in the ſame Steps with his Predeceſſors?

A. No. He was not to be ſo abſolutely manag'd by Queen *Elizabeth*: And, therefore, ſhe formed a Party, under *Morton*, to oppoſe him. But, he was ſoon tired out with the Fatigue and ill Succeſs of his Adminiſtration; ſo that he ſickened and died, 29 *Oct.* 1572, as it was ſuſpected, of Poiſon. And then *Morton* ſucceeded him in the Regency; by whoſe Management, and the Aſſiſtance of *England*, the Loyaliſts were utterly ſuppreſſed. So that Queen *Elizabeth* (being at Peace every where, but in *her own* Mind,) had now no juſt Cauſe to apprehend Danger from the Queen of *Scots*; tho' ſhe ſtill proſecuted her with irreconcilable Malice, on groundleſs Suſpicions.

Q. What became of the Duke of *Norfolk* in the mean Time?

A. He was (after ſome Interval of Liberty) committed again to the Tower; and being tried by

by his Peers, 16 *Jan.* 1571 for High Treaſon; was beheaded, 2 *June*, following.

Q. Did Queen *Elizabeth* enjoy a profound Peace after this?

A. Yes, for many Years. For, tho' ſhe concerned herſelf in ſupporting Rebellions (under Pretence of *Liberty* and *Religion*) againſt the Kings of *France* and *Spain*, as well as the Queen of *Scotland*, yet ſhe carried herſelf ſo *politickly*, as to prevent an open Rupture. At the ſame Time ſhe amuſed her Subjects and Neighbours, with ſeveral Negociations of *Marriage*; but ſeems not to have been ſincerely diſpoſed to any.

Q. What paſſed the while in *Scotland?*

A. The Queen's Adherents being ſuppreſſed, and the Regent *Morton* having (by his intolerable Inſolence and Tyranny,) diſobliged thoſe about the *young Prince*, he was perſuaded to take the Government into his own Hands, in 1578, tho' he was not yet 12 Years old: But, *Morton*, by Surprize, ſeized his Perſon, and arbitrarily reſumed his Authority; and had form'd a Scheme to betray his *Prince* alſo into the Hands of Queen *Elizabeth*. However, he was accuſed of the late *King*'s *Murder*, and ſent to Priſon, in 1580. And, being afterwards tried and convicted of it, he deſervedly ſuffered Death, and cleared his Queen of it in *June*, 1581, tho' Queen *Elizabeth* (who could not bear any Overtures in Defence of *his injured Sovereign*) intereſted herſelf *openly* in *his* Favour, by a public Embaſſy and Negociation, with *forged Evidence*, as well as *ſecretly* by Cabals to raiſe a *Rebellion*; and had even an *Army* preparing to have *reſcued* the Regicide!

Q. How did Queen *Elizabeth* now conduct herſelf towards the reſt of her Neighbours abroad?

A. The

A. The Dutch Provinces, having newly revolted from their Sovereign, the King of *Spain*, and being reduc'd to a Diſtreſſed State, by the Aſſaſſination of the Prince of *Orange*, offered firſt to put themſelves under the Protection of *France:* But that Kingdom, diſtracted by the Puritans on the one Side, and the *Holy League* on the other, being diſabled to ſupport them, they offered their Sovereignty to the Queen of *England*. And, tho' ſhe ſeemed at firſt to decline that Offer, ſhe gave them ſo powerful an Aſſiſtance, as, from *poor and diſtreſſed States*, enabled them to become HIGH AND MIGHTY! So that, in 1609, *Spain* renouncing its Claim of Sovereignty over them, they have ſince been treated with as a *Free* and Independent State. And, *Elizabeth*, being jealous of all the *Popiſh* Princes, made no Scruple, at the ſame Time, to aid the *Hugonots* in *France*, and the *Calviniſts* of *Geneva*, againſt their reſpective Sovereigns, tho' ſhe kept a ſtrict Eye over thoſe of the ſame Party at home.

Q. What became of the Queen of *Scots* at laſt?

A. After various Intrigues, by Treaties and otherwiſe, when ſhe had made ſuch PROPOSALS to regain her Liberty, that Queen *Elizabeth* declared herſelf *ſo well ſatisfied, that ſhe had* NOTHING MORE *to demand*, ſome Artifices were ſtill uſed to elude it. At laſt, an ASSOCIATION was form'd againſt her, (with *Leiceſter* at the Head of it, who is ſaid to have endeavour'd to have made her away ſecretly by *Poiſon* or any *other* Means,) which Aſſociation was made a Parliamentary Act, in 1584, under Colour of the *Safety* of Queen *Elizabeth:* A Plot was again laid to have ſurpriz'd *her Son*, and to bring *him* off into *England*, in 1585: And a Reſolution taken to

put

put *her* to Death on the firſt Pretence; upon which, ſeveral Agents were ſet to work, by Secretary *Walſingham*, to carry Letters to and fro, and to *make* Diſcoveries of ſecret Plots, in her Favour, againſt Queen *Elizabeth*. Upon this, Queen *Mary*'s Money and Papers were ſeiz'd, and ſeveral of her Correſpondents executed, in *Sept.* 1586. A Commiſſion iſſued to ſeveral *Engliſh* Peers and Judges, (ſome of them alſo her declared *Enemies*) before whom ſhe was formally arraign'd and tried at *Fotheringhay* in *Northamptonſhire* (upon a Statute made *on Purpoſe*) 14 *Oct.* To plead her being an *independent Sovereign*, and not ſubject to any earthly Juriſdiction, did not avail her, any more than her repeated Proteſtations, of her not having attempted any Thing, but what was juſtifiable, in order to her regaining her *Liberty!* *Copies* of ſeveral Letters (but no Originals) were read againſt her; purely to render her *odious* to the People: And the *Examinations* of divers Perſons admitted as Evidence, *without* producing the Parties themſelves, *Face to Face*, to teſtify againſt her; tho' this was declared *eſſential* to ſuch Proceedings, even by an Act of Parliament of this very Reign! In a Word, tho' the unhappy Queen was denied the Aſſiſtance of any *Council*, even in Points of *Law*, yet ſhe defended her Life, and Honour, with great Strength of Reaſon, and Preſence of Mind, and with a becoming Air of Majeſty: And, tho' the whole Proceſs was manifeſtly *irregular* and arbitrary, yet the Commiſſioners were pleaſed to pronounce her guilty: Whereupon, all the Citizens of *London* were ordered to make BONEFIRES, and to ring their BELLS for 24 Hours together; and both Houſes of *Parliament*, under a *Puritanical* Influence, were brought to addreſs

addeſs Queen *Elizabeth* (*ſeemingly* againſt her Inclination) to diſpatch the fatal Warrant. After many *Shews* of affected Reluctancy, and much *Fineſſe* of Court-Artifice, (notwithſtanding ſome plain Intimations of a Deſire to make her *away privately*, to ſkreen herſelf from the Odium of it) Secretary *Daviſon* (newly promoted *on Purpoſe*) by Queen *Elizabeth*'s written Order, *ſecretly* paſſed the Warrant; and ſent it away for Execution, by the Advice of the Privy-Council. Between 1 *Feb.* the Date of it, and the Execution, there paſſed a whole Week: During which Time, Queen *Elizabeth* ſeemed unreſolv'd; but nevertheleſs, took Care not to prevent it. Thus, the moſt *charming Head, that ever wore a Crown*, was barbarouſly cut off by the common Hangman, 8 *Feb.* 1586 in the 45th Year of her Age, and the 19th of her Impriſonment, without being allow'd the ordinary Favour of her *ghoſtly Father*, to aſſiſt her in the Preparation of her *Soul*, or her *Women*, to take a decent Care of her *Body!* to the great Regret of of all Hearts ſuſceptible of Humanity! the laſting Reproach of a Princeſs of her own Sex and Blood! the Scandal of the *Proteſtant* Name! the Horror of all crown'd Heads, at ſuch a dangerous *Precedent* (as in effect it proved to her Grandſon, King *Charles* I.) and the Aſtoniſhment of the whole World! Notwithſtrnding which, ſhe behaved with all imaginable Decency, and died like a CHRISTIAN and a QUEEN.

Q. How was this *unprecedented* Act looked upon abroad?

A. With Horror and a juſt Indignation. King *James* (now the *undoubted* Sovereign of *Scotland*) refuſed to ſee the *Engliſh* Ambaſſador, and expreſſed

preſſed a lively Reſentment: King *Henry* III. of *France* had diſpatched an Ambaſſador Extraordinary, with ſtrong Remonſtrances againſt the proceeding to Execution: And King *Philip* of *Spain* prepared for an Invaſion, with his *Invincible Armada*. In the mean while, Queen *Elizabeth*, artfully caſting the whole Blame upon *Daviſon*, and endeavouring thereby to excuſe herſelf, (as if any of her Miniſters of State DURST have play'd ſuch a Tragedy *without her Knowledge* and Authority!) and at the ſame Time, the Conſideration, that the then diſtracted State of *Scotland* was more likely to be ruin'd by a Rupture with *England*, than to procure a *juſt Revenge*, that Prince found himſelf oblig'd to ſmother his Reſentment, and to carry it towards *Elizabeth*, as if he had been convinc'd that all her Excuſes were true.

Q. Did not the *Preſbyterians* in *Scotland*, triumph over the Grave of their Sovereign?

A. Undoubtedly. For, when the Proceedings in *England* were beginning againſt her, and they were requir'd to recommend her to God's Protection in their public Devotions, they abſolutely *refuſed* that common Office of Humanity, which Chriſtian Charity would have performed, even for a *Heathen* in the like Circumſtances. And, with like Spirit, did they refuſe to give *God Thanks*, when their King himſelf was providentially deliver'd from the traiterous Conſpiracy, of the *Gowry*'s, 5 *Auguſt*, 1600.

Q. What became of the *Spaniſh* Armada?

A. The Fleet ſailed, conſiſting of 130 great Ships, with 19,000 Soldiers, beſides Seamen, and other Preparations; who were to have been joined by other 25,000 from *Flanders*, in order to a Decent in *England*. The Queen had prepared

about

about 100 Ships well mann'd, in proper Stations; and a good Army of regular Soldiers, beſides the *Militia*, among whom ſhe ſhewed herſelf with an Air of Maſculine Courage. But, tho' the *Pope* had furniſh'd *Philip* with a conſecrated Banner, and freſh Bulls, as if he had been engaged in an Expedition againſt an Heathen Nation; yet *Providence* defended *England* from that Invaſion; the Enemy's Fleet being ſhatter'd, and diſperſed by Sea-Fights and Storms, wherein 32 of their Ships and above 10,000 Men, were taken or deſtroy'd, *A. D.* 1588. Nor did Queen *Elizabeth* leave this Inſult unreveng'd; For (beſides the Aſſiſtance ſhe gave to the *French* and *Dutch*, againſt *Spain*, and the Damage done to the *Spaniſh* Trade in the *Weſt-Indies*) ſhe ſent out a gallant Fleet, in 1596, which entering the Ports of *Cadiz* and *Port Real*, took and deſtroy'd the Towns, with many Ships, *&c.* to the Value of 20,000,000 of Ducats. Soon after which, King *Philip* hoped to ſurprize her, with another great Fleet; but that was alſo diſperſed by a Storm: And yet, he did not ceaſe his Attempts againſt her, in *England* and *Ireland*, 'till his Death, 13 *Sept.* 1598.

Q. Were the Subjects of *England* quiet at home, during theſe Troubles from abroad?

A. No. Whenever the *Jeſuits* were engaged in any Plots, the *Puritans* (who, by the Encouragement of their Patron *Leiceſter*, were grown to an intolerable degree of Inſolence) took that Opportunity to renew their Attacks, by their ſecret *Cabals*, and numerous *Libels*, full of ſchiſmatical and ſeditious Principles, againſt the Eſtabliſhment both in Church and State; 'till at laſt they forced the Government to reſtrain them by a ſtricter Rein of Diſcipline.

Q. How were the *Puritan Diſſenters* proceeded againſt in thoſe Days?

A. Some of them, for their Heterodox Doctrines, were proceeded againſt by the Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſioners, in the High-Commiſſion-Court: Some, in the Star-Chamber, for Miſbehaviour: Others of them, for ſeditious Practices and rebellious Principles, were proſecuted in the Secular-Courts; ſome of whom, were rack'd or hang'd, and many of them impriſon'd or baniſh'd.

Q. How did King *James* ſtand affected to the Men of this Spirit?

A. As he had from his Childhood been bred up among them; ſo, during his Minority, they had their full Swing of Power, ſo far as even to aboliſh *Epiſcopacy* in *Scotland*, and to eſtabliſh a *Novel Preſbyterian* Party in its Place. But, when his Judgment grew mature, he diſcovered among them ſo much Error and Prejudice, Spiritual Pride and Inſolence, Diſaffection and Diſobedience to lawful Authority, as naturally gave him a Diſguſt to their Principles and Practices. And thereupon, as the King became inclin'd to reſtore Epiſcopacy, as the *only Regular* Way to a true Reformation, their Paſſions and Prejudices provoked them to brand his Majeſty with being *Popiſhly-affected:* With which groundleſs Imputation, ſome Authors (of much leſs real Affection, both to Church and State) are not aſham'd to load his Memory, even *to this Day*; as if every one muſt, of Courſe, be *Popiſhly affected*, who does not favour a *Mobb-Reformation*, and a *Fanatical Diſcipline!* However, by now inclining to a proper Medium, between Popery on the one Hand, and Preſbytery on the other, this King henceforward preſerved a fair Underſtanding

ſtanding with Queen *Elizabeth*; to whom he was the *next undoubted Heir*, tho' ſhe never would declare herſelf as to the Right of Succeſſion, 'till ſhe was on her Death-Bed.

Q. When did ſhe die?

A. 24 *March*, 1602, in the 70th Year of her Age, and 45th of her Reign; having ſome Time labour'd under a deep *Melancholy*, and been deſerted (as uſual) by many of her Courtiers, to adore the riſing Sun.

Q. What was her true Character?

A. Tho' that may be collected in the main, from the Particulars before-mentioned, (which ſhew her to have inherited many of the Qualities, as well as Temper, of her Father *Henry* VIII.) it muſt be acknowledg'd, that ſhe was a Princeſs of great Endowments by *Nature*, improv'd by a ſuitable Education, beyond the uſual Degrees acquired by thoſe of her Sex; that ſhe had all the Arts and Qualities requiſite to make her Subjects happy, and conſequently to ſecure herſelf of (the only firm Settlement) the Affections of her People; being remarkably careful of their true Intereſt, ſparing of their Purſes, and *affectedly* engaging in all her Expreſſions. But, the deplorable Havock then made in the Revenues of the *Church*, (thoſe of the rich Biſhoprick of *Ely* being kept in *her own* Hands, during a Vacancy of near 20 Years, and thoſe of *Oxford*, for almoſt her whole Reign, enjoy'd by favourite *Courtiers*, beſides many other *ſacrilegious* Alienations) caſt a dark Cloud over the fair Face of her glorious Reformation: Which, together with her Uſurpation of a Power over the Life and Liberty of the Queen of *Scots*, againſt whom ſhe had conceiv'd an irreconcilable Enmity, as being her *Rival* in Reputation, and much *ſuperior* in

Beauty,) expoſed her Memory to a CENSURE, never to be diſcharg'd.

xliv. 24. JAMES I.

Q. Who ſucceeded Queen *Elizabeth?*

A. James Stuart, King of *Scotland*, by the Name of *James* I. of *England*, and VI. of *Scotland*; on whoſe Acceſſion, this whole Iſland was happily united, under the common Name of *Great-Britain.*

Q. What was his Title to this Throne?

A. As being immediately deſcended from *Margaret*, the Elder Siſter of *Henry* VIII. by *James* IV. King of *Scotland*, conſequently the NEXT HEIR of the Blood-Royal of this Realm. For, in his Perſon did concenter all the ſeveral Pretences of Right to the Crown of *England*, which could be derived from the ſeveral different Races of Kings, that had ever had the Government of this Iſland; ſo that the Family of STUART had a clearer Title to the Crown, than any Sovereign-Houſe in *Europe* can boaſt.

Q. Did this King meet with no Obſtacle in his Way to the *Engliſh* Throne?

A. Yes. For, tho' his *Fanatical* Enemies miſrepreſent him as a Favourer of *Popery*, yet, the wiſer Papiſts themſelves knew the contrary: And therefore, their *Politicians*, encourag'd by Pope *Clement* VIII. endeavoured all they could to EXCLUDE him, before the Death of Queen *Elizabeth*; as well, as to DEPRIVE him of his Right, after the Demiſe of the Crown, and to promote the Lady *Arabella Stuart*, a remote Relation. Thus, *Watſon* and *Clarke*, two Seminary Prieſts, with others, (*Papiſts* and *Puritans*,) who had conſpired againſt this King, after his Ac-

Acceſſion, but before his *Coronation*, (as if he could not be completely a *King* 'till he was *crown'd!*) were attainted of *Treaſon* and executed; as were alſo ſeveral others afterwards for the *Gun-Powder-Plot*.

Q. But was there no Objection to his Title, in Point of *Law?*

A. King *Henry* VIII. in his laſt Will, had utterly paſſed over the Elder Family of the *Stuarts*, and ſettled the Succeſſion on that of his *younger* Siſter, who had married *Brandon*, Duke of *Suffolk*. But, notwithſtanding that *Will* was founded on an expreſs Act of Parliament, it was deemed ſuch a *Breach* upon the *natural* Right of Succeſſion, as was in itſelf a meer NULLITY; and as ſuch was not honour'd with the leaſt Regard. On the contrary, the THREE ESTATES of *England*, in a full and free Parliament, *as a Memorial to all Poſterity*, did recognize, and declare themſelves, BOUND *by the Laws of God and Man* to acknowledge, that the Imperial Crown did, *by inherent Birthright, and lawful and undoubted Succeſſion*, deſcend to King *James*, as being *lineally, juſtly, and lawfully*, NEXT *and ſole Heir of the Blood Royal:* And thereunto they did, moſt humbly and faithfully, *oblige and ſubmit themſelves, their Heirs and Poſterities*, unto the laſt Drop of their Blood; which Act of Parliament, may moſt properly be called THE ORIGINAL CONTRACT, ſince there is no other to be found amongſt all our Records.

Q. How ſoon did he (in Perſon) take Poſſeſſion of the *Engliſh* Throne?

A. He ſet out from *Scotland*, 6 *April*, 1603, and, after a Month ſpent in Royal Entertainments by the Way, was joyfully receiv'd in *London*, 7 *May*, and ſolemnly *crown'd*, 25 *July*.

Q. What was the firſt Affair of Conſequence after this?

A. A ſolemn *Conference*, or Diſputation, held at *Hampton-Court*, before the King and his Courtiers: Wherein, certain *Biſhops*, and other Clergy, did ſo ſolidly defend the Church of *England*, againſt all the Objections and Cavils of ſeveral of the moſt eminent of the *Puritans*, that the latter were put to Silence, and promiſed to acquieſce; tho' no Arguments or Conviction could ever put an End to the DISSENTIONS of their Party.

Q. Did not this King then take other Methods, to reduce them to Obedience and Conformity?

A. No. He neglected to execute the Laws of his Predeceſſor, Queen *Elizabeth*, which, had almoſt ſuppreſs'd them: And, by that Exceſs of *Clemency*, ſuffered them to grow ſo powerful, as once actually to overturn the Eſtabliſhment, both in Church and State, and more than once to *endanger* it, after a happy Reſtoration.

Q. What was that you called the *Gun-Powder-Plot?*

A. The *Papiſts* and *Puritans*, finding themſelves equally diſappointed in their Hopes of a *Toleration*, (from which they propoſed to themſelves mutual Advantages) ſome *Zealots* among the former, contrived to undermine the Parliament-Houſe, and to *blow it up*, when the King and Prince, with the *Three Eſtates*, were next to aſſemble there together. To this Purpoſe, they had hired a large Cellar under it, and furniſh'd it by Night, with 36 Barrels of Powder, cover'd with Faggots, *&c.* In the mean Time, a very obſcure Letter, ſent to the Lord *Monteagle*, gave Occaſion to a Suſpicion; and thereupon

upon, a Search being made a few Hours before the intended Blaſt, the Plot was diſcover'd, 5 *Nov.* 1605, *(Old Style)* ſeveral of the Conſpirators taken and executed, and THAT DAY made a *Thankſgiving* Yearly, FOR EVER.

Q. What Precautions were taken, to guard againſt the like Dangers for the future?

A. An *Oath* of Allegiance was enacted: Whereby the Subjects were requir'd to ſwear, *to bear Faith and true Allegiance to* King *James*, and HIS HEIRS (he being the undoubted, rightful and lawful King of this Realm;) and to renounce and *abjure, as impious and heretical*, the *damnable Doctrine and Poſition* of *depoſing* or *murdering Princes*, &c. And this Oath of *Allegiance* was to be the Teſt of *Loyalty*, as that of *Supremacy* was a Teſt againſt *Popery*; and thoſe who refuſed either of theſe Securities to the Church and State, were called *Recuſants*, and made obnoxious to various Penalties.

Q. Were theſe Penalties inflicted with Rigour?

A. No. It is true, after King *Henry* IV. of *France* was aſſaſſinated, in the Streets of *Paris*, by *Ravaillac*, 3 *May*, 1610, King *James* thought it high Time to baniſh the *Jeſuits*, and and to forbid all *Recuſants* to come near his Court: But, ſuch was the *Clemency* inherent to him and his Family, that very few were made Examples of Severity to either.

Q. In what Condition was the Church now in *Scotland?*

A. The King had in a great Meaſure recover'd it out of the Hands of the *Presbyterians*: And now, to *reſtore Epiſcopacy* (which thoſe *Fanatical Reformers* had aboliſhed) three BISHOPS Elect, of whom Archbiſhop *Spottiſwood* was one,

were ſent for to Court, and conſecrated *here*, 21 *Oct.* 1610, to qualify and enable them to propagate their Order in *that* Country. And, in 1616, a General Aſſembly at *Aberdeen* agreed, to have a LITURGY compiled for the Uſe of that Church; and yet, it was treated *there* worſe than the *Alcoran*, about 20 Years afterwards.

Q. What paſſed moſt remarkable at Court the while?

A. Frederic, Elector *Palatine*, came over, in *Oct.* 1612, to *marry* the Princeſs *Elizabeth*: But, in the mean Time, the Prince of *Wales* died, 6 *Nov.* in the 19th Year of his Age; which put a Stop to the Marriage, 'till 14 *Feb.* And *Charles* Duke of *York*, being now *Heir apparent*, was afterwards created Prince of *Wales*, in 1616.

Q. What was the next remarkable Occurrence?

A. The young Earl of *Eſſex*, and Lady *Frances Howard*, Daughter of the Earl of *Suffolk*, had been married, in 1606; but the Bridegroom being then only in his 15th, and the Bride in her 13th Year, he was ſent abroad to travel, 'till they were both more ripe for Conſummation. At his Return, in 1610, he found the Lady a perfect *Beauty*, admir'd by all the Court; but withal, ſo blown up with *Flattery*, that ſhe received him with great Coolneſs, which coſt him a dangerous Sickneſs. Her Averſion was ſuſpected to be the Effect of a ſecret Paſſion ſhe had conceived for *Carr*, Viſcount *Rocheſter*, who had then a great Aſcendant at Court. But, not being able to reſiſt the Authority of her Father and Spouſe, ſhe is ſuppoſed to have applied to unlawful *Arts*, to fruſtrate the Hopes of her enamour'd Huſband, and to gratify her own Paſſion for-

or the other, who as yet was ignorant of it. However, tho' they cohabited three Years together, the Marriage was never conſummated. Her Caſe, being made known to *Rocheſter*, had the Succeſs ſhe deſired. A *Divorce* was ſolicited, to make Way for her ſecond Marriage. Sir *Thomas Overbury*, his Confidant, having diſſuaded his Friend *Rocheſter* from the Proceeding, was treacherouſly confined in the Tower, and there poiſon'd, by the Influence of the revengeful Woman. In the mean Time, the firſt Marriage with *Eſſex* being diſſolv'd, by a Court of *Delegates*, in 1613, the ſecond with *Rocheſter* (now created Earl of *Somerſet*) ſpeedily enſued. But, *Providence* blaſted all their projected Happineſs. *Overbury*'s Murder was diſcover'd by one of the Inſtruments, in 1615. The Accomplices were brought to Trial and Conviction; of whom ſeveral were executed: But *Somerſet*, and his Lady, had the Favour of *Reprieves*, 'till 1624, when they were both *pardon'd*. And now *Villers* (afterwards Duke of *Buckingham*) became the Prime Miniſter and Favourite, 'till his Death.

Q. What paſſed now of moſt Conſequence in the Church of *England?*

A. Anthony de Dominis, Archbiſhop of *Spalato*, a Prelate of great Learning, and conſecrated with all the cuſtomary Forms and Ceremonies of the Church of *Rome*, quitted his See, and coming into *England*, in 1616, joined himſelf to *our Communion*. Here he actually aſſiſted in conferring the *Epiſcopal Character* on ſome of our Biſhops; and particularly, on two of thoſe who were Conſecrators of Biſhop LAUD. So that, from *this* Time, at leaſt, our Popiſh Adverſaries muſt allow our Biſhops to have had an undoubted

EPISCOPAL SUCCESSION, whatever frivolou Objections they may pretend to make againſt that of Archbiſhop *Parker*.

Q. What became of the Archbiſhop of *Spalato* after this?

A. By the Artifices of the Pope and the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador, he was decoy'd to *Rome*, in 1622, where he was put into the *Inquiſition*, as a *Heretic*, and died, in 1625.

Q. What elſe was remarkable in this Reign?

A. The King granted an Indulgence for innocent *Recreations* on the *Sundays*, *after* Divine Service duly perform'd, in 1618. This was called *The Book of* SPORTS: The Revival of which, ſome Years afterwards (tho' with many proper Reſtrictions) ſerved the *Puritans* for a freſh Occaſion of Clamour, in the next Reign; but NOW, there ſeems to be little or no Offence taken at any *Sports* or Diverſions, tho' excercis'd without *any* Authority, unleſs it be that of BAD EXAMPLES!

Q. Had this King no Wars to interrupt his Peace?

A. The former Part of his Reign was free from any Wars: But now, the Serenity of his Peace began to be very much clouded. For, beſides the *Death* of his Queen, 2 *March*, 1618, his Son-in-Law, *Frederic*, the Elector *Palatine*, engaged in a very unfortunate Enterprize, and, by graſping at *another's* Crown, loſt his *own* Hereditary Dominions.

Q. How was that?

A. The *Calviniſts* of *Bohemia*, amidſt many repeated Profeſſions of Duty to their Sovereign *Matthias*, the Emperor, met in a General Aſſembly, to complain of *Evil Counſellors*. Thus, being aſſembled, (tho' without *his* Authority,) and

and ſtrengthen'd by the Intereſt of ſome *Proteſtant* Princes of the Empire, they proceeded to expoſtulatory Terms concerning *Grievances*, boldly threatning to exert themſelves in the *Field*, againſt their Enemies! By theſe Menaces, back'd with an Army, they extorted a Conceſſion for a *Toleration*. Afterwards, on Allegations of the Danger of their Religion and Liberties, they openly renounced Allegiance to the ſucceeding Emperor *Ferdinand*, (notwithſtanding they had ſolemnly recogniz'd and crown'd *him* for their future Sovereign, to ſucceed *Matthias*;) and, after an Offer of the Crown, firſt to the Elector of *Saxony* (who refuſed it,) they made a ſecond, to the Elector *Palatine*; who, without Scruple, accepted *their Election*, made 26 *Auguſt*, 1619, and was crown'd, 4 *November*.

Q. How did King *James* look upon this *Revolution?*

A. As a downright USURPATION. It is true, *Frederic*, out of a mere *Compliment*, ſent to the King for *Advice*; but was too fond of the dazzling Gem, to wait for *his* Opinion. The King (tho' much ſolicited, by thoſe who thought the Word *Proteſtant* valid enough to warrant any Thing,) was ſo diſguſted, that he refuſed Audience to the Envoy; and never would give his Son-in-Law the Title of *King*, or ſuffer him to be prayed for, *as ſuch*, in the Church.

Q. What was the Event of this Enterprize?

A. Frederic was put to the *Bann* of the Empire: And his Army was defeated, in the Battle of *Prague*, 8 *Nov.* 1620. Upon this, he fled, with his Conſort, into *Holland*; and the Imperialiſts, ſoon after, making themſelves Maſters of the *Palatinate*, the Electoral Dignity was tranſferr'd to the Duke of *Bavaria*. However, tho'

the King had more Honour and *Conſcience*, than to ſupport a Title, which he thought *uſurp'd*; yet, he had ſo great a Concern for his Daughter and her Children, as to leave nothing untried, that might reſtore them to their juſt *Hereditary* Country: And it was to *this* End, for the Recovery of the *Palatinate*, that he hearkened to the Offer of a *Match* between the Prince his Son, and the *Infanta* of *Spain*; which was *then* thought the only Way to bring the Houſe of *Auſtria* to Reaſon.

Q. What Progreſs was made towards that Match?

A. After a tedious Formality of negociating, for ſeveral Years, the Lord *Digby* (now created Earl of *Briſtol*) having brought the Treaty of Marriage to a Point, the Prince went over privately, (through *France*) to *Spain*, in Perſon, attended by *Buckingham*, and two others, 17 *Feb.* 1622. There he was treated with all public *Ceremonies* due to him: But, for ſome *private* Reaſons he had to queſtion the *Sincerity* of that Court, he was glad to leave it on fair Terms, and happily returned to *England*, without the leaſt Tincture of the Religion of that Country, 5 *October*, 1623. After which, the *Spaniſh* Match was no longer thought of.

Q. What was the Conſequence of this Breach?

A. A new Treaty of *Marriage* with *France*; and Preparations for a *War*, in order to the Recovery of the *Palatinate*. But neither of theſe had their Effect during the Life of this King.

Q. When did he die?

A. On the 27th of *March*, 1625, in the 60th Year of his Age, of an *Ague*, which croſſed the Proverb. But, the *Diſaffected* are pleaſed to inſinuate, as if he had been *poiſon'd*; tho', on a proper

proper Inquiry, no Symptoms of that Kind could be diſcover'd.

Q. What Character is given of him?

A. Different, according to the Affection or Prejudice of the Authors. The *Royaliſts*, generally, applaud him as another *Solomon*, for the great Compaſs and Extent of his *Genius*, the Strength of his Memory, the Quickneſs of his Apprehenſion, the Depth of his Penetration, and his ready, methodical and perſuaſive Manner in ſpeaking; as if in *Him* had been united, the Sovereignty of a *Prince*, the Illumination of a *Prieſt*, and the Learning of a *Philoſopher*. On the other Hand, thoſe who are *Diſaffected* to his Family and its Intereſt, cenſure him as a meer *Pedant*, and will ſcarce allow him to have had a competent Share of either Religion, Wiſdom, Senſe, or Honeſty. The Truth is, theſe *partial* Writers repreſent him as a *Papiſt* in his Heart, becauſe he was not a Puritan; and a *Pedant* in his Writings, becauſe his Arguments and Principles were not adapted to *their* viciated Taſte and Palate: In a Word, they deny him to have been truly either a ſound *Proteſtant*, or a good *Catholic*; and for *this only* Reaſon, becauſe he ſupported the CHURCH of *England*, againſt *Popery* on the one hand, and *Fanaticiſm* on the other.

Q. What other memorable Things happened, within the Period of his Reign?

A. The Creation of *Baronets* in *England*, 22 *May*, 1611, of whom Sir *Nicholas Bacon*, of *Redgrave* in *Suffolk*, was the firſt. The bringing the *New-River-Water* from *Ware* to *London*, by Sir *Hugh Middleton*, in 1614. A Journey and Voyage, from *Southwark* to *Calais*, and back again, performed in 17 Hours, by *Bernard Calvert*, 17

July

July 1620. And the inhuman Tortures, and *Maſſacre* of the *Engliſh* in AMBOYNA, in the *Eaſt-Indies*, by the *Dutch*, to deprive us of our Trade to the *Spice-Iſlands* there, in *Feb.* 1623.

XLV. 25 CHARLES I.

Q. Who ſucceeded King *James?*

A. His only ſurviving Son and Heir, King *Charles* I. in the 25th Year of his Age; being born, 19 *Nov.* 1600.

Q. In what Condition did he find his Affairs at his Acceſſion?

A. He was under an Engagement to make *War* againſt the Emperor, and *Spain*, for the Recovery of the *Palatinate*; but found his Exchequer exhauſted, and in Debt. And tho' he repreſented theſe *Circumſtances* to his firſt Parliament, in a moſt moving and truly *Gracious Speech*, ſuch a *Spirit* had poſſeſſed them (through the prevailing Influence of the *Puritans*,) that he ſoon perceived, the *Commons* would not aſſiſt him with any proportionable Supply, tho' for an End, which they pretended to have much at Heart, and undertaken by *their Advice* to the late King, but what he muſt dearly purchaſe, at the Price of his Royal *Prerogative*. For, before they could have any Experience of *his own* Adminiſtration, they attacked him with loud Complaints of GRIEVANCES, which were either *imaginary*, or ſuch as were chargeable on the *late* Reign; and a great Clamour againſt *Evil-Counſellors*, *Arbitrary-Power*, and *Popery*, the common Pretences of Sedition! Neither would they *enter* upon the Conſideration of the *King's Service*, 'till their alledged *Grievances* were *firſt* redreſſed.

Q. How

Q. How did the King reſent this great Affront?

A. As a *King* ought to do ſuch Management of *Subjects*, who, after preſſing for a *War*, had thus broke all his Meaſures for the firſt Campaign, and render'd the Beginning of his Reign inauſpicious. Therefore, after an Adjournment to *Oxford* (to avoid the Plague then raging in *London*) he diſſolved them, 12 *Aug.* after a very ſhort Seſſion.

Q. What became of his *Match* with Madame of *France*?

A. It was ſolemniz'd, by Proxy, at *Paris*, 1 *May*. Soon after which, the Queen, conducted by the Duke of *Buckingham*, landed at *Dover*; where the King himſelf met her, and conſummated the Marriage, at *Canterbury*, 14 *June*, 1625, and returned to *London* the 16th, two Days before his opening the Parliament. And their *Coronation* was ſolemniz'd, 2 *Feb.* following.

Q. What was that Queen's *juſt* Character?

A. A Lady of moſt excellent Endowments: 'Who aſſumed to Herſelf nothing in His Good 'Fortune but the Joy, and in His Evil bore an 'equal Share; for She reverenced *Him*, not his 'Greatneſs.'

Q. How did the King provide himſelf with Money to carry on the common Cauſe?

A. By LOANS, of 20 or 30l. apiece, of ſuch of his Subjects as were able, and willing to truſt to the King's Honour for Repayment. And even *this* was voted a GRIEVANCE, by thoſe *Bouteſeaus*, who would neither *ſerve* their King, nor ſuffer *others* to do it.

Q. Had the King the like Difficulties to encounter with the next Parliament?

A. Tho'

A. Tho' he ſhewed his Deſire of a good Underſtanding with his People, by convening his ſecond Parliament, 6 *Feb.* 1625, yet *theſe* were no leſs refractory than the former. Inſtead of conſidering the King and Kingdom's common Intereſt, the Commons formed themſelves into ſeveral *Committees:* One of which (with the Incendiary *Pym* at its Head) muſt be called a *Committee for Religion:* As if their having ſate, a few Days, in the former Parliament, in the *Divinity-School* at *Oxford*, had inſpired them with proper Qualifications to determine of all Points and Controverſies of RELIGION; Or, as if a few of the People's *Lay-Repreſentatives* in the Houſe of Commons, in a Committee unprecedented, were more competent Judges of Matters of *Faith*, than the Biſhops and Repreſentatives of the whole *Clergy* in a regular *Convocation*, aſſembled according to the Conſtitution! However, this ſelf-conſtituted Committee (tho' a greater *Innovation* than thoſe which they pretended to reform) took upon them ſuch an Extent of *Juriſdiction*, as, in a few Years overturned the eſtabliſhed *Church*, and perſecuted the Profeſſors of the *true Religion*, beyond all Example! The ſame Houſe, in their Debates of *Grievances* (for the Redreſs of which, they would not depend on the King's repeated Promiſes) attacked the King, in the Perſon of his Miniſters; ſome of the Members audaciouſly abuſing their Liberty of Speech, by ſeditious *Menaces*, in which they were countenanced by the Majority.

Q. What was the Conſequence of theſe Proceedings?

A. His Majeſty, finding the public Service clogg'd with affected Delays, and that their Proceedings tended no leſs to the Diſſervice of the *Church*

Church and State, than to *his own* Diſhonour, after trying to no Purpoſe, by gracious Meſſages, and Speeches from the Throne, as well as by Conferences with the Lords, to recall the Commons to a Remembrance of his Service, and their Duty, was forc'd alſo to diſſolve *this* Parliament, 15 *June*, 1626. And thereupon, as before, to require the *Loans* and Benevolence of his better-affected Subjects, according to ancient and authentic Precedents.

Q. Had not the Commons made any Advances towards the neceſſary *Supplies* for his Majeſty's Service?

A. They had made a *Shew* of it, by *voting* Subſidies: But ſtill they refuſed to *paſs* the Subſidy-Bills, 'till they had gain'd their Point, in the Impeachment of the Duke of *Buckingham*; (to which, the Earl of *Briſtol* contributed all *his* Intereſt and Information,) tho' not ſupported with legal *Proof* of any ſingle Miſdemeanor.

Q. Did the King refuſe them Juſtice againſt that Duke?

A. No. The King had conſented to their Proceedings againſt him, and left them to their own Way in it; but only adviſed them to conſider the Seaſon of the Year, and the Danger to which the *public Service* would be expoſed by Loſs of Time: And he had alſo *promiſed* them ſufficient Opportunity for the Examination and *Redreſs* of all their Grievances, ſo ſoon as the public Service was provided for. So that, the only *Queſtion* was, whether the Commons ought not *firſt* to have diſpatch'd the neceſſary Supplies for the Service of his Majeſty and his Allies, and to have relied on his *Royal Word*, for Time to proſecute their Grievances afterwards rather than the *King's Service* ſhould be poſtpon'd to

their

their tedious Formalities of Proſecution, and his Majeſty depend on *their Humour*, for the Support of the Common Cauſe, 'till the Seaſon and Opportunity was loſt. And thus, after all their *affected Zeal* for the Recovery of the *Palatinate*, and the Security of the *Proteſtant* Intereſt abroad, the *Faction* uſed every *Artifice* to diſable their Sovereign to contribute any thing effectually to *either*.

Q. Did the *French* Court do nothing for the King on this Occaſion?

A. So far from it, that they baſely took hold of a very weak Handle for a *Rupture*, thereby the more to embaraſs him.

Q. What was that?

A. Some of the *French Eccleſiaſticks*, who, according to the Treaty of Marriage, attended the Queen, had groſly miſbehaved; even ſo far, as to enjoin her Majeſty a PENANCE, to walk to *Tyburn*, and there to perform certain *penitential* Devotions, where ſome of the *Popiſh Prieſts* had been executed! The King, reſenting this unheard of Abuſe of Diſcipline, paid them their Salaries, and ſent them home, without any *other* Puniſhment. And, tho' the Caſe was fairly repreſented to his Brother-in-Law, *Lewis* XIII. by the *Engliſh* Ambaſſador, that Court looked upon the Diſcharge, as a *Breach* of the Marriage-Articles; which cauſed an open *War* between the two Crowns for ſome Time, and *ſecret Practices* in the *French* Court, againſt our King, in *concert* with his Rebel-Subjects, to the End of his Life.

Q. How was the War proſecuted againſt *France?*

A. By fitting out a *Fleet* under *Buckingham's* Command; which appearing before *Rochel*, in 1627, to bring them *Succours*, when threatened with

with a *Siege*, was oppoſed, and not admitted to enter there, by the *Hugonots*, at that Time, in an *uncommon Fit of Loyalty*: And, after a fruitleſs Attempt upon the Iſle of *Rhee*, the Fleet returned home. But, it was not long, before the *Rochellers*, finding themſelves in Danger from their own King, were glad to *petition* at the *Engliſh* Court for that Succour; which our King was ſo generous not to deny them again, in 1628.

Q. How did he ſupply himſelf with Money for all theſe Expeditions?

A. Still hoping his People would recollect his and their common Intereſt, he reſolved (on the Motion of the Duke of *Buckingham*) to convene a *third* Parliament, 17 *March*, 1627. Theſe, like the foregoing, *voted* ſeveral Subſidies for his Majeſty's Supply, but they obſtinately refuſed to proceed farther than a bare *Vote* (which was of no Manner of Force,) without being *beforehand* gratified in their peremptory Demands; whereby they plainly diſcovered their Reſolution, to *wound* him in the *tendereſt* Part; as if his Royal Word, and repeated Promiſes, had not been worthy of his Subjects Confidence! Notwithſtanding which, ſo gracious was his Majeſty, that he condeſcended to paſs their *Petition of Right* (ſo called) 7 *June*, 1628, tho' they had *obſtinately* refuſed to agree to an Amendment made in it by the Lords, for *leaving entire his Sovereign Power*; and, tho' the Money Bill for his Supply was *poſtpon'd* to the 26th, being the laſt Day of that Seſſion.

Q. What became of *Buckingham*'s Affair?

A. While he was at *Portſmouth*, ready to embark for the Relief of *Rochel*, he was aſſaſſinated, 23 *Aug.* 1628, by *Felton*, induced thereto (as he con-

confeſſed) by the *Declaration* of the *Commons* againſt the Duke, as an *Enemy* to his Country! For which *Enthuſiaſtic Zeal*, the Aſſaſſine had his Reward at the Gallows, but the Duke a *noble Funeral*, as he well deſerved.

Q. Did his Death lay that *Factious* Spirit, which poſſeſſed the Commons?

A. No. Their real Aim had been, through *him* to wound the *King himſelf*. Thus, in their next Seſſion, when *Buckingham* was no more, they fell upon the King's levying the *Cuſtoms* of Tonnage and Poundage on Merchandize; which they would neither admit him a Right to, without the Conſent of Parliament, nor yet, would prepare an *Act* for it, which had NEVER 'till now been diſputed in any Reign. After this, they proceeded to Debates upon the Senſe of the ARTICLES OF RELIGION, by a ſtrange Logic of their own, branding all the moſt *Orthodox* Biſhops and Clergy, whom the King had diſtinguiſh'd with his Favour, with the Odium of *Arminianiſm* and *Popery:* And particularly, *Laud*, *Neile*, *Montague*, and *Coſin*; whom by *this* Time, all *true Sons* of the Church of *England* muſt acknowledge, for the moſt zealous Aſſertors of the TRUE RELIGION, and famous *Confeſſors* for the *proper Rights* of the Church and Crown. In the Heat of which Debates, concerning the *Cuſtoms*, *&c.* the Factious Members inſiſting upon a Queſtion about their *Privileges*, to be put *after* their Speaker, *Finch*, had, by the *King*'s *Order*, adjourn'd the Houſe for a Week, two of them *(Holles* and *Valentine)* held him down by *Force* in the Chair, and others kept the *Doors lock'd*, 'till they had drawn up a riotous Proteſtation, and got it approv'd by the Majority, tho' not without a great Tumult, and

even

even ſome *Blows*. This audacious Inſult obliged the King to diſſolve them, 10 *March*, 1628, and to *commit* ſome of the principal Offenders to the *Tower*; who inſolently pleaded a PRIVILEGE for whatever was ſaid or done in Parliament; as if the bare Election to ſit in St. *Stephen*'s Chapel (by the King's Authority) could give *any* Man Privilege, *againſt* the King himſelf, either to commit *Breach* of the Peace, Mutiny or Treaſon, with Impunity!

Q. What Effect had theſe outragious Inſults?

A. They did not only fill the King's Mind with *juſt Prejudices* againſt the ſo much abuſed Conſtitution of Parliaments, but opened the Eyes of ſeveral worthy Gentlemen, who had voted with them, 'till they found the pretended PATRIOTS, under the popular Name of *Zeal* for the *Proteſtant* Religion, Liberty, and Property, were really purſuing a *Republican* Scheme, to overturn the Conſtitution both in Church and State. Among theſe were, Sir *Thomas Wentworth*, Sir *John Saville*, Sir *Dudley Diggs*, Sir *William Noy*, Sir *Edward Littleton*, and ſome others; who now left the Faction, and afterwards made *ample Amends* to the King for their former *miſtaken* Conduct. On which Occaſion it has been obſerv'd, from dear Experience, that this Nation never knew more Plenty, Proſperity, and Glory, than in thoſe *Ten Years* of this Reign, in which there was NO PARLIAMENT.

Q. What was the Succeſs of the Wars with *France* and *Spain*?

A. The Fleet, prepared for the Relief of *Rochel*, ſailed in *Sep.* 1628, under Command of the Earl of *Lindſey*: But ſo much Time had been loſt, in the unſeaſonable Debates about the Supply, that the Town fell into the Hands of the

French

French King, its Sovereign, after a long and obſtinate Reſiſtance. This was follow'd by a *Peace* with *France*, 14 *April*, 1629, and with *Spain*, 5 *Nov.* 1630. For, *neither* of theſe would concert any Plan of Operations againſt *England*, while they knew, the Feuds *at home* would effectually do *their* Buſineſs, by preventing us from being *United* among ourſelves againſt any foreign Enemy.

Q. What now became of the Affair of the *Palatinate?*

A. Guſtavus Adolphus, King of *Sweden*, in Concert with the Kings of *England* and *France*, made a powerful War upon the Emperor, in 1630. But, the gallant *Swede* being kill'd in the Battle of *Lutzen*, 6 *Nov.* 1632. *Frederic* received not the expected Benefit by that Expedition; and dying ſoon after left his Son *Charles* to purſue his Claim to his *Hereditary* Dominions.

Q. What was the next conſiderable Paſſage at home?

A. The King being now in ſomething like Peace at home, made a Progreſs into *Scotland*, in 1633, where he was ſolemnly crown'd, 18 *June*, and held a Parliament. Here paſſed an Act, in Favour of the King's *Prerogative*, and another concerning *Religion*. But, as neither of *theſe* were agreeable to the *Republicans* and *Fanaticks* in general; ſo, even *ſome* Men, of eminent Stations in the *Church* itſelf, have not been aſham'd to miſrepreſent them as INNOVATIONS in the Kirk, and Subverſions of its *Conſtitution!* Whereas that pretended Conſtitution itſelf was but a *Novelty*, of Yeſterday's Growth, founded in a Mob-Reformation from the primitive Standard, under Pretence of *Zeal againſt Popery*; and all the Alteration now aim'd at, was but to recover

cover it, as near as might be, to an Uniformity with the truly-reformed Church of *England*, according to the *primitive* Pattern.

Q. How were theſe Regulations receiv'd?

A. According to the Spirit and *Prejudices* of the Party. Some were averſe to *any Liturgy*, as ſtinting them in their Affectation of *Extempore* Prayer; others, particularly to that of *England*, as if it had been but an *Engliſh Maſs-Book!* Some were againſt the Diſtinctions of *Habits* of the Clergy, as ſuperſtitious; others, chiefly againſt the *Surplice*, as a Rag of the Whore of *Babylon!* Some were ſo prejudic'd againſt that ancient Banner of the Chriſtian Warfare, the *Croſs*, that they refuſed the Sign of it, even at the Admiſſion of Members into Chriſt's Church and Service, by Baptiſm! And many were ſo *fanatically* mad, as to ſtrike at the very ESSENTIALS of a Church, and to oppoſe *Epiſcopacy* itſelf, as well as all Rites, Ceremonies and Diſcipline, except of their own deviſing!

Q. How was ſuch a Spirit of Oppoſition kept up among Men of Senſe, and in a Chriſtian Country?

A. Not by any good Arguments or Reaſoning, but by the Influence of certain great Men, who, through Pique and Envy, or other ſelf-intereſted Views, did underhand foment and encourage all Occaſions of *Diſſention* and Mutiny; gratifying their private Paſſions at the Expence of the public Tranquility.

Q. What Precautions were taken at home, to guard againſt thoſe growing Evils?

A. LAUD (now promoted to the See of *Canterbury*, 19 *Sept.* 1633) exerted his *Authority*, to *reſtore* the Diſcipline of the Church to ſuch an *Uniformity*, as it had enjoy'd under ſeveral of his worthy

worthy Predeceſſors. But, Archbiſhop *Abbot* having, for many Years, given a Looſe to the Non-conformiſts, they were now become ſo ſtiff-necked and head-ſtrong, that (like Sons of *Belial!*) they would not bear any Yoke of Diſcipline, and ſtopp'd their Ears againſt all Admonitions to the Scripture-Duty of *Obedience* to their lawful Superiors. Thus, *kneeling* at the Holy Communion, wearing a *Surplice*, the Office of *Confirmation*, keeping of *Saints-Days*, *bowing* at the Altar and the Name of *Jeſus*, the placing the Communion-Table, and calling it an *Altar*, and ſuch like, were made Occaſions of Scandal to thoſe WEAK BRETHREN, whoſe tender Conſciences *ſtrained at a Gnat*, but did not ſtick at *ſwallowing a Camel*; never conſidering, that the Commands of LAWFUL SUPERIORS, unleſs *evidently* unlawful in their own Nature, are to be *obeyed for Conſcience-Sake*, (by God's expreſs Authority) under Pain of DAMNATION!

Q. What Cenſures did the Non-Conformiſts paſs upon theſe Uſages?

A. As if they had been *Superſtitious*, *Popiſh*, or even *Anti-Chriſtian*; whereas theſe very Men themſelves did inſiſt to carry the keeping the SABBATH to the very Height of *Judaiſm*; as if our Lord's-Day, or *Sunday*, (which is the *firſt* Day of the Week) muſt neceſſarily be obſerv'd, under the Chriſtian Œconomy, in the very *ſame* Manner, as was preſcrib'd to the *Jews*, in their *peculiar* ceremonial Law, for the Obſervation of the *Saturday*, which is the *ſeventh Day*, and the only *proper Sabboth*.

Q. To what Lengths did the Government now proceed againſt the Non-Conformiſts?

A. Some

A. Some of them were *ſuſpended* by their proper Ordinaries; ſome proſecuted in the *High-Commiſſion*-Court; and a few of the moſt *audacious Incendiaries* underwent the Puniſhment of Mutilation in the *Pillory*, by Sentence of the *Star-Chamber*. Theſe wholeſome Exerciſes of Diſcipline ſerved to raiſe a Clamour of a worſe than *Dioclefian* Perſecution! Tho' none of the Party ſuffered *Suſpenſion* at the *Gallows*, as ſeveral of them did, for the like Crimes, in the Reign of their ſo much-admired Queen *Elizabeth:* And even, in the *moderate* Archbiſhop *Abbot*'s Time, there were *more Sentences* of Suſpenſion, and other Eccleſiaſtical Puniſhments, *every* ſeven Years, than in *all* the ſeven Years of Archbiſhop *Laud*'s Primacy.

Q. What were the *Crimes* to juſtify theſe Severities?

A. To mention but one or two of the moſt notorious; Dr. *Leighton*, a *Scotch* Phyſician, had, during the laſt Parliament, dedicated to them his *Sion's Plea*; wherein he not only ſollicited them to KILL *all the Biſhops, and ſmite them under the fifth Rib*, but called the Queen an *Idolatreſs*, a *Canaanite*, and a Daughter of *Heth*, &c! *William Prynn*, a Lawyer, in his *Hiſtrio-Maſtix*, 1632, did not only write profeſſedly againſt Stage-Plays, Maſques and Dancing, but againſt the *keeping Chriſtmas*, and other public *Feſtivals!* loading the Biſhops and *Clergy* in general, the *Church* Diſcipline and Worſhip, as well as the *Queen* and Court, with Raillery and Reflections, in the moſt *brutiſh* Stile of Satire! And again, in his *News from Ipſwich*, 1636, he ſtiles, the Archbiſhop, *Arch-agent for the Devil*, and the reſt of the Biſhops, *Luciferian Lord-Biſhops, execrable Traytors*, &c! *Henry Burton*,

one of the *London*-Clergy, publiſhed, not only ſeveral virulent Pamphlets (as *Prynn* alſo did) but even *Sermons* full of Schiſm and Sedition! And *John Baſtwick*, a Phyſician, was no leſs notorious for his Libellous *Litanies*, &c! In all which, theſe INCENDIARIES, and many others, ſeemed to imitate (if not to exceed) the Malice and Scurrility of MAR-PRELATE, for which *Penry* was deſervedly HANGED by Queen *Elizabeth*; tho' *theſe* Men (no leſs deſerving it) eſcaped now with their *Lives*, and were afterwards honour'd by the Party, as glorious *Confeſſors!*

Q. How was the King now furniſh'd with Supplies to ſupport him in his Adminiſtration?

A. The factious Behaviour of the Commons in the late Parliaments (who, under a Shew of *Zeal* for the *Proteſtant* Religion, had engaged him in expenſive Wars, for the Recovery of the *Palatinate*, and the Relief of *Rochel*, and yet would not give him the timely Aſſiſtance for *either*) forced his Majeſty upon divers Projects of *Loans*, *Benevolences*, *Ship-Money*, and others, in which, he was *warranted* by numerous Precedents, and the concurrent Opinion and Judgment of his *Judges*. And, however exceptionable *any* of theſe Exerciſes of the Prerogative might be, without a Parliament, conſidering his Circumſtances, none would impute it to an *arbitrary* Diſpoſition in this King himſelf, but ſuch whoſe Prejudices are ſtronger than their Principles.

Q. What was the firſt Occaſion taken of tumultuous Oppoſition to the public Proceedings?

A. The authorizing the *Scotch Liturgy*. Tho' it had been agreed in the laſt Reign to have ſuch a Liturgy drawn up, yet, when it was compiled, by the *Scotch* Biſhops, and approved by

by the King, and began to be uſed in Divine Service, at *Edinburgh*, 23 *July*, 1637, the very Dregs of the PRESBYTERIAN MOB (ſpirited up underhand by their factious Dæmogogues) tumultuouſly interrupted the *Dean*, who officiated in the Deſk, as well as the *Biſhop* in the Pulpit; and purſued them home, to the Peril of their Lives, notwithſtanding all the Authority of the Lords of the Council, Judges, and other Magiſtrates there preſent. And, ſoon after that, another great Rabble outragiouſly aſſaulted the Council and Magiſtrates themſelves: Which, was ſoon followed by a Petition, in the Name of ALL the *Men*, *Women*, *Children and Servants* of *Edinburgh*, againſt the Liturgy; and another from the *Noblemen*, *Gentry*, *Miniſters*, *and Burgeſſes* of the Faction in the ſame City, againſt the Liturgy and Canons.

Q. How were theſe Outrages reſented by the King and his Council?

A. Proclamations were publiſh'd ſuitable to the Occaſion. But, ſome of the Counſellors themſelves (and namely, the Earl of *Traquaire*, Lord Treaſurer of *Scotland*) being *ſecretly* in Concert with the Mutiniers, had artfully puſh'd the Affair to ſuch Extremes, on *purpoſe* to ruin the Biſhops, and embarraſs the Government, ſo that no Regard was had to *Authority*, either in Church or State. And, now alſo, *Carmichael*, the Treaſurer-Depute, *Hope*, the Lord Advocate, and *Hamilton*, the Juſtice-Clerk, declaring themſelves in Favour of the FACTION, the Biſhops were deſerted by all the Council, except Sir *John Hay*, the Clerk-Regiſter.

Q. What Uſe did the Faction make of this Advantage?

Q. They proteſted againſt the Proclamations, formed themſelves into Tables or Claſſes, and engaged together, in a wicked COVENANT, 1 *March*, 1637, without any Colour of Authority. By the meer Force of which, moſt of thoſe who retained the true Principles of *Loyalty* and *Conformity*, were driven to *London* for Refuge: Only four of the Biſhops continued in their Country; of which, *Ramſey*, *Graham*, and *Fairly*, to avoid Perſecution, ſcandalouſly *complied* with the Times, and *renounced* their Order; while *Guthry*, Biſhop of *Murray*, (to *his immortal Honour*) bravely ſtood the Brunt, and bore the loſs of his Liberty and Fortune, for maintaining the Lawfulneſs, and *Eſſential* Rights, of Epiſcopacy to his Death.

Q. What Methods did the King take, to reduce the Covenanters to his Obedience?

A. He unhappily truſted and ſent down the Marquis of *Hamilton*, his High-Commiſſioner, in 1638, with Authority to try the Force of Reaſon, among them. But, theſe GOOD CHRISTIANS! (underhand *encourag'd* by him to perſiſt) roundly told him, *They would ſooner renounce their Baptiſm than the Covenant!* At the ſame Time, they were ſo hardy, as to block up the Caſtle of *Edinburgh*, and to provide themſelves with *Arms*. They peremptorily inſiſted to have a General Aſſembly and Parliament called of their own Stamp, with, or *without* the King's Authority. And, when the Commiſſioner had given Way to the convening them at *Glaſgow*, their Preſbyteries preſumed to *ſummon* the Biſhops to appear before the Aſſembly, as Offenders, in order to their being formally tried, and Epiſcopacy itſelf *aboliſh'd*, by that LEARNED Judicature; whereof ſome of the Members could *neither write*

write nor read! And yet, ſuch (even *Lay-Elders*) were to judge of *Hereſy*, and to pronounce their definitive Sentence on the Doctrines of *Arminius*, &c. When the pack'd Aſſembly met, the Biſhops put into the Commiſſioner's Hand, a *Declinator*, or Proteſtation, againſt the *Juriſdiction* itſelf, as well as againſt the Illegality and Nullity of the *Elections*, and the eſſential Defect of *Qualifications* in the Members elected. Notwithſtanding this, the Aſſembly proceeding arbitrarily in their own Way, without Regard to Reaſon, Law, primitive Uſage, or Authority of of any kind: (Yea, even after the Commiſſioner had, in the King's Name, *diſſolv'd* them, under Pain of *Treaſon*,) they continued their Seſſions every Day, for ſeveral Weeks, 'till they had paſſed *Cenſures* upon the Liturgy, Canons and Ordinal, and the Acts of all former Aſſemblies, contrary to their preſent unprecedented Proceedings, *depoſed* the Biſhops, and *excommunicated* ſuch as refuſed to ſubmit to their pretended Authority! During all which Time, there was, by ſecret Agents, a cloſe CORRESPONDENCE kept up, not only with the diſaffected Party in *England*, but even with Cardinal *Richlieu*, in *France*, to widen the Breach, and render a Reconciliation impracticable: And, in ſhort, raiſed an Army, ſeized *Edinburgh*, and all the *Regalia*.

Q. What was the Conſequence of theſe rebellious Proceedings?

A. What could be done, but to reduce them by ARMS, whom nothing elſe could reclaim? Previous to which, his Majeſty publiſhed a Declaration, to ſatisfy all reaſonable Men, of the Juſtice of his Cauſe. In the Spring, 1639, he marched againſt them with an Army, ſuperior in Number, and well provided. The Covenanted

Scots, under the Command of *Leſlie*, appeared in the Field. But, when the two Armies were in View, the *Scots*, truſting more to their *Friends* among the *Engliſh*, than to their own Arms, petitioned for a Treaty of *Pacification*; which the King was too eaſily perſuaded to grant them, 18 *June*, 1639. For, no ſooner had he diſbanded his Forces, but the faithleſs *Rebels* renewed a Declaration, of their reſolving to *adhere* to their Covenant and former Proceedings. Upon this, the King, inſtead of going in Perſon, to hold a Parliament there, as he intended, ſent *Traquaire*, (by *Hamilton*'s Advice) his Commiſſioner, to repreſent him. The Aſſembly meeting at *Edinburgh*, 12 *Auguſt*, declared *Epiſcopacy* unlawful, confirmed the *Covenant*, and all the late riotous and ſchiſmatical Proceedings: And, in the Parliament, which met 31 *Aug.* all the Acts of the Aſſembly were confirmed; and, to make up an Appearance of the *Three Eſtates*, inſtead of the Biſhops, who, by the Conſtitution, made one *eſſential* Part, (and the *firſt*) of the Three Eſtates, they deviſed a Third, of the *Lairds* or Barons. To all which Proceedings, and others highly derogatory to the Crown, the Lord Commiſſioner, *Traquaire*, ſurprizingly aſſented in Form, directly contrary to his Majeſty's Inſtructions. After the Prorogation of the *Scots* Parliament, their Deputies being ſent up to Court, to juſtify their Conduct, had thereby an Opportunity ſecretly to CONCERT Meaſures with their diſaffected Brethren here; who (as well as their Friends in *France* and *Holland*) *encouraged* them to renew their Rebellion, with Aſſurance of a powerful Party to *join* them.

Q. What Effect had this Concert?

A. The

A. The *Scots* actually invaded *England*, the next Year, with another Army, and made themſelves Maſters of *Durham* and *Newcaſtle*, while the King was advanced ſo near as *York*, to chaſtiſe them: But, having Reaſon to ſuſpect the Loyalty of ſome of his Troops, (or rather deceiv'd by ſome of thoſe about him,) he was overperſuaded to condeſcend to a Treaty at *Rippon*, and a *Ceſſation* of Arms. For, the Diſaffected at home artfully contrived, by all Means, to diſable and hinder his Majeſty from puniſhing the *Scots* Rebels as they deſerved, that the *Scots* might be able, in their Turn, to aſſiſt *them* in the Rebellion, which they were projecting againſt him in *England*. In the mean Time, the King, by the Advice of Archbiſhop *Laud*, the Marquiſs of *Hamilton*, and *Wentworth* (now Earl of *Strafford*) had reſolved to try the Affections of his *Engliſh* Subjects, in a *Fourth* Parliament, which met, 13 *April*, 1640. The King repreſented to them, the Affronts receiv'd from the *Scots*, and deſired a ſeaſonable Supply, in a Parliamentary Way; promiſing to *give up* his Claim to the *Ship-Money*, and ſatisfy every other reaſonable Demand. Inſtead of regarding the King's Honour, or their own Duty and Danger, the Commons eagerly fell upon the old Complaint of *Grievances*; and even voted it a Breach of their PRIVILEGES, that the Houſe of *Lords* (after ſeveral Conferences) had voted the *Preference* to be due to the King's Buſineſs! This cauſing Heat between the two Houſes, and the Commons ſeeming unmoveable towards the King's Service, his Majeſty haſtily *diſſolved* that Parliament, 5 *May*; tho' he ſoon had Reaſon to *repent*, either that he diſſolved *this*, or afterwards ever called *another*.

Q. How ſoon did he call another?

A. In the ſame Year, which accordingly met, 3 *Nov.* 1640: And being permitted to *continue* their Seſſion, under the ſtale Pretence of *Reformation* and Redreſs of *Grievances*, *overthrew* the Church and Crown; *murdered* the beſt of Princes; *deprived* their Fellow-Subjects of the true Religion, Liberty, Property, and Life itſelf; exerciſed ARBITRARY Power beyond all Example; and left an indelible Brand of Infamy upon the very Name of *ſuch* PROTESTANT-*Reformers!*

Q. What paſſed moſt remarkable in the mean Time?

A. The Synodical Acts of the *Convocation*; the Great-Council of the Peers at *York*; and the opening the Treaty at *Rippon*.

Q. What were thoſe Acts of Convocation?

A. According to ancient Cuſtom and the undoubted Privilege of the Church, the Biſhops and Clergy were duly ſummoned to aſſemble in Convocation, the next Day after the Meeting of the Parliament: And, as they were always *convened* by diſtinct Writs, ſo there were diſtinct Writs alſo neceſſary to their *Diſſolution*. Thus, the laſt Parliament meeting, 13 *April*, the Convocation met the 14th, and had a Commiſſion to explain the old Canons and make new ones. While they were ſo imploy'd, the Parliament was diſſolv'd. But (agreeable to a *Precedent* even in Queen *Elizabeth*'s Time, and the Opinion of the moſt eminent *Judges* and Lawyers) the Convocation being *independent* on the Parliament, was authoriz'd by a new Commiſſion to continue their Seſſion, as a *Synod*, and to proceed in this neceſſary Work. And now, they granted the King 4*s.* in the Pound for all their Eccleſiaſtica

Pro-

promotions. Beſides which, ſeveral *Canons* were Paſs'd; particularly, againſt *the Growth of Popery*, againſt the *Socinian Hereſy*; for the *Reſtraint of Sectaries*, &c. Which, with ſome others, drawn up in the Synod, and approv'd, according to *Law*, by the King and his Council, were ſubſcrib'd *unanimouſly* by the Synods of *both* Provinces; not one Member of either diſſenting thereto, except Biſhop *Goodman* of *Glouceſter*; who was *therefore* ſuſpended, by *Laud* the Metropolitan, on a juſt Suſpicion of *Popery*, which, *Goodman* himſelf, afterwards openly profeſſed on his Death-Bed.

Q. How was this *Diſcipline* receiv'd by the People?

A. With great *App'auſe*, by all the true Friends of the Church of *England*, and as great *Indignation* by its open and ſecret Enemies. For, the factious Members of the late Parliament, being diſpers'd to their Homes, filled all Places with Suſpicions and Diſcontents: Inſomuch, that, even in *Southwark*, an open Mutiny began, and a *Mob* of 500 made an Attack upon the *Archbiſhop*'s Palace at Midnight; and reſolved to have done the like on the *Convocation* alſo, but were happily prevented by the King's allowing them a Guard of the *Militia*. About the ſame Time, *libellous* Papers were poſted up, inciting the Rabble againſt the Archbiſhop, as a *Favourer of Popery*; tho' the wiſer People, of all Sorts, well knew the contrary; and that the *real* Ground of Diſaffection to him was, (and ſtill is) his *Loyalty* to the King, and *Zeal* for the Reformed *Church* of *England*. So that, it is generally believ'd, the main Exception againſt that Convocation in which He preſided, was their drawing up the *firſt Canon* for the Service of the *Crown*, and

flatly condemning *Reſiſtance* of Authority *upon any Pretence whatſoever*; which plain Scripture-Doctrine of PASSIVE OBEDIENCE, and Non-Reſiſtance, thoſe wretched Caſuiſts, the *Scots* covenanting Rebels, afterwards (with equal Abſurdity, and Impiety,) charg'd upon him, as *tending to the utter Ruin and* ENSLAVING *of all Eſtates and Kingdoms!*

Q. Are theſe CANONS, of 1640, now in Force?

A. They are *laid aſide*, as it were, by a general *Conſent*: And yet, it is hard to ſhew any good Reaſon, why they ſhould be deem'd any whit leſs valid, than thoſe of 1603; ſince it is apparent, by the *Law*, and the uncontradicted Practice of the Church, that Canons had NEVER been made by *any other* Authority.

Q. What was the great Council of *Peers* at *York*?

A. In the Interval, between the two Parliaments, in 1640, the King, being attack'd by the *Scots* in the North, and jealous of the diſaffected *Engliſh* in the South, ſummoned all the *Nobility* of *England*, to attend him at *York*, 24 *Sept.* to give him their *Advice* upon the preſent Situation of his Affairs. And it was by *their* Advice, that the Treaty was agreed to be held at *Rippon*.

Q. What was the Effect of that Treaty?

A. It began, 1 *Oct.* by Commiſſioners on both Sides, and was ſpun out by the *Scots* to the 16th, before the preliminary Articles were ſign'd; ſo that the Conditions of Peace could not be adjuſted before the next Parliament was appointed to meet; *viz.* on that unlucky 3 *Nov.* By which Time, the *Engliſh* Lords themſelves being all oblig'd to attend at *Weſtminſter*, the *Scots Commiſſioners*, of courſe, procured the Treaty to be adjourn'd to *London*; where they had many

Friends,

Friends, and the better Opportunity to concert their Meaſures with the factious Party.

Q. How did this Parliament proceed?

A. The Commons were full of Complaints of *Grievances*; and many virulent Speeches were made againſt the Church and Crown, full of much Satire and Declamation, Malice and Detraction, but little, or no, Proof or ſolid Argument. *Petitions* were alſo artfully procur'd againſt the Church-Government, ſubſcrib'd by Multitudes of the *Rabble:* Among whom were (thoſe learned Caſuiſts!) the *London Apprentices*, and PORTERS; the laſt of whom, complained of Epiſcopacy, as *a Burthen too heavy even for their Shoulders!* Nor were there wanting, even among the *Clergy* themſelves, ſome *Judaſes*, who were corrupt and forward enough, to *betray* the Cauſe of *Chriſt* and his Church, to promote the Rebellion againſt the King, and the Ruin of the Hierarchy! And now, Schiſm and Sedition being reſpected as meritorious, the vileſt *Miſcreants*, who had been puniſh'd, much below their Demerits, were honour'd as *Martyrs* or *Confeſſors* for the *Good Old Cauſe!* Thus, among the foremoſt, *Burton*, *Prynn*, and *Baſtwick*, were not only ſet at Liberty, but, *triumphantly* conducted by a great Multitude into *London*, with prophane *Hoſannahs*, and even voted an arbitrary *Reparation*, out of the Eſtates of thoſe who had deſervedly and legally paſſed the Cenſures upon them. The Earl of *Strafford* no ſooner took his Seat in Parliament, but he was *impeach'd* of Treaſon, and ſent to the Tower; as Archbiſhop *Laud* alſo was ſoon after him. The Lord-Keeper *Finch*, and ſecretary *Windebank*, eſcaped the like by Flight. Thus, the King was not only robb'd of his ableſt and moſt faithful Counſellors, but

others were intimidated to ſerve him, for Fear of an ARBITRARY Houſe of Commons, before whom, true *Loyalty* was an unpardonable Crime, and *Innocence* no Juſtification!

Q. How did his Majeſty act the while?

A. He demonſtrated, that he was ſo far from an Intention to violate the juſt Rights and Privileges of his People, that he reſtrained his own *Prerogative* within narrower Bounds, than had ever been done by any of his Predeceſſors. Thus, (in expectation of ſome *other* Revenue, frequently promis'd, but never intended by them to be ſettled,) he not only quitted all Claim to *Ship-Money*, but condeſcended to aboliſh the *Star-Chamber* and *High-Commiſſion-Courts*, which had been held of undiſputed Authority; the former by Common Law, confirm'd by Statute, in King *Henry* VII's Time, and the latter by Statute, at the Acceſſion of Queen *Elizabeth*. He not only provided for the *frequent* Meeting of Parliaments (at leaſt, one in three Years;) but even *diſabled* himſelf to diſſolve the preſent, without their own Conſent. All which amazing Conceſſions, were not receiv'd by them as Acts of *Grace*, or Marks of his fartherly Affection, but as the Effects of meer Neceſſity; which, therefore, were ſo far from meeting with any due Return from the *Faction*, that they ſerved only to embolden an ungenerous and *ungrateful* Party, to inſiſt on further Demands, 'till they were enabled to *overturn* the Conſtitution, both in Church and State; which their ſhameleſs Advocates yet have the Aſſurance to call *Reſtoring the Government to its antient and natural State!*

Q. What became of the Earl of *Strafford?*

A. He was formally tried by his Peers, on an *Impeachment* of High-Treaſon, in 28 Articles:

But

But he made his Defence ſo much to his Honour and Advantage, that the Commons fearing his Acquittal, reſolved to cut him off by an Act of ATTAINDER (which is a laſting Reproach to both Houſes of Parliament;) tho' they were driven to the moſt *deteſtable* Artifices, before they could bring it to paſs. For, to *that* pious End, the Faction actually courted and carreſſed the bigotted *Iriſh Papiſts*, who were even then meditating and concerting the Scheme of a Rebellion and bloody *Maſſacre!* The Bill meeting with much Oppoſition in the Houſe of Peers, a tumultuous MOB was brought down to the Parliament-Houſe, inſulting the Lords with outrageous Clamours of *Juſtice!* and thereby frightening ſome of the Houſe, and others into a *Compliance:* Nor did they ſtop there, but rioutouſly came to *Whitehall* too, repeating their inſolent Clamour, with audacious *Menaces* againſt the King *himſelf*. However, his Majeſty never could be prevailed with to aſſent to the Bill, 'till a FORGED LETTER was brought him, in the *Earl's own Name*, deſiring that *He* might be ſacrifis'd to the public Peace. Thus, the Bill of *Attainder*, paſſed, (together with that for *continuing* the Parliament,) 10 *May*, 1641; and this Great and excellent Man was beheaded on the 12th: But the good King *repented*, to his Dying-Day, that he had ſo far given way to the Fury of his Enemies.

Q. Did they not now immediately proceed againſt Archbiſhop *Laud?*

A. Not yet, they gave him firſt the Mortification to ſee the *Church* deſtroy'd.

Q. How did they bring it about?

A. After a Multitude of *Petitions* and *Speeches*, and vexatious Proſecutions of particular Perſons

and

and Things, under Pretence of *Innovations*, they made an open Attack upon the *Biſhops*, to deprive them of their ancient and *fundamental* Right to ſit and vote in Parliament: To facilitate which, a *Mob* of Apprentice-Boys and others, filled the Lobby with Outcries of *No Biſhops!* reviling their Character, and outraging their Perſons. Thus did they procure the paſſing their Acts of REFORMATION: Thus did they reform away one, (and the firſt) of the *Three Eſtates*, and render the Legiſlature eſſentially *defective!*

Q. Where was the *Scots* Army all this Time?

A. In good Quarters in the North of *England*, and there well provided for, with ample Contributions. Nor were the Commons in Parliament willing to part with their *dear Brethren*, (whoſe Arrival and Stay here had coſt *England*, 1,100,000*l.* beſides Damages,) 'till, with *their* Concurrence, they had weaken'd the *King*'s Authority, and wreſted the Power in a Manner out of *his* Hands. At length, inſtead of being *puniſh'd* as *Rebels*, they were diſmiſs'd with a *Reward* of 300,000*l.* for their *Brotherly Aſſiſtance*, beſides 850*l.* a Day, allow'd for the Subſiſtence of their Troops. This being ſettled by Treaty, 7 *Aug.* 1641, the Army was diſbanded, and the King went ſoon after into *Scotland*, where he held a Parliament, (by *Hamilton*'s Advice, now made a *Duke*, who repreſented it as abſolutely neceſſary for the Quiet of the Realm, to *gratify the Covenanters*,) and made amazing *Conceſſions*, which would have contented *any* but ſuch *inveterate Rebels* as he *always* had to deal with.

Q. How did the *Engliſh* Commons proceed, during the King's Abſence in *Scotland?*

A. They (by the Advantage of a thin Houſe) took upon *them* an unprecedented Authority, to *ſuper-*

ſuperſede the Uſages of Antiquity, the Orders of the Biſhops, and the Canons of the Church; iſſuing their *Lay-Injunctions*, concerning Church-Government and Diſcipline, (as if they had been a Council of *Apoſtles!*) without conſulting the *Convocation*; without the Concurrence of the *Lords*, or the Sanction of the *King*'s Authority; and requiring an *abſolute* Obedience to *their own* Orders, tho' they had boldly *cenſur'd* the Canons, made in the regular Way of Convocation, as a great *Innovation!* Then, under Pretence of *Plots* againſt *them*, they muſt have a *Guard* to ſecure their ſitting in Safety; while, even after the moſt amazing Conceſſions, and all their Grievances actually redreſs'd, they were preparing a ſhocking and libellous *Remonſtrance* of Mal-Adminiſtration, to entertain the King, at his Return, on purpoſe to *quarrel* with their Sovereign, and delay the ſettling his Revenues. But, what gave the greateſt Handle to the King's Enemies, was, the breaking out of a Rebellion, and bloody *Maſſacre* of many thouſand *Engliſh Proteſtants*, in *Ireland*, 23 *Oct.* 1641. This was begun by ſome of the *old Iriſh Papiſts*, who pretended to a *Commiſſion* from the King; which, tho' *known* to be a FORGERY, and fomented by the *Covenanters* themſelves, was, (and ſtill is) induſtriouſly reported by his Enemies, to *prejudice* his People againſt him.

Q. What Care was taken to ſuppreſs the *Iriſh* Rebellion?

A. None at all, by the *Puritans*, tho' the *King* frequently preſſed the two Houſes to haſten over the neceſſary Forces and Supplies. But all his Overtures were of little Weight; for *they* kept them back on purpoſe to ſerve *their* Turn, againſt the King himſelf in *England*.

Q. What

Q. What were the Steps now taken towards a Rupture in *England?*

A. Beſides the *Guards* appointed, under Pretence to ſecure *them* againſt the Tumults which *themſelves* had underhand fomented, they firſt preſumed to ſet a *Guard* alſo upon the *Tower* of *London*, as well as to ſeize the Town and Magazines at *Hull*, which they committed to the Truſt of Sir *John Hotham*, without ſo much as aſking the King's Conſent; and then demanded the Tower of *London*, and all the principal Forts, and the whole *Militia* of the Kingdom, to be put into ſuch Hands as *they* ſhould be pleas'd to confide in. In the mean Time, they had ſo order'd it, that the People in ſome Places, had form'd themſelves into *Companies*, choſen their own *Officers*, and taken upon them to regulate the *Militia*; whereby the Sword was actually wreſted out of the Sovereign's Hand, and that *Uſurpation* juſtified by the two Houſes, 1 *March*, 1641.

Q. Where was the King all this while?

A. Finding his Palace of *Whitehall* beſet with outragious *Mobs*, he removed to *Hampton*-Court and *Windſor*, in *January:* From thence, having conducted his Queen and the Princeſs of *Orange*, to *Dover*, (in their Way towards *Holland*) in *February*, he moved Northward, to keep his Court at *York*, 19 *March*, 1641, but had not yet taken any Meaſures for *War*: And indeed, the amazing CONCESSIONS which his Majeſty had made to the Parliament, are a plain Proof, that he had not yet entertain'd any Thoughts of having Recourſe to *Arms* againſt them.

Q. How did the two Houſes now proceed?

A. They not only preſumed to ſet up *uſurped Privileges* of Parliament, in oppoſition to the King's

King's undoubted *Authority*, but under pretence of various *Sham-Plots*, actually publiſhed an Ordinance, for ſettling the *Militia*, by their own Power, 5 *March*, 1641; made the Earl of *Warwick* Commander of the *Fleet*, againſt the King's Will, 31 *March*, 1642; juſtified *Hotham* in his having *ſhut* the Gates of *Hull* againſt the King in Perſon, 23 *April*, 1642; muſtered the *London* Trained-Bands, 10 *May*, and iſſued Orders to the adjacent Counties to do the like; *impeached* 9 Peers for attending the King at *York*, in *June*; and conſtituted the Earl of *Eſſex* the *General* of THEIR FORCES, 12 *July*.

Q. Had the King yet made no *Preparations* for his Defence?

A. He had ſummon'd all his *Yorkſhire* Tenants in Chief to attend him at *York*, 12 *May*, 1642; out of whom, he form'd a *Troop* of Horſe, and a *Regiment* of 600 Foot, for his *Guard*: But he was unprovided of Money, Arms, and Ammunition, 'till he received ſome, in one ſmall Ship, ſent him by the Queen, 2 *June*; and it was 22 *Aug.* before he ſet up his STANDARD at *Nottingham*, and *then* too, very weakly ſupported.

Q. How did the two Houſes furniſh themſelves with Money to raiſe their Army?

A. They had Recourſe to *Subſcriptions* and *Loans* of Money and Plate. And (by the Aſſiſtance of their hireling LECTURERS, and other *Pulpit-Incendiaries*) ſo forward were the deluded People to promote the *Good Cauſe* of REBELLION in the two Houſes of Parliament (tho' even *againſt* their undoubted Rightful Head) that above 11,000,000*l.* were now rais'd, by the very *ſame* Methods, which themſelves had voted *illegal*, and a great *Grievance*, when taken for the *neceſſary Service* of their Sovereign! Nay, we are told

told by curious Calculators, that from the Year 1641, to 1647, above 40,000,000*l.* were levied in TAXES; and that the whole of the Impoſitions upon the Public, by the pretended Authority of Parliament, during *their Uſurpation*, amounted to above 95,512,000*l.* So much was the PUBLICK GOOD, conſulted by thoſe *Reformers*; and ſuch is the *natural Conſequence* of redreſſing *Grievances* by Rebellion!

Q. Did Hoſtilities now begin immediately?

A. No. Some Time was yet ſpent (as before) in Paper-Skirmiſhes; wherein the King had as great Advantage of the *Argument*, as his Enemies had of their *Numbers*: For, 'a Spirit of Can-'dour, Sincerity, injured Innocence, and good 'Senſe, breathes through *all* the King's Anſwers.' But *Eſſex*, having at *Northampton* an Army of 16,000 Men, completely provided, and the King's Forces being yet very few, his Majeſty thought fit to move off, by the Way of *Darby* and *Stafford*, towards *Shrewſbury*. There, he got together 10,000 Foot, and 4000 Horſe, and ſet up a Mint for Coinage: And, at the ſame time, he received from *Oxford*, ſome Money, with their *College-Plate*; which was ſent him by the Univerſity, under the Convoy of Sir *John Byron*, ſupported by Prince *Rupert*. In the mean Time, the Rebels poſſeſſing themſelves of the principal Towns in the Heart of the Kingdom, the King reſolved to advance towards *London*. In their March, the two Armies met, near EDGE-HILL, 23 *Oct.* 1642; where a bloody Battle was fought, and ſeveral Perſons of Quality were ſlain; among whom, was the Earl of *Lindſey*, the King's General. Both Sides claimed the Victory: But the King kept the Field, and took *Banbury*-Caſtle. Upon this, the King took up his Head-Quarters

Quarters at *Oxford*, and the Rebels retired to *Warwick*.

Q. Was any thing particularly remarkable in this Battle?

A. Yes. Tho' the Rebels had always pretended an extraordinary *Zeal* for the *Proteſtant* Religion, and charged the King with *Popery*, and *Foreign Forces*, yet ſeveral Papiſts were here taken Priſoners, and even, ſome *Popiſh-Prieſts* found among thoſe who were ſlain, on the Party of the Parliament. And ſuch was *their* Zeal, that they made no Scruple to imploy *any*, who would ſerve *them*, without Diſtinction of Country or Religion; inſomuch, that, among *their* Priſoners, 20 or 30 PAPISTS have been taken at a Time, in one Troop or Company of the Rebels.

Q. Were the two Armies quiet the reſt of that Year?

A. No. The King advancing towards *London*, by way of *Reading*, had a ſharp Engagement at *Brentford*, 12 *Nov.* with the Rebels there poſted, whom he defeated; and took above 500 *Priſoners*. But, *Eſſex* approaching with a ſuperior Army, the King made good his Retreat to *Oxford*, for Winter-Quarters.

Q. What became of the *Rebels* taken *Priſoners* here?

A. They were graciouſly *diſmiſs'd*, on taking *Oaths* never to take *Arms* againſt their Sovereign for the future. Yet ſuch was the *Conſcience* of the Party, that their godly *Chaplains abſolved* them from that Oath, to encourage them to proceed in the damnable Sin of Rebellion!

Q. What were the *other* moſt remarkable Actions in this Year?

A. The Storming of *Marlborough*, by the Lords *Wilmot* and *Digby*; the routing the Rebels in

in *Cornwall*, by Sir *Ralph Hopton*; the ſtorming of *Cirenceſter* by Prince *Rupert*; and the Battle of *Hopton-Heath*, where the gallant Earl of *Northampton* was ſlain, fighting victoriouſly over three times his number.

Q. What were the chief Tranſactions of the next Year?

A. Before the opening the ſecond Campaign, certain Propoſitions were ſent to the King from the Members at *Weſtminſter* (as if they had been deſirous of an Accommodation:) But, ſome of theſe were ſo plainly deſtructive to the Church and Clergy of *England*, and the Commiſſioners bound up ſo cloſe to their Inſtructions, that the reconciling them to Law, Reaſon or Conſcience, was utterly impracticable. However, as a gloomy *Fanaticiſm* had already taken full Poſſeſſion of *one* Kingdom, and made a very great Progreſs in the *other*, the two Houſes (or rather a RUMP of each) preſumed, by their own pretended Authority, to paſs an Ordinance to alter the Church-Government, and to ſequeſter the Eſtates of the Biſhops, and other *Delinquents* (as they call'ed them) who refuſed to join in the Rebellion; and another to convene *an Aſſembly of Learned, Godly and Judicious* DIVINES (ſo called) to conſult for the better *ſettling* the Church; moſt of whom, met to that Purpoſe, 1 *July*, 1643, tho' expreſly *forbidden* by the King: And, among thoſe who ſtand foremoſt in the Liſt, are ſeveral Lords and other Members of the two Houſes; whoſe Learning and Judgment in *Divinity* may be beſt judged of by the *Godlineſs* of their Practice and Proceedings: Nor were the reſt *elected* by the regular *Clergy*, in any legal or cuſtomary Way, but by the very *Commons* themſelves, who had newly made ſuch an Outcry againſt the Legality

of

of the late Convocation! In ſhort, after all the Clamour about *Religion*, the Care of it, which was now transferr'd from a *Convocation* to a new-faſhion'd *Aſſembly* of Divines, was from them transferr'd to the Houſe of *Commons*, and from thence to the *Mob:* Between whom the regular Clergy ſuffered ſuch a *Perſecution*, and the Churches ſuch a DEFORMATION, as is hardly to be parallell'd, even in the *Pagan* Annals! For, in all Places within the Power of the Rebel Reformers, all the Monuments of *Superſtition* (as Church-Ornaments eſpecially were then call'd) were defaced, and the Loyal and Orthodox Clergy harraſs'd, plunder'd, impriſon'd and ſequeſter'd, as *Malignants* and *Papiſts*, by Men who were open REBELS themſelves, actually manag'd by POPISH Engines, and Favourers even of the *Alcoran* itſelf; whoſe *Committees* were no leſs cruel than the ſevereſt *Inquiſition!* And *Treachery* and *Hypocriſy*, *Licentiouſneſs* and *Profaneneſs*, *Enthuſiaſm* and *Atheiſm*, together with a Violation of all the Laws of Nature and Humanity, were the natural Effects of SUCH A REVOLUTION!

Q. Were the King's Forces patient Spectators of all tnis?

A. No. This Year, 1643, was a Campaign of great Action, and generally ſucceſsful to the Royaliſts. The moſt remarkable Events were, the Victory over *Fairfax*, by the Earl of *Newcaſtle*, at *Bramham-Moor*; another over the Earl of *Stamford*, by Sir *Ralph Hopton*, at *Stratton*; another, by Prince *Rupert*, at *Chalgrave-Field*, where Col. *Hampden* was mortally wounded, in the *very Place* where he had *firſt* exerciſed his Men in *rebellious* Arms; another over *Fairfax*, by the Earl of *Newcaſtle*, at *Adderton-Heath*; another

another over *Waller*, by the Marquis of *Hartford*, &c. at *Landſdown*; and again by the Lord *Wilmot*, at *Roundway-Down*; Prince *Rupert*'s taking *Briſtol* by Aſſault; and Prince *Maurice*'s obliging *Exeter* to ſurrender. But the Sieges of *Glouceſter*, *Hull*, *Plymouth*, and *Nantwich*, were without Effect, on one Side, as that of *Newark* was on the other; in Conſequence of which laſt, the Rebels quitted *Lincoln*, and other neighbouring Towns.

Q. What Meaſures did the Rebels now take to ſtand their Ground againſt the King?

A. Inſtead of any Thoughts of returning to their *Duty*, the Commons had the Impudence to impeach the QUEEN of *High-Treaſon*, for aſſiſting the King with Arms and Ammunition; and ſent Commiſſioners to the *Scots* Covenanters, who had before promiſed them Aſſiſtance, on Condition of their taking the COVENANT, and uniting with them in Kirk-Diſcipline, Worſhip and Government. And now, their Military Affairs being cloudy, they entered into a *Confederacy*; and the two Houſes, together with the Aſſembly and *Scots* Commiſſioners, met in St. *Margaret*'s, *Weſtminſter*, 25 *Sept.* 1643, to take the *Solemn League and Covenant*, with great Formality. Thus, they who were averſe to any *Uniformity* in Decency and Order, under a regular Government both in Church and State, could heartily come into an Uniformity, *contrary* to all Order and Authority in either! And tho' the ſmalleſt *Penalties* of Non-Conformity to legal Injunctions were complain'd of, as intolerable *Grievances*, all Perſons were now requir'd to *obey* theſe ſeditious and treaſonable Ordinances, under Pain of the higheſt Forfeitures and Confiſcations! Nay, this *Idol* of the COVENANT was afterwards order'd

order'd to be hung up in Churches, when the *pious Reformers* had firſt tore down the *Creed*, the *Lord's-Prayer*, and *Ten-Commandments*, as well as the *King's Arms*; which indeed could not have ſtood *together*, without confronting and reproaching each other.

Q. Did the *Scots* now join, in Rebellion, with their covenanted Brethren?

A. Yes, in direct Contradiction to their own *Laws*, and late *Treaties* with the King. But their JESUITICAL CASUISTS could find a Way for *them* to enter *England*, with an Army to fight *againſt the King*. without making *War againſt the Kingdom!* Accordingly, they entered, 16 *Jan.* 1643, above 20,000 ſtrong.

Q. What were the other moſt remarkable Paſſages in the mean Time?

A. An EXCISE impos'd upon the People (for the *public Good!*) by Ordinance of the two Houſes, 22 *July*, 1643. A Truce made for a Ceſſation of Arms for one Year, with the *Iriſh* Rebels, by the Marquis of *Ormond*, 15 *Sept.* An Ordinance for ſeizing the Revenues of the King, Queen and Prince (for the *Good* of his Majeſty and the Common-Wealth!) 21 *Sept.* A *counterfeit* Great-Seal made, in Oppoſition to the King's, 30 *Nov.* Their expoſing the *Regalia* to Contempt and Sale; and *hanging* up one of the King's *Meſſengers* as a *Spy:* And the King's calling a Parliament at *Oxford*, of ſuch Members of both Houſes, as retained a Senſe of their Duty, and could not concur in the rebellious Proceedings of the Men remaining at *Weſtminſter*; which Parliament met accordingly, 22 *January*.

Q. What Appearance was there of Members in the Parliament at *Oxford?*

A. Of

A. Of the *Peers* there remained not a fifth Part at *Weſtminſter*. The reſt (except thoſe who were either in Exile or Confinement) did generally attend the King's Service. But, of the *Commons*, ſcarce a fourth Part of legally choſen Members continued at *Weſtminſter*.

Q. How did the Parliament at *Oxford* exert againſt the Rebels.

A. They publiſhed a loyal Declaration, fairly repreſenting the unparliamentary and rebellious Proceedings of the Faction. Voted all thoſe who aſſiſted the *Scots* Invaders, to be *Traitors:* And that the Lords and Commons remaining at *Weſtminſter*, for raiſing Forces under the Command of *Eſſex* and others, for conſenting to the *Scots* Invaſion, and for counterfeiting the Great-Seal, *&c.* were guilty of *High-Treaſon*, 12 *March.* And, for a Supply to the King's Service, they conſented to a *Loan* of 100,000*l.* and impoſed an *Exciſe*, as the Members at *Weſtminſter* had preſumed to do before. After which, they adjourned, 16 *April*, 1644, to the 8th of *October* following, but did not meet any more.

Q. What Progreſs did the *Scots* Army make?

A. They advanced to *Newcaſtle*, 2 *Feb.* and ſummoned the Town without Effect. Thence they marched the 28th, towards *Durham*, being retarded by frequent Skirmiſhes with the Marquis of *Newcaſtle*, who was not ſtrong enough to venture a Battle. In the mean Time, Col. *Bellaſis*, (Governor of *York*,) being defeated at *Selby*, and taken by Sir *Tho. Fairfax*, the Marquis was forc'd to retire to *York*, in order to ſave that City; which the Rebels beſieged early the next Spring.

Q. What were the principal Actions in the next Year?

A. The

A. The ſharp Engagement between the Lord *Hopton* and Sir *William Waller*, at *Cheryton-Down*, 29 *March*, 1644; and that other between *Fairfax* and Col. *Bellaſis*, at *Selby*, 11 *April*, (in both which, the Rebels had the Advantage:) Prince *Rupert*'s raiſing the Seige of *Latham*-Houſe, (which had been gallantly defended againſt the Rebels 18 Weeks, by the Counteſs of *Derby*) 25 *May*; and his Purſuit of them into *Bolton*, which he took by Storm. After which, he marched to *York*, then beſieg'd by three Armies; *viz.* the *Scots*, commanded by *Leſlie*, (lately created Earl of *Leven*) and the *Engliſh*, under the Earl of *Mancheſter*, and Gen. *Fairfax*. On the Approach of the Prince, the Beſiegers drew off to *Marſton-Moor*. There they were attack'd by the Prince, 2 *July*: But, after a bloody Battle, his Army was routed; himſelf retiring with the Remains of it towards *Cheſter*; the Marquis of *Newcaſtle* (who had acted gallantly as a Volunteer, and had little or no Share in the Conduct of it) thereupon withdrawing in Diſcontent to *Hamburgh*; and *York*, of Courſe, and all the Northern Counties, ſoon after, falling into the Hands of the Conquerors. And now the Rebels ſeparated again: *Fairfax* remaining as Governor of *York*, *Mancheſter* marched off to *Lincoln*, and *Leven* towards the North, to join his Reinforcement of *Scots*; with which, he took *Newcaſtle* by Storm, 19 *Oct.* after a gallant Defence of above two Months.

Q. Where was the King himſelf?

A. At *Oxford*: Whence he had diſpatched the Lord *Hopton* towards *Wincheſter*, to prevent *Waller*'s March into the Weſt. But the two Armies meeting near *Alresford*, *Hopton* was worſted, as before is intimated. In the mean

Time, his Majeſty had drawn his Forces together at *Newbury*, to obſerve the Enemies Motion; but, after that Defeat, retired to *Oxford*, which the Rebels were preparing to beſiege in *May*. *Eſſex* approaching it on one Side, and *Waller* on the other, the King left his Foot there and withdrew his Horſe, 3 *June*, towards *Worceſter*, being follow'd by *Waller*. But his Majeſty, by various Counter-Marches, having deceiv'd the Enemy, returned to join his Foot at *Oxford*; and was now able to face *Waller*'s Army. For, upon the King's former Retreat from thence, the Siege of *Oxford* was no more thought of, and *Eſſex* was gone towards the Weſt, againſt Prince *Maurice*. *Waller*, ſtill advancing, attacked the King's Rear, near *Cropredy*-Bridge, 29 *June*; but was repuls'd with ſo great a Loſs, as not to give him further Trouble. And now, his Majeſty reſolved to march in Purſuit of *Eſſex* into the Weſt; where the Royaliſts were the moſt powerful, eſpecially, ſince the Defeat of thoſe of the North at *Marſton*-Moor.

Q. What was the Succeſs of this Expedition?

A. The King having in his March collected an Army ſuperior to that of the Rebels, he advanced towards the Earl of *Eſſex*, who thereupon was over-perſuaded by the Lord *Roberts* to move into *Cornwall*, in Hopes of Reinforcement. There, his Proviſions being cut off, and Succours failing, the Earl privately quitted his Army, and embarked for *London*, leaving *all* his Arms, Ammunition, and Ordnance to the King's Diſpoſal, 1 *Sept.* Soon after which, his Majeſty returned to *Oxford*.

Q. What were the other moſt memorable Tranſactions in this Year?

A. Charles,

A. Charles, the Elector *Palatine*, (eldeſt Son of *Frederic*, the *titular* King of *Bohemia*) who had abruptly *quitted* the King his Uncle at *York*, at the Beginning of the Rebellion, and retired into *Holland*, came over again to *London*, in *Auguſt*, 1644, to reſide there at *Whitehall* (and had the Honour of a Seat in the Aſſembly of *Divines*) under the *Protection of the Rebel-Parliament*, to whom he had before written, not only ſubſcribing and expreſſing *his Approbation of the* COVENANT, *and wiſhing them* SUCCESS, but bemoaning the Courſes his Brother, Prince *Rupert*, took, in fighting *againſt* the Parliament! The next Remarkable, was, the Order of the two Houſes (like JEWS) to make *Chriſtmas-Day* a FAST! And the Execution of the two *Hothams*, (on the firſt and ſecond of *January*) on a Suſpicion of Loyalty, which *they* renounced on the Scaffold; tho' the Judgment was *juſt* upon them, for robbing the King of *his* Garriſon and Magazine at *Hull*.

Q. What became of Archbiſhop *Laud?*

A. He was brought to a Trial this Year, before the few Peers remaining at *Weſtminſter*, where, it is confeſs'd, he made a *full, gallant, and pithy Defence*. But, to make all ſure, they reſolved to cut him off by Way of ATTAINDER: And the Lords were expreſly *menaced* by the Commons, with a MOBB, to force them into a Concurrence. At laſt, in a thin Houſe of 12 (or, as ſome ſay but 7) Peers, the Ordinance paſſed, 4 *Jan.* 1644, and he ſuffered the 10th. Together with which, the two Houſes alſo paſſed another Ordinance, for *aboliſhing the Book of Common-Prayer*, and eſtabliſhing the *Directory*, without any Mention either of the *Commandments* or *Creed*.

Q. Was there not ſomething particularly memorable, in the Caſe of this great Prelate?

A. Yes. Tho' he was then (and ſtill is by the ſame *Faction*) expos'd to the Odium of being *Popiſhly-affected*, he produced at his Trial, a Liſt of more than 20 *Papiſts* (and ſeveral of them Perſons of Quality) whom he had CONVERTED to the Church of *England*: And the Papiſts abroad, triumphed on the News of his Death, as one of *their moſt formidable Enemies*. For, both the bigotted *Papiſts* and *Sectaries* were equally his Enemies; the one Party fearing, and the other hating his Virtues.

Q. Was there now any Room leſt to hope for a Peace?

A. A Treaty was ſet on Foot this Winter, by Commiſſioners, who met at *Uxbridge*, 30 *Jan.* 1644. Where a ſcandalous Sermon was preach'd by *Love*, one of the *Preſbyterian* Incendiaries; whom *Divine Juſtice* overtook ſome Years afterwards, as it had *Hotham* and his Son already. But the Propoſitions on the Side of the two Houſes were ſo unreaſonable and inſolent, that nothing leſs would content them, than the King's authorizing *all their* Proceedings in the Church and State, and veſting *them* with the Sovereign-Power: So that the Treaty broke off, as might be expected.

Q. Were there no Inquiries, all this while, after the real Authors of the *Iriſh* Rebellion?

A. Yes. The Lord *Macguire*, and Col. *Mac-mahon* (two of the Ringleaders) who 'till now had been Priſoners in the Tower, were, at laſt, brought to a Trial, in *Nov.* And tho' *both* of them had been *tamper'd* with, to accuſe the *King*, as an Abettor of it, yet even *they* had the Honeſty to *clear* his Majeſty of it with their laſt Breath

Breath at *Tyburn*; as Sir *Phelim O-Neal*, and others, did afterwards.

Q. Was there nothing now on Foot, to reſtore the King's Authority in *Scotland?*

A. Yes. The Marquis of *Montroſe* exerted himſelf in the Service of his Sovereign, with Honour and Gallantry, equal to the greateſt *Heroes* in Hiſtory. No ſooner had he diſcovered the wicked Deſigns of the *Covenanters*, but he offered his Service to the King againſt them; but, through the Intereſt of the *Hamiltons*, it was ſome Time before he had Credit enough at Court to undertake any Enterprize. At length, being conſtituted Governor-General of *Scotland*, and promis'd Aſſiſtance by the Earl of *Antrim* from *Ireland*, and others, he haſted into *Scotland* in *Diſguiſe:* And, having ſurmounted various Difficulties, he found himſelf able to face a great Body of the Covenanters, whom he defeated, 1 *Sept.* 1644, on *Tipper-Moor*, near *Perth*; another at *Aberdeen* the 12th, and a third, at *Innerloghy*, 12 *Feb.* beſides many other gallant Actions, which he performed afterwards.

Q. Did nothing elſe conſiderable happen this Winter?

A. Yes; the Faction of the *Independents* had for ſome Time been earneſtly preſſing for a *Toleration* of their Opinions; but were oppoſed therein by the *Preſbyterians*, with loud Outcrie againſt it, as the *Abomination of Deſolation*, &c. However, *theſe* diſſentiug Brethren now began to ſet up for themſelves, in Oppoſition to the Preſbyterians; and, afterwards, by Degrees, reform'd upon *them*, in like Manner as they had done upon the *Church*, 'till by a Superiority in their common Artifices of *Cant* and *Hypocriſy*,

they uſurped the whole Power into their own Hands.

Q. What was the main Step to bring this *upſtart* Sect into play?

A. Vane, Cromwell, Haſelrig, Fiennes, Tate, and ſome others of that Party in the Lower-Houſe, had ſo artfully concerted their Meaſures as to procure a *ſelf-denying Ordinance*; whereby all the Members of both Houſes were to make themſelves more popular, by diſabling themſelves for all Offices and Imployments, Civil and Military. This Ordinance paſſed (after ſome Oppoſition in the Upper-Houſe) 1 *April*, 1645. In the mean Time, the Commons took upon them to new model the Army; of which, they made Sir *Thomas Fairfax* the General. And now, the Earls of *Eſſex, Denbigh, Warwick, Mancheſter*, &c. laid down their Commiſſions. And Lieutenant General *Cromwell*, having a great Influence over their new General, was the *only* Member of either Houſe, diſpenſed with to keep his Poſt. But, Care was taken, that the Clauſe *for the Preſervation of his Majeſty's Perſon*, which had been in *Eſſex*'s Commiſſion, ſhould be left out of this to *Fairfax!*

Q. What were the principal Actions of the next Campaign?

A. The Defeat of a Brigade of the King's Horſe, by *Cromwell*, near *Iſlip*, 24 *April*, 1645: The ſtorming of *Leiceſter* by the King, 30 *May*; and the *fatal* Battle of *Naſeby*, 14 *June*.

Q. How fatal was that Battle?

A. Both in the Conduct and Conſequences of it. For, tho' the King's Army had the Advantage at firſt over the much more numerous Rebels: Yet Prince *Rupert*, unadviſedly purſuing the flying Enemy too far, with the *Horſe* under his

his Command, (as he had done *more than once* before) left the *Foot* here, open to the Attack of fresh Forces; who gave them an utter Defeat, and made themselves Masters of all his Majesty's Cannons, Camp and Carriages. After which the King was never able to make a Head against his rebellious Subjects; and his Forts and Forces fell into the Enemies Hands, one after another: Of which, even Prince *Rupert* himself *dishonourably* surrendered *Bristol*, after a Siege of a *few Days*, tho' he had positively assur'd the King to defend it full four Months; for which he was DISCHARG'D his Majesty's Service.

Q. How did his Majesty now dispose of himself?

A. He retired for some Time to *Ragland* Castle in *Wales*. From thence he moved through the Midland Counties towards *Chester*; and returning back again by Way of *Newark*, arriv'd at *Oxford*, 6 *Nov.* In the mean Time the Queen had return'd to *France* the last Year: And the Prince of *Wales* also left his unnatural Country, on the Declension of the King's Affairs in the West, this Year. At last, finding himself on the Point of being shut up in the Siege of *Oxford*, and being prevail'd with, by the Insinuations of the *Scots* to *Montrevil*, the *French* Agent, to place too much Confidence in the Commissioners of *Scotland*, the King privately, in *Disguise*, withdrew from *Oxford*, 27 *April*, 1646, and put himself into the *Scots* Army, then besieging *Newark*, 5 *May*. But he soon found reason to suspect, that this Negociation between *Montrevil* and the *Scots* was rather a *Confederacy*, between the *Papists* and *Presbyterians*, against the Church and King of *England*, than an Expedient for his Majesty's Restoration or Preser-

vation. Nor can this Suppoſition be groundleſs, conſidering the many Inſtances of the like Confederacy between thoſe *Twin-Brethren*: And eſpecially, as we are credibly inform'd, that, when this very King had offer'd to give the *Puritans* all poſſible Security againſt the Corruptions of the Church of *Rome*, it was decreed in a Council of the *Jeſuits*, to uſe *their* whole Intereſt and Power with the *Faction* to haſten the *King's Death*.

Q. What was *Montroſe* now doing in *Scotland*?

A. He had perform'd Wonders. Among which, his ſeveral gallant *Retreats*, before a much ſuperior Army of his Enemies, and once for 60 Miles together, without any Time for Refreſhment, were none of the leaſt. He had defeated a great Body of the Rebels at *Aderne*, 4 *May*, 1645. Another at *Alford*, 2 *July*; and a third at *Kilſyth*, (where about 6000 Rebels were ſlain) 15 *Auguſt*. After which, the whole Kingdom, in a Manner, being reduc'd to the King's Obedience, the fair Scene was ſo chang'd (through the Treachery, Envy, or inexcuſable Conduct of the Marquis of *Huntley*, and the Earls of *Hume*, *Roxborough* and *Tracquaire*, and ſome others under their Influence,) that many of his Followers deſerted him, others diſappointed him of their promis'd Succours, and his own Scouts deceiv'd him, 'till he was ſurpriz'd by *David Leſlie*, and the main Army of the Covenanters, at *Selkirk*, 13 *Sept.* where his Handful of Men, after a brave Reſiſtance, were utterly defeated, and the Priſoners, *after Quarter* given, barbarouſly BUTCHER'D in cold Blood! Notwithſtanding which, the *gallant Hero* fought his Way thro' the Enemy; and gathering together a few of his ſcatter'd Men, was taking proper Meaſures.

ſures to recover his Loſs, when he received the diſmal News of the King's Surrender to the *Scots* at *Newark*, and Orders to diſband, 31 *May*, 1646. Upon which he left his native Country, 3 *Sept.* generouſly reſolving to do his Sovereign the beſt Service he could *Abroad*, there being nothing more now to be done for him *at Home*.

Q. How did the *Scots* now anſwer the King's Confidence in them?

A. Like true-blue *Preſbyterian-Covenanters!* They march'd Northward with him ſo far as *Newcaſtle*, pretending the Security of his Perſon; but withal preſſing him earneſtly to authorize their *Covenant:* (For, through the predominant Influence of their *General Aſſembly*, the King was not to be brought into *Scotland* without *that* previous Condition.) Here his Majeſty had a long Debate about Church Government, with *Henderſon*, one of the Chief of the *Scots Rabbies*; who, being clearly worſted in this Controverſy, laid it to heart, and died ſoon after, *acknowledging the Praiſes due to his Royal Antagoniſt.* After many Propoſitions made and debated, and the *Scots* having ſerv'd the Turn of thoſe who brought them in, 400,000*l.* was agreed to be paid them, under Pretence of *Arrears:* Upon which they returned home, but deliver'd up the King into the Hands of his *Engliſh* Rebels, 30 *Jan.* 1646. And, for the raiſing this Sum, the *Church-Lands* were order'd to be ſold; the Name, Dignity, and Function of *Biſhops* being aboliſh'd, by an Ordinance, 9 *Oct.* 1646.

Q. Was the *Scots* Nation in *general*, chargeable with this unnatural Diſpoſal of their King?

A. No. So far from it, that, when the Queſtion was put in *their Parliament*, for his Majeſty's coming into *Scotland*, there was but a Ma-

jority of *two Voices* againſt it: And afterwards, when they ſaw how ill he was uſed by the *Engliſh*, they raiſed an *Army* to deliver him out of their Hands.

Q. What became of the King's Head-Quarters at *Oxford?*

A. That ſtrong Garriſon was one of the laſt which was ſurrendered to the Rebels, on *Midſummer-Day*, 1646, and thereby made Way for ſuch another Work of *Reformation*, as they had before done in the other Univerſity of *Cambridge*. But ſtill they found it no ſmall Difficulty to ſubdue the ſteady *Loyalty* of that learned Body, after the Town itſelf was in their Hands; many of whom had ſerv'd his Majeſty with great Bravery in the Field. But now, the prevailing Party paſs'd an Ordinance, 1 *May*, 1647, for *viſiting* the Univerſity; which was ſoon put in Execution. In the mean Time, the Members of the *Univerſity* (to their laſting Honour) with great Unanimity, having paſs'd a ſolemn Decree, 1 *June*, againſt the Covenant and Directory, *&c.* and afterwards perſiſting to deſpiſe the uſurp'd Power of the Viſitors, the next Year all the Members of the Univerſity in general (a very few *Timeſervers* only excepted) were depriv'd and forcibly expell'd, and others of the *new Stamp* intruded into their Places. Among whom the famous *Hewſon*, and others of the upſtart Officers of the Army, did that Univerſity the Honour, ſoon after, to accept of DEGREES!

Q. How did the *Engliſh* uſe their King?

A. A Committee of both Houſes, attended by 900 Horſe, receiv'd him of the *Scots* at *Newcaſtle*, 30 *Jan.* 1646, and conducted him to *Holdenby* 16 *Feb.* where he was kept under a *cloſe Reſtraint*, 'till the *Independents* Intereſt in the

the Army began to prevail over that of the *Presbyterians* in the two Houſes.

Q. By what Methods did the Independents prevail?

A. While the King was able to keep the Field, the two Parties were united againſt him: But, no ſooner was he in their Power, than they began to quarrel about the Prey. The main Deſign of the *former* was to diſband the Army as now uſeleſs; and that of the *latter* to prevent it. Accordingly, *Cromwell*, and the other Officers under *his* Influence, ſecretly encouraged a Spirit of Mutiny among their moſt active *Tools* in the Army, in Oppoſition to the Two Houſes. At length a Troop of Horſe, commanded by Cornet *Joyce*, removed the King from *Holdenby*, 4 *June*, 1647, into the Army's Quarters at *Newmarket*; from whence, after various Marches, he was for ſome time, ſeemingly ſettled at *Hampton-Court*. In the mean while, the Army had from St. *Alban's* ſent up an Accuſation againſt eleven of the leading Members of the Lower Houſe, 16 *June*. At the ſame Time, they had privately ſpirited up the *London-Mobb* to make ſeveral riotous Aſſaults upon the Members, the better to furniſh *them* with a Pretence to march forward to their Aſſiſtance; and the Speakers of both Houſes, with divers Members, flying to the Army for Protection againſt the Tumults, the Army thereupon took Occaſion to march to Town to ſee them reinſtated, 6 *Aug.* and impeached ſeven Peers, and the *Magiſtrates* of *London*, as acceſſary to thoſe Tumnlts.

Q. How was the King treated by the Independents Army?

A. With an *Appearance* of much more Civility and Freedom, than before by the *Presbyterians*,

For, they did not only allow him the Benefit of Divine Service by his own *Chaplains*, according to the eſtabliſh'd *Liturgy*, but permitted ſeveral other of his *Friends* to attend him. But all this was only *Artifice*, to draw the King's Friends into *their* Party againſt the *Presbyterians*. For, no ſooner was the Army Maſter of the City and Parliament-Houſe, but his Majeſty was treated with more Neglect than ever, and even found *his Perſon* in manifeſt Danger. Upon this, he privately withdrew from *Hampton-Court*, 11 *Nov.* intending an Eſcape *abroad*; but was unhappily ſeduced into the *Iſle of Wight*, and there confined in *Cariſbrook* Caſtle, by Colonel *Hammond*, the Governor. In this Dureſs the King, being promis'd great Services by the *Scots*, was induc'd to gratify *them* with extraordinary Conceſſions in Favour of the Covenant and Preſbytery, 26 *Dec.* 1647. Whereupon the Independents Intereſt in the Two Houſes procured a *monſtrous Vote*, to make *no more Addreſſes to*, nor to receive any more Meſſages from his Majeſty, 17 *Jan.* 1647. From which Time there could not be the leaſt Colour of Law or Reaſon to look upon *them* as any *Parliament*. But, indeed, both Law and Reaſon are in SUCH Times ſo little regarded, that Capt. *Burleigh* was adjudg'd and executed, as guilty of *High Treaſon againſt the King*, for endeavouring to RESCUE his Maieſty from his cruel Impriſonment; while Major *Rolfe*, who was fairly and legally charg'd with a form'd Deſign to *aſſaſſinate* the King, was, in the ſame deteſtable Court, ſet free by a vile *Ignoramus*, and intruſted, after that, by the *Faction*, with the Care of his Majeſty's Perſon!

Q. What was now further done or attempted, in Favour of the King?

A. While

A. While the *Scots* Army was preparing to enter *England*, under Duke *Hamilton*'s Command, there were Inſurrections in *Wales*, *London*, the North of *England*, *Kent*, *Surrey*, and *Eſſex*; in the laſt of which Counties, the Royaliſts held out *Colcheſter* with invincible Bravery, againſt *Fairfax*, from 13 *June*, 1648, to 27 *Auguſt*; where the gallant Sir *Charles Lucas* and Sir *George Liſle* were baſely Shot the next Day in *cold Blood!* And, about the ſame Time, Part of the *Fleet* returned to their Duty, and received the Prince of *Wales* for their Commander. In the mean Time, Duke *Hamilton*, with the *Scots*, entered *England*, 9 *July*, while *Cromwell* was engag'd in *South-Wales*, and *Fairfax* at *Colcheſter*. But inſtead of marching directly to *London*, he loſt ſo much Time in the *North*, that *Cromwell* had join'd *Lambert*, and had advanc'd to *Preſton*; where they firſt routed the *Engliſh* Van, bravely commanded by Sir *Marmaduke Langdale*, (but *unſupported* by the Duke) and afterwards the Duke's main Body, 17 *Aug.* who flying to *Uttoxeter*, was there taken by *Lambert*.

Q. What became of the King the while?

A. The *Presbyterians*, taking the Opportunity of the Abſence of the Army, procured a Reſolution, 24 *May*, to *treat* with the King, notwithſtanding the former Vote of *No Addreſſes*: But yet, it was to be only upon *their own Terms*, and to ſerve their own Turn. For, all his Majeſty's Conceſſions would not content them, without a ROOT AND BRANCH Abolition of Epiſcopacy, authorizing the Covenant, and reducing the Rights and Prerogatives of the King below thoſe of a Doge of *Venice*, or a *Dutch* Stadtholder. In which Perverſeneſs and Obſtinacy they ſpent ſo much Time, that *Cromwell* and

and the Army returning, the *Independents* were enabled to break off the Treaty at *Newport*, 27 *Nov.* and to ruin the *Presbyterians* themſelves, as well as the King. And now 'twas ſo manag'd, that *Petitions* were ſolicited and procur'd from divers Places, to bring the King to (what they miſcall'd) JUSTICE. After which, the General ſent Colonel *Ewers* to the Government of the *Iſle of Wight*, inſtead of Colonel *Hammond*; from whence, with a moſt unparallel'd Rudeneſs, the King was remov'd, by *Cobbet*, to *Hurſt*-Caſtle, 30 *Nov.* And, even while the Members were voting the King's *Conceſſions* a ſufficient Ground for *Peace*, the General, by *Force*, excluded a great Number of them, and ſet a Guard upon the Houſe, 7 *Dec.* And now, the *Independents* being Maſters of all, a Committee was appointed, 23 *Dec.* to draw up a falſe and treaſonable CHARGE againſt the King. Upon which, he was remov'd by *Harriſon* to *Windſor*; whence he was brought to St. *James's*, 19 *January*. In the mean Time an Ordinance had paſſed the Lower-Houſe, for an *High Court of* JUSTICE, (ſo call'd) to TRY the King for *High Treaſon!* tho' He himſelf was *the only* Perſon againſt whom High Treaſon could be committed! But the *Lords* then remaining to ſit in the Houſe, (few and weak as they were) *unanimouſly* rejected it. However, the RUMP of the Commons proceeded *without* them, and lock'd up their Door againſt them; who, by this Time, through their many other weak and wicked *Compliances*, had render'd themſelves (as their Fellow-Rebels, in the Lower Houſe, ſoon after *voted* them) USELESS. And now, with unprecedented Impudence, a Pack of deteſtable MISCREANTS, with *Bradſhaw* their Preſident, preſume to ſit in Judgment upon their Sove-

Sovereign, and to condemn *Him* to Death for *High Treaſon*, who by our Law can perſonally DO NO WRONG, and is exempt from any *earthly* Puniſhment; which horrid Sentence was accordingly executed, 30 *Jan.* 1648, *O. S.* to the indelible Scandal of *this* Nation, and the Amazement of all the World! Yet, it muſt be remember'd, that ſome of the moſt eminent of the Nobility, namely, the Earl of *Southampton*, the Duke of *Richmond*, the Marquis of *Hertford*, and the Earl of *Lindſey*, to their immortal Honour, did not only offer themſelves as *Hoſtages* for him, but even to *ſuffer in his ſtead*.

Q. What was his true Character?

A. No Prince's Character is more variouſly deſcrib'd, according to the different *Principles* on one Side, and *Prejudices* on the other. But it is no Wonder, if thoſe who brandiſhed rebellious Arms in the Field, and afterwards dipp'd their Hands in the Blood of the Lord's Anointed, did endeavour to *blacken* his Reputation, in Excuſe of their own Actions againſt him: Nor is it ſtrange, if Men of the ſame *diabolical Spirit* do ſtill load his Memory with the moſt odious Calumnies of *Popery* and *Arbitrary* Power, and impudently *ridicule* his Sufferings. This, however, is certain, that we have the Warrant of Authority, both in Church and State, to pronounce him *Innocent*, and a GLORIOUS MARTYR; while his Enemies are declar'd a Pack of *Miſcreants*, as far from being *true Proteſtants*, as they were from being *good Subjects*. Therefore, without entering into the Particulars of his Character, (which cannot be comprehended in a few Words) this may ſerve for a certain *Teſt* of the true Friends and Enemies of the true Church of *England*, that he cannot be a *Friend* either to

our

our Church or State, who is an *Enemy* to the *Royal Martyr*, CHARLES I.

xlvi. 26. CHARLES II.

Q. Was there not an INTERREGNUM, for ſeveral Years after the Death of King *Charles* I?

A. Some People do affect to call it ſo; but very abſurdly. For, as it is a known Maxim in *England*, that THE KING *never dies*, but upon the Demiſe of the Crown, the NEXT HEIR becomes compleatly *King*, the Moment the Breath departs out of the Body of his Anceſtor: So the Law does expreſly declare the Reign of King *Charles* II. to have commenc'd (*de Facto*, as well as *de Jure*,) IMMEDIATELY upon his Father's Murder; tho' the *Sovereign Power* was, many Years after that, invaded, and actually exerciſed by *Rebels* and *Uſurpers*.

Q. How did they proceed on *this* Revolution?

A. As the Lords Temporal and Commons had formerly join'd in *uſurping* upon the Rights of the Sovereign, as well as thoſe of the *Firſt* of the Three Eſtates in Parliament; ſo now the *Third*, and Loweſt of all, took upon themſelves to uſurp alſo upon the remaining Rights of the *Second*; voting the Lords *Temporal* to be aboliſh'd as *uſeleſs and dangerous*, as *they* had before jointly done the Lords *Spiritual*. And thus, the *Commons* alone (or rather a RUMP of that Houſe, conſiſting of about 80 Members only) engroſſed the whole *Sovereign* Power into their own Hands, and preſumed to call themſelves *The Parliament*, and pretended (as the People's Repreſentatives) to govern the Nation *without* a King, or either of the Eſtates of Lords Spiritual or Temporal.

Q. Who

Q. Who are thoſe you call the THREE ESTATES of *England?* Are they not the *King*, *Lords*, and *Commons?*

A. No ſuch thing, That falſe Notion was indeed much propagated in the Times we are now treating of; when two of the three Eſtates, being in open *Rebellion* againſt their Sovereign, were deſirous to have *him* thought to be *one* of the Three, and only *co-ordinate* with the other two; ſo that the People might be perſuaded to believe, there was the Authority of *two to one* on their Side. But the Truth is, the *Three* Eſtates of *England* are the *Lords Spiritual*, the *Lords Temporal*, and the Repreſentatives of the *Commons*, who are all *equally ſubject* and ſubordinate (in Parliament as well as out of it) to the *King*, who is the only *Supreme* Head and Governor of them all.

Q. How does that appear?

A. Not only by the *Articles* and *Canons* of the Church, but by the *Oath* of Supremacy; and even by divers expreſs *Acts* of Parliament, too many to be here enumerated. But, (to mention one obvious Authority for all) *The Form of Prayer*, authoriz'd by Act of Parliament, to be yearly uſed upon the FIFTH * Day of *November*, makes a clear Diſtinction in this Point, by a *Thankſgiving for the happy Deliverance of* the King (*James* I.) AND *the three Eſtates of the Realm.*

Q. How

* *N. B.* This is not to be underſtood of the *Nominal* 5th of *November*, as it may happen to be call'd, according to any occaſional Variation of the *Style*; but of the *Real Anniverſary*, according to the OLD STYLE, by which it was authoriz'd both by the Church and State FOR EVER.

Q. How did the Uſurpers now proceed againſt the young King and his Adherents?

A. They immediately paſſed a formal *Act*, forbidding to proclaim *him*, or any other *Pretender* to the Royal Title, on Pain of *High Treaſon*, 30 *Jan.* 1648. And another, for *aboliſhing* the Kingly Office, as *unneceſſary*, *burthenſome*, *and dangerous*; and for governing the State *without* any King or Lords, under the Form of a *Commonwealth*. For the better Security of which *upſtart* Government (never before known in *England*) they abrogated the legal *Oaths* of Allegiance and Supremacy, and framed a new Oath of their own, called *The Engagement*; which was impoſed upon the People, with as much Zeal and Rigour as the *Covenant* had been before. But, the chief Confidence of theſe *Uſurpers* was in a *ſtanding Army*, which they kept in Pay at 100,000*l.* a Month; tho' *that* very thing did afterwards, very *providentially*, turn *them* out, and prove, at laſt, the Inſtrument of the Nation's happy Deliverance from *Slavery*. And now, their *High Court of Juſtice* was to proceed againſt the Priſoners of Quality: Among whom, Duke *Hamilton*, the Earl of *Holland*, and the Lord *Capel*, ſuffered the Puniſhment of *High Treaſon*, 9 *March*, 1648, only for doing their DUTY according to their *natural Allegiance*; while many others ſhared the like, for the *ſame* Crime of *Loyalty*, in ſeveral Parts of the Nation.

Q. In what Circumſtances was the King himſelf the while?

A. Deplorable enough. He was in *Holland*, and but in the 19th Year of his Age, at the Time of his Father's Martyrdom. And, tho' he received ſome *Dutch Compliments* of Condolence

lence, he found himſelf but *coldly* treated there; nor did he know *where* to expect better.

Q. Did the *Scots* offer him no Service?

A. After the Defeat of his Army at *Preſton*, *Argyle*, and his rigid *Covenanters*, who had before in vain oppos'd that Expedition, procured it now to be *condemn'd* as *unlawful*, both by *their Faction* in the new Parliament and Kirk-Aſſembly; and thoſe who had engaged for the *Relief* of their late Sovereign out of his Diſtreſs, to be *Excommunicated* as Enemies to God and the State. But, as the *Scots* had formerly *proteſted* againſt the *Trial* of the late King; ſo, immediately upon *his* Murder, they ſolemnly *proclaimed* his Son and Heir, 5 *Feb.* 1648, acknowledging themſelves BOUND *to recognize his juſt Title to the Crown, by the lawful Right of undoubted Succeſſion!* Notwithſtanding which, they preſumed to *clog* the ſame with ſuch ſhocking Reſtrictions, in Juſtification of their darling *Idol* the *Covenant*, that his Majeſty had but little Cauſe of Joy at the News. But, how to help himſelf was the Difficulty. The Earls of *Lanerick*, (now Duke of *Hamilton*, ſince the Execution of his Brother,) *Lauderdale* and *Calender* would neither concur with the *Engliſh* Lords of the Conncil then with the King, nor yet come into any Meaſures with the Marquis of *Montroſe*, in order to his Majeſty's Service. The King, therefore gave his *Commiſſion* to *Montroſe*, to re-enter *Scotland*, and raiſe his ſureſt Friends there; hoping that *his* Succeſs might happily reduce the Covenanters to a better Senſe of their Duty, and oblige them to *drop* the ſcandalous Conditions.

Q. What was the Event of that Expedition?

A. Very

A. Very diſaſtrous; and particularly to that HERO himſelf. He, with his wonted Gallantry, undertook the Service: And getting a ſmall Supply of Money, Men, and Shipping, in *Denmark*, *Sweden*, and *Holſtein*, with an Aſſurance of *more* Aſſiſtance from abroad, he found Means to land a few of his Men and Arms, in the Iſles of *Orkney*, (the reſt being loſt in a Storm) and following them himſelf, in *April*, 1650, advanced to *Caithneſs*; where he publiſhed his *Manifeſto*, inviting all true Loyaliſts to join him. But, the Country being full of Enemies, thoſe who were well-inclin'd could not come to his Standard: So that, being ſuddenly attack'd by *Straughan*, his Handful of Men were all kill'd, taken or diſperſed; and himſelf, in *Diſguiſe*, was baſely betray'd, by the Laird of *Aſſin*, formerly one of his Adherents, in whoſe Hands he had hoped for Safety and Protection!

Q. How did the *Covenanters* now treat this noble Captive?

A. According to the Spirit and Principles of the *Party!* No ſooner had they got him into their Hands, but they conveyed him in *Triumph*, 18 *May*, 1650, to the common Priſon at *Edinburgh*, with all the Marks of Cruelty, Ignominy and Revenge, by the Inſtigation of their *General Aſſembly*; their Miniſters preſuming even to pronounce his *eternal Damnation!* Then, after a formal *Thankſgiving* to God for that miſcall'd *Providence*, he was brought before the pretended *States* of Parliament, 20 *May*; by whom he was condemn'd to ſuffer Death as a *Traytor*, only for doing his bounden Duty of *Allegiance* to *that very* Prince, whom theſe Men themſelves had newly proclaim'd their *undoubted*, *lawful*, and *rightful Sovereign!* And this extraordinary Sentence

tence was accordingly executed, the very next Day, on a Gallows 30 Feet high, without any Regard to his Quality, the King's Commiſſion, or even to his own great *Clemency*, in having ſpared the Lives of many of theſe very *Rebels* themſelves, when they were at *his* Mercy. During all which barbarous Sufferings, aggravated by the bittereſt Railings and *Curſes* of the inveterate *Kirkmen*, *Montroſe* himſelf did not betray his Greatneſs of Soul by any Action, Expreſſion, Geſture, or Look, unbecoming a CHRISTIAN-HERO, triumphing over Death, and all the Powers of Darkneſs. Nor was the great *Montroſe* himſelf the *ſingle* Victim at that Time: But the ſame implacable Party executed their Malice upon 30 or 40 more Gentlemen of Diſtinction, in ſeveral Places, who ſhared with him in his Fortunes, and the *Honour* of ſuch a Death.

Q. Did the King now venture *his own* Perſon among them after this?

A. Yes; but very unwillingly: For it was then his only Retreat. *France* (then govern'd by a Queen-Regent and Cardinal *Mazarine*) would not prefer *his* Friendſhip to that of the new Common-wealth; and the *Dutch*, for the ſame Reaſon, wiſhed his voluntary Departure, that they might not be preſs'd to a more *rude* Manner of removing him: *Ireland*, to which he intended to have gone, was now ſubdued by *Cromwell*; and *Jerſey*, to which he retired a-while, could not long afford him Subſiſtance. Mere Neceſſity, therefore, obliged him to look towards *Scotland*; and *their* Knowledge of ſuch his Neceſſity, embolden'd the *Scots Covenanters* peremptorily to *inſiſt* upon his complying with their inſolent Demands, without which they would not return to their acknowledg'd Duty.

In

In this Diſtreſs, his Majeſty was forc'd to diſſemble his Reſentment at the provoking Injury done him in the Perſon of his Commiſſioner *Montroſe*, as well as the ſhocking Conditions which they offered to impoſe upon *himſelf*. Thus did he now ſubmit to accept of thoſe Conditions, becauſe he had no other Courſe to take; and immediately embarking for *Scotland*, arrived there, 23 *June* 1650. But he was not ſuffer'd to land, 'till he had firſt ſubmitted to the *Presbyterian* Yoke of the *Covenant*.

Q. And how did they treat him after it?

A. With an outward Profeſſion of great Reſpect, but no real Proofs of any. His *Engliſh* Domeſticks were all remov'd, (except the Duke of *Buckingham*) and none ſuffer'd to come near him, but preciſe *Covenanters*, who filled his Ears with continual Invectives againſt the Royal Family, and the Church of *England*, as if it had maintain'd the *Doctrine of Devils!* Nor did *Argyle*, and his *Faction*, admit the King *himſelf* into their ſecret Counſels; the Lord *Lorne*, his Son, being ſet *over* him as Captain of the Guard.

Q. What were the *Rump*, and their Adherents in *England*, doing all this while?

A. Cromwell, whom they had made Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*, having reduc'd that Kingdom, (and left *Ireton* his Deputy, who died of the *Plague* there,) was now conſtituted General of their Forces, on the Reſignation of *Fairfax*, with Orders to march againſt the *Scots*. In the mean Time the Covenanters had rais'd an Army, under the Command of old *David Leſlie*, Earl of *Leven*; but were ſo far from truſting the King, that he was not permitted to *ſee* it more than once. When *Cromwell* entered *Sootland*, 22 *July*, 1650, he found it well entrench'd near *Edin-*

Edinburgh. After lying ſeveral Weeks almoſt in Sight, and ſeveral Skirmiſhes, *Cromwell*, wanting Proviſions, retired towards *Dunbar*, in order to embark homewards. *Leſlie* followed him, with Caution, to watch all Advantages. But, the Influence of the *Covenant-Preachers* (who *blaſphemouſly* abuſed the Name of God, promiſing certain Victory to this their ARMY OF SAINTS, as they call'd them!) prevailed with him to advance: Upon which *Cromwell*, with equal Aſſurance, fell upon them, and gave them a memorable Defeat, 3 *Sept.* in Conſequence of which, he ſoon became Maſter of *Edinburgh*.

Q. What Effect had this upon the King's Affairs?

A. It was advantagious, ſo far as it oblig'd them to alter their Behaviour to him and his Friends. Before their late Defeat, all thoſe who had enter'd *England*, under Duke *Hamilton*, in 1648, or were otherwiſe *ſuſpected* of too much Loyalty to the preſent King, or Lukewarmneſs to the Covenant, were declar'd *incapable* of any Employment or Truſt; the Sin of *Malignancy* being compar'd, by thoſe *godly Miniſters*, to the *Sin againſt the* HOLY GHOST! But now, in the preſent Diſtreſs, the more moderate Party in the Parliament reſolved to admit them to the Service of their Country; tho' the more rigid *Preſbyterians* proteſted againſt it. Hence aroſe the Diſtinction between the *Reſolutioners* and *Proteſtors:* The latter of whom would have no Communication with the other; tho' the former had conſtrain'd the King to publiſh a ſtrange Declaration, on Purpoſe to gratify thoſe *Zealots*. To free himſelf from this Servitude, his Majeſty made a ſudden *Start* (as it was call'd) to join ſome of his *Highland* Friends, who had promis'd him

him a good Number of Troops: But, being prevail'd with to return, he was afterwards treated with more Regard; and at length, formally *crown'd* at *Scoon*, 1 *Jan.* 1650.

Q. How did he now proceed?

A. All Parties having Acceſs to him, a Parliament was call'd, and an Army rais'd; at the Head of which was the King himſelf, aſſiſted by *Hamilton*, *Leſlie*, *Middletoun* and *Maſſey*. *Cromwell* advancing, found the King ſo ſtrongly entrench'd, that he durſt not attack him. But, paſſing over into *Fife*, to cut off the King's Proviſions, his Majeſty took the Advantage of a quick March into *England*; which he entered, 6 *Aug.* 1651, expecting his *Engliſh* Subjects to join him. But, partly through the Roads being guarded by the armed *Militia*, which hindered his Friends from coming in, and partly by the *Deſertion* of many of the *Scots Preſbyterians*, who left their Colours in the March, his Army was rather diminiſh'd than augmented, when he arrived at *Worceſter*, on the 22d. There, while he was refreſhing his Troops, fatigu'd with a long March and frequent Skirmiſhes, *Crowwell* came up, and falling upon them with a much ſuperior Force, after a *gallant Defence*, equal to the Juſtice of their Cauſe, it pleaſed God to *permit* the fanatical Rebels to *triumph* in a complete Victory over their undoubted Sovereign, 3 *Sept.* 1651, and to gain thereby a freſh Occaſion to *blaſpheme Divine Providence* with a formal THANKSGIVING; which they enacted to be annually obſerv'd.

Q. What became of the King on this Defeat?

A. Finding all loſt, his Majeſty (who had highly diſtinguiſh'd himſelf in the Battle) was, by the Tears of his Friends, perſuaded to conſult the

the Safety of a Life dearer to others than to himſelf. In which Eſcape there were ſo many and great Dangers to paſs through, as nothing but the wonderful Guidance of Divine *Providence* indeed could have preſerv'd him from falling into the Hands of his blood-thirſty Enemies, who had ſet A PRICE *upon his Head!* In a Word, he was reduc'd to ſuch Hardſhips, by Day and by Night, within Doors and without, in Woods, Trees, and various mean Diſguiſes, as are not to be parallell'd in any Hiſtory YET EXTANT: And this, not for a few Days only, but ſeveral Weeks; for it was 22 *Oct.* before he found himſelf ſafely landed in *France*; as may be ſeen at large in the Treatiſe, entitled BOSCOBEL; but ſtill more particularly (with authentic Vouchers) in Mr. *Carte*'s General Hiſtory of *England* Vol. IV. Fol. 639.

Q. Did the *Scots Covenanters* reap any Advantage by the Abſence of the two Armies?

A. No. *Cromwell* had left Major-General *Monk* there, with 5000 Men, to reduce that Nation to the Obedience of the *Engliſh* Common-wealth. This he effectually performed; diſcouraging the *Covenant*, and diſperſing the *General Aſſembly*. Soon after which, the *Scots* were oblig'd, by a Sort of an *Union*, to ſo baſe a Servitude, as to ſubmit to be *meanly* repreſented, by a *limited* Number of Members at *Weſtminſter*, under the Appearance of a *Britiſh* Parliament.

Q. What Effect had this upon the public Affairs?

A. Theſe Succeſſes raiſed the Reputation of the new *Common-wealth* ſo high, that all the neighbouring States and Potentates either *courted* its Friendſhip, or *dreaded* its Arms. For, *France* itſelf (where our King had ſome Subſiſtance out of

of his Mother's Penſion) was ſo *mean*, under the Adminiſtration of Cardinal *Mazarine*, as to court the *upſtart Republic*, and take no Notice of the Diſtreſſes of an injur'd *Sovereign*.

Q. How did the *Dutch* behave towards them?

A. Tho' there was no reaſon to ſuſpect *them* of any Affection to the King or his Rights, there was ſuch an *Emulation* between the two Rival Republicks, that they mutually endeavoured to humble each other, tho' *neither* was willing to appear the Aggreſſor. At laſt, ſeveral Diſputes, about *England*'s Sovereignty of the *Seas*, the Compliment of the *Flag*, the Right to the *Fiſhery*, and the Injuries done by the *Dutch*, to the *Engliſh*, at *Amboyna*, and other Places, (computed at 1,700,000*l.*) and the late *Aſſaſſination* of their Agent *Doriſlaus*, at the *Hague*, occaſioned a War; which firſt broke out in *Oct.* 1651.

Q. What conſiderable Actions happened in this War?

A. A ſharp Engagement between the Admirals *Blake* and *Van Trump*, in *May*, 1652. Another between *Aſcough* and *de Ruyter*, in *Auguſt*. Another between *Van Gallen* and the *Engliſh*, in the *Mediterranean* (wherein the *Dutchman* was killed) in *Sept.* Another between *Blake* and *Van Trump*, 29 *Nov.* Another between *Blake*, *Monk* and *Dean*, and the ſame *Dutch* Admiral, 18 *Feb.* which laſted three Days. Another, between the ſame, wherein *Dean* was kill'd, 2 *June*, 1653. And another between *Monk* and the ſame *Dutchman*, 29 *July*, which alſo continued three Days; in the laſt of which *Van Trump* was kill'd. After which, the *Dutch* growing ſick of the War, and *Cromwell* finding a Peace more favourable to *his own* Views, a Treaty was concluded, 5 *April*, 1654,

1654, very advantageous to the Trade of *England*.

Q. How did *Cromwell* proceed, to gain the Power of which he was ambitious?

A. As he had the chief Influence over the Reſolutions of the *Rump*-Parliament, when he was but the *General* of their Forces; ſo now, diſcovering their Jealouſy of him, he reſolved to prevent his own Ruin, by promoting a popular Petition of the Army, for a Diſſolution of the preſent Parliament, and a Council to govern the Nation, 'till a new Election. But, the Majority of the Houſe ſeeming deſirous ſtill to continue the *uſurped* Power in their own Hands, *Cromwell* came to them, with ſome of his truſty Soldiers, 10 *April*, 1653, and, without any Ceremony, gave a KICK *to the Rump*, took away the Mace, and lock'd the Door. Together with whom ſunk alſo the fictitious *Aſſembly of Divines*, who had, for ſome Time before, dwindled to a *Committee*.

Q. Did he now immediately uſurp the Government himſelf?

A. No. He, with his Council of Officers, reſolved, at preſent, to intruſt the Supreme Power with 144 inconſiderable Fellows of his own Nomination. Theſe, meeting at *Whitehall*, 4 *July*, according to his Summons, aſſumed the Name of a *Parliament*; and, were by others called *Barebone*'s Parliament, by way of Deriſion, from a contemptible *Wretch* of that Name, who diſtinguiſhed himſelf among them by tedious and frequent Harangues.

Q. What worthy Actions were done by this pack'd *Convention*?

A. After a Seſſion of five Months, wherein they voted down *Tithes*, diſcouraged the *Miniſtry*,

ſtry, haraſſed the *Univerſities*, and ran to the laſt Degree of Folly and *Enthuſiaſm*, the only *wiſe* Reſolution they took, was, 12 *Dec.* when they acknowledged their own *Inſufficiency*, and formally reſigned the Power into the ſame Hands from whom they had receiv'd it. And now, the Council of Officers, being re-inveſted with the Supreme Power, under the Sanction of the pretended Authority of (a *Thing*, however abſurdly call'd) a *Parliament*, declared the Government, for the future, ſhould be by a *ſingle* Perſon; and namely, by his Highneſs *Oliver Cromwell*, Lord *Protector*; who thereupon was inveſted with great Solemnity, 16 *Dec.* 1653, with certain Conditions, in an Inſtrument of Government, in the Nature of an ORIGINAL CONTRACT.

Q. What Regard was paid to this new Protector?

A. Cardinal *Mazarine* ſent a ſplendid Embaſſy from the *French* Court, to congratulate him; and was glad of the King's Departure to *Cologn*, without being rudely diſmiſs'd. *Spain* was no leſs obſequious to this Uſurper, tho' not with the ſame Succeſs as to Alliance. In a Word, all his Neighbours *ſhamefully* ſtrove, which of them ſhould have the Honour to be firſt in his Favour. In the mean Time, the *Cavaliers*, or Royaliſts, at Home, were his Enemies, upon *Principles* of Religion and Loyalty; the *Preſbyterians* were piqu'd at his having rais'd the Independents, and other Sectaries, on the Ruins of their Covenant; and all the *Republicans* in general were averſe to him, for his now being a *Sort* of a Monarch! Among all whom, there was always ſome Scheme on Foot tending to his Ruin.

Q. How did he ſecure himſelf againſt them?

A. By

A. By various Executions in his *Slaughter-Houſes*. Thus, *Vowel* and *Gerard* were murder'd in *London*, 10 *July*, 1654. *Penruddoc* and *Grove* at *Exeter*, 9 *May*, 1655. *Sindercomb* condemn'd, (but died in Priſon,) in 1656; and Sir *H. Slingſby*, with Dr. *Hewit*, on *Tower-Hill*, 8 *June*, 1658, and ſeveral others. Notwithſtanding all which bloody Inſtances of an USURPER'S CLEMENCY, the Terrors of a *guilty-Conſcience* purſued him ſo cloſe, that, in his latter Days, he enjoyed no Quiet in his ill-gotten Grandeur; not daring to appear in Public without a ſtrong Guard, nor even to lie two Nights together in the ſame Bed, for Fear of meeting *ſome Part* of his deſerved Puniſhment *in this World*, where only he ſeemed to have any Apprehenſion of it.

Q. What Uſe did he make of Parliaments?

A. Only as the TOOLS to ſerve his boundleſs Ambition, and to ſupport himſelf in his Uſurpation. He called a Convention of the Commons, according to the Contract, on *Sunday*, 3 *Sept.* 1654, hoping to have his Protectoral Office confirm'd in the Name of a free Parliament. But, finding even *Them* diſpoſed rather to debate his Authority, he firſt *excluded* ſeveral of the Members, and afterwards diſſolved the reſt. However, he convened another, out of all the three (united) Nations, 17 *Sept.* 1656, excluding therefrom all ſuch as refuſed to ſubſcribe a previous Engagement to his Intereſt. This *Junto* immediately paſſed a *Renunciation* of their rightful Sovereign; and made it *High-Treaſon* to attempt the Life of the *Uſurper*; and, moreover, raiſed what Money he wanted, as well for his Army and Government at home, as for carrying

on the War which he had imprudently enter'd into againſt *Spain*.

Q. Was not the *Uſurper* now at the Height of his Honour?

A. Yes; but probably not ſo *high* as he wiſh'd to be. After an Affectation of extraordinary Popularity, ſome of his Agents (who, it ſeems, would have had ANY KING but the rightful Heir) procured an *humble Petition and Advice* to him from the Houſe, 4 *April*, 1657, to accept the *Regal* Title and Dignity: But, whatever were the true Motives of his refuſing the Offer, when a Crown was actually *made* for him, it ſeems to have been directed by a particular *Providence*, for the Good of a People, who, of themſelves, are ſo fond of *A King*, as not properly to *diſtinguiſh* between an USURPER with a *Crown* on his Head, and a more *Rightful* Prince without one. For, thus it pleaſed God, at that Time, to keep the Crown of *England* undefiled, *'till* HE *came*, *whoſe Right it was*, and then to *give it him*.

Q. How was this his Refuſal reſented?

A. As a great Proof of his *Moderation*. In Return for which, this *Mock-Parliament* was pleas'd to confirm him in his preſent Dignity, by a formal Inſtrument; and, in Purſuance thereof, he was inaugurated, with great Pomp, 26 *June*, 1657. Soon after which, to make a *Shew* of ſomewhat like the ancient Conſtitution, he re-aſſembled his Commons, 20 *Jan.* 1657, having iſſued out Writs to a certain *Pack* of his own Creatures, to meet and ſit in the *Other Houſe* (as *Peers*,) with two or three of the ancient Nobility; the reſt of that noble Order diſdaining to take their Seats there, in Company with ſuch *upſtart Lords*, as *Hewſon* the Cobler, and *Pride* the

the Drayman! *&c.* But theſe Two Houſes did not ſit long enough to do any Miſchief: For, their Maſter, finding them ſomewhat refractory, reduced them to their *Original Nothing*, by a Diſſolution, 4 *Feb.* following.

Q. In what Situation were his Affairs now Abroad.

A. He was at Peace with the *Dutch*, and in Alliance with *France* againſt *Spain*. In which War he had made himſelf Maſter of *Dunkirk* and *Mardike*, and the Iſland of *Jamaica:* But, at the ſame Time, he gave the *Dutch* a great Advantage in the *Spaniſh* Trade, and turned the Balance of Power in Favour of *France*.

Q. Did the King reap no Benefit by this Rupture?

A. Yes. *Spain*, being attack'd by the Uſurper, entered into an Alliance with the King: Who, thereupon, removed from *Cologn* to *Bruges*, in *April*, 1657, where he was not only nearer his Friends in *England*, but, in a Condition alſo to draw ſome Regiments of his Subjects, from the *French*, to the *Spaniſh* Service. Among the reſt, his Brothers, the Duke of *York* (who had already made himſelf a great Maſter in the Art of War under Marſhal *Turenne*) and the Duke of *Glouceſter*, who had reſided in *France* with the Queen-Mother, 'till the League was concluded between that Crown and the Uſurper. And now, his Majeſty being ſo near, and the Uſurper's Tyranny generally odious, even the *Anabaptiſts*, and other *Sectaries*, began to make canting *Addreſſes* of Loyalty to their Sovereign. So that, probably, if the Uſurper had lived any conſiderable Time longer, he had been reduc'd to a private Station, or ſuffer'd a condign Puniſhment. But it pleaſed God to permit him to die

in his Bed, and his unworthy Remains, after the moſt pompous and magnificent Manner, to be ſolemnly depoſited, for a while, among thoſe of our *Princes*; tho' it was not long e're a more *proper* Place was found to remove them to, under the *Gallows!*

Q. Was any thing particularly remarkable in his Death?

A. After all his Precautions to ſecure himſelf againſt an *Aſſaſſination*, Death broke through all his Guards, and, after a ſhort Illneſs, carried him off, 3 *Sept.* 1658; which had been formerly accounted a *lucky* Day to him, for his Triumphs at *Dunbar* and *Worceſter*, but was more *truly* ſo now to the Nation: And, as he had occaſion'd great Diſturbances in the World, ſo he left it, in one of the greateſt *Hurricanes* that ever was known, in the 60th Year of his Age.

Q. Did the King reap any Benefit by his Death?

A. Not immediately; any further than as he was thereby deliver'd from a moſt able and inveterate Enemy. For now, (as if *hereditary* Right were never to take Place but in the Family of *Uſurpers!*) no ſooner was the Father dead, but *Richard*, his eldeſt Son, was declar'd his *Rightful* Succeſſor; and had Heaps of fulſome ADDRESSES made to him, with Promiſes of *Life and Fortune*, from all Parts of the Nation! Tho' it was well known, that he had neither *Genius*, nor Capacity for public Affairs, nor had ever been intruſted or employ'd in any during his Father's Adminiſtration. And, it is remarkable, that, as this was the *firſt Inſtance* of ſuch addreſſing, ſo the ſame formal Addreſſers could patiently ſee him *ſink*, in a few Weeks after, without drawing one Sword in his Defence. So little

Reaſon

Reaſon is there to depend on *this Sort* of va in an empty Compliment!

Q. How did this new Protector behave?

A. His firſt Care was to call his Two Houſes, to give a *Parliamentary* VARNISH to his Title. Theſe, meeting, 27 *Jan.* 1658, after long Debates, recognized his Authority; but, through the mutinous Influence of the Officers of the Army, were diſſolv'd, 22 *April*, 1659. This Point being gain'd, the Officers, looking no longer upon *Richard* as Protector, reſolved of themſelves to recall the Members of the RUMP, who had been diſſolv'd by *Oliver*, in 1653. Accordingly, they were conducted to the Houſe by *Lambert*, and ſome Troops, 7 *May*; tho' their Number did not exceed 40 in all; two of whom were fetch'd out of Gaol, to make up the Form of a Houſe! And yet, *theſe* gravely took upon them to govern the Common-wealth, as before, without any ſingle Perſon, or Houſe of Peers; to which *Richard* himſelf quietly ſubmitted, and left *Whitehall.*

A. And what great Feats did *they* perform?

A. They appointed a *Committee of Safety*, for preſerving the Peace of the Nation; and a *Council of State*, for the more immediate executive Power; together with a formal *Oath*, ABJURING *the pretended Title of* their then undoubted Rightful Sovereign, *and the whole Line of the late King* James. But, theſe *Rumpers* were diſmounted by the Officers of the Army, 13 *Oct.* who erected a new *Committee of Safety*, for the Adminiſtration of the Government, the 26th.

Q. Did the King make no Advantage of theſe diſtracted Councils among the Rebels?

A. Yes. A Scheme was concerted for a general Inſurrection, 1 *Aug.* 1659; on the Proſ-

pect of which, his Majeſty (who had ſome Time reſided in the *Spaniſh Netherlands*) removed ſecretly to *Calais* and St. *Malo*'s, to be in readineſs. But, this Deſign, however well laid, was baſely BETRAY'D to *Thurlo*, by Sir *Richard Willis*, a Perſon principally truſted by the King and his Friends, but corrupted by *Oliver*. Upon which, ſeveral of the *Chiefs* being taken up, Sir *G. Booth* and Sir *T. Middleton*, who appeared on the Day, in *Cheſhire*, were eaſily defeated by *Lambert*. Upon which, his Majeſty went immediately to the *Pyrenees*; where the two Prime-Miniſters of the Kings of *France* and *Spain*, having an Interview, and concluded a Peace, gave him *ſpecious* Promiſes of their Aſſiſtance againſt the Rebels.

Q. How did the Rebels proceed the while?

A. The new *Committee of Safety* ſent Meſſengers to General *Monck*, (who then commanded in *Scotland*,) to engage *him* in their Intereſt. At the ſame Time he was courted alſo by the *Rump*. As he found it neceſſary to declare himſelf on the *one* Side, he choſe to take Part with the *latter*, and reſolved to march into *England*; giving out, that his Deſign was only to ſupport the *Parliament* againſt the Army. In the mean Time, many of the Officers and Soldiers declaring themſelves on the *ſame* Side, the Committee gave way to it; and accordingly the *Rump* re-aſſembled, 26 *December*.

Q. Did not this prevent General *Monck*'s Proceeding?

A. No. He entered *England*, 2 *January*: When, tho' he had Notice, that the Buſineſs he declared for was already done, he nevertheleſs advanced, as he profeſs'd, to reduce the Army to the Parliament's Obedience; and was attended, through his whole March, with Addreſſes for a

Free

Free Parliament. And thus, as the firſt *Storm* had aroſe from *Scotland*, 20 Years before, ſo now, the firſt *Sun-ſhine* began to appear from the *ſame* Country.

Q. What Difficulties had he to encounter in his Way?

A. Various. 1. *Lambert* (who, after his Succeſs in *Cheſhire*, was highly elated, and ſeem'd ambitious of the *Protectorate*) conſidering *Monck* as a powerful Rival, reſolved to oppoſe him: But, on the laſt Return of the Rump, *his own* Forces put him under Arreſt, and he was ſent to the *Tower*. 2. The *Rumpers* themſelves, being jealous that *Monck* deſign'd either to make *himſelf* Protector, or to reſtore the *King*, appointed a new *Council of State*, wherein he was named one of 31, who (as well as the Members themſelves) were all required to take the new-invented OATH OF ABJURATION. 3. *Scot* and *Robinſon* (two of their Members) were ſent to make *their* Compliments to him; but, in Reality, to attend him as their *Spies*. 4. The *Rump* had a greater Number of *Soldiers* then about them, than *He* had under his Command; who, if not remov'd by *fair* Means, might have oppoſed his Entry into *London*. 5. After he had quarter'd his Soldiers in Town, 3 *Feb.* he was refus'd his Place in the Council of State, for *excuſing himſelf* from taking the Oath of *Abjuration*. And, 6. The *Rump*, in Hopes to ruin him with the *Londoners*, impoſed upon him an Order, to *break down* the Chains, Gates, and Portcullices of the City, and *ſeize* ſeveral of the Common-Council-Men, for refuſing to pay them *Taxes*. All which Difficulties were not to be ſurmounted without the utmoſt Caution and *Secrecy*, as well as Courage and Reſolution: Wherein General *Monck* was ſo

great a Maſter, that he avoided the Snare, by punctually *obeying* their Orders; but kept his own Councils *cloſe*, 'till he found himſelf in a Condition to impoſe Terms upon *them* in his Turn.

Q. How did he diſcover himſelf?

A. By Degrees. For, when he had ſubmitted to the laſt odious Orders, he ſent a *Letter* to the *Rump*, expoſtulating with them freely on *their* Proceedings, and peremptorily *preſcribing* them a Day to *fill up* their Houſe, and then to give Place to a *full and free Parliament*. This ſoon reconciled him to the beſt of the *Londoners*; who now treated the *Rump* with due Contempt. And, when he had clear'd the Doors of the Parliament-Houſe from the *Guards*, (by which a Majority of the Members had been forcibly *excluded* from their Seats) the Houſe was preſently fill'd with the old ſecluded Members, 21 *Feb.*

Q. And how did *they* proceed?

A. Among other Things, they diſcharged from Priſon Sir *G. Booth*, Sir *T. Middleton*, and ſeveral of the King's Friends: They appointed a new Council of State, with General *Monck* at their Head: They conſtituted him *General* of all the Land-Forces in the three Nations; and, with Col. *Montague*, General alſo of the *Fleet*: Yet, being full of the *Preſbyterian* Leaven, they reinforced the *Covenant*, reverſed the *Engagement*, and juſtified the *War* againſt the late King; tho', by *Monck*'s prevailing Influence, they diſſolved themſelves, 16 *March*, appointing a Parliament of Lords and Commons, (yet under certain *Republican* Reſtrictions) to meet, 25 *April*, 1660.

Q. What did General *Monck* do after all this?

A. Re-

A. Receiving a Letter privately from the King, by Sir *J. Greenville*, he declared to him his Intention to ſerve his Majeſty, tho' he excuſed himſelf from returning his Anſwer in *Writing*: But he adviſed his Majeſty forthwith to remove from *Bruſſels* to *Breda*; which he did accordingly. In the mean Time, *Monck* took Care to reform the Army to *his own* Mind; ſo that all the Attempts of the *Fanaticks*, to prevent his glorious Deſigns, were happily fruſtrated.

Q. Did the Lords and Commons aſſemble at the Time appointed?

A. Yes. And, upon the Receipt of a Declaration and Letters from his Majeſty, 1 *May*, 1660, both Houſes acknowledg'd, and on the 8th ſolemnly PROCLAIMED, his Title to the Crown, *by inherent Birthright, and lawful and undoubted Succeſſion, as being lineally, juſtly, and lawfully* NEXT HEIR *of the Blood Royal.* And thus was his Majeſty, by Divine *Providence*, peaceably reſtor'd to his undoubted Right, after a long Rebellion and *Uſurpation*; during which he had been in *Exile, attainted, abjur'd*, and even a PRICE SET *upon his Head!*

Q. What was next to be done?

A. Commiſſioners were diſpatch'd from Both Houſes, as well as from the City, to attend his Majeſty in *Holland*, and to conduct him home; where he arriv'd, amidſt the Acclamations of his tranſported Subjects; who, but a *very few Weeks before*, had little or no *Proſpect* of ſo great a Bleſſing and Deliverance.

Q. When did the King return?

A. He entered *London* on the ever-memorable 29 *May*, 1660, (OLD STYLE) being his Birth-Day, when he was juſt 30 Years of Age.

Q. What

Q. What conſiderable Acts paſſed at firſt upon his Reſtoration?

A. The *Convention* of the Lords and Commons (whoſe Meeting was *eſſentially defective, not being call'd by the King's Writs*) was now turn'd into a *Parliament* by the King's Authority. And then his Majeſty paſſed a moſt gracious Act of Indemnity and Oblivion; in which were very few Exceptions, beſides the Perſons more *immediately* concern'd in the *Murder* of the late King.

Q. What Proceedings were had againſt thoſe *monſtrous* Regicides?

A. They were fairly tried, according to Law: And, tho' many *more* of them were convicted, there were but 10 executed, *at this Time*; who were ſo far from ſhewing any Signs of Repentance, that they all *gloried* in the Sin and Shame of their Sufferings, and were, by their *Party*, honour'd as *Martyrs* for their GOOD OLD CAUSE! And four more of them ſuffered in 1662.

Q. Could any be ſo reprobate, as to *juſtify* ſuch horrid Regicides?

A. None, but ſuch as would have *perpetrated* the ſame Crime, in the ſame Cirumſtances. And that ſuch there were, is too evident to be denied, from the Notoriety of their *Calves-Head-Feaſts*, Conſpiracies, and actual *Rebellions*; ſome of which will be taken Notice of hereafter.

Q. What Care was yet taken of the CHURCH?

A. Propoſals were made to the King, by the *Presbyterians*, for an Accommodation with the *Epiſcopalians*. This occaſioned a *Conference* at the *Savoy*, between Commiſſioners authoriz'd on both Sides, to try what Abatement could be reaſonably made in the Terms of *Conformity* on one Side, and what Advances towards it on the other. But, the *Conceſſions*, then propos'd to be made, not

not giving Satisfaction to the prejudic'd *Diſſenters*, a ſolemn *Review* of the Liturgy was made by the CONVOCATION which accompanied the next Parliament. Which LITURGY, with the Alterations then agreed upon, having paſs'd the Sanction of Authority, both of Church and State, was, from thenceforth eſtabliſhed, as THE ONLY RULE *of Worſhip* in the Church of *England*, by the *Act for Uniformity*.

Q. Why was there no *Convocation* aſſembled during the *firſt* Parliament?

A. Becauſe the *Church*, being overturn'd by the Preſbyterian Rebels, was not yet reſtor'd to her Rights, when that Parliament (or more properly, *Convention*) ſate. But, ſo ſoon as the King himſelf had recover'd *his* Right, he took Care to reſtore the Church to *hers*. In order to which, the few *depriv'd* Biſhops who ſurvived their Sufferings, conſecrated into their own Order *others* of the Clergy, to fill up the vacant Sees.

Q. Were there no *new Biſhops* conſecrated during the Uſurpation?

A. No. Tho' the old Biſhops, notwithſtanding their Deprivation, ordained Deacons and Prieſts, (ſome of *whom*, and particularly Dr. *Teniſon*, did afterwards ariſe to the *higheſt* Dignities in the Church) and perform'd all the other Duties of their Function, as Occaſion required, yet they had not conſecrated any new Biſhops. They had it, indeed, under Conſideration, to *provide for the Epiſcopal Succeſſion*, when the Biſhops themſelves were reduc'd, by Death, only to *Nine*; but they were prevented, in that otherwiſe *neceſſary* Proceeding, by the happy *Reſtoration*.

Q. What became of the Army?

A. It was diſbanded, as faſt as Money could be rais'd to pay the Soldiers. But, tho' the King re-

reſerved only a Regiment of Horſe, and another of Foot, for his own *Guards*, it cauſed a loud Clamour againſt him afterwards, as if he had had a STANDING ARMY to enſlave his People.

Q. Were the old Rebels now ſo quiet, that his Majeſty could have no need of *Guards*?

A. So far from it, that ſeveral of the *Oliverian* Officers were charg'd with a *Plot*, at that very Time, to ſeize the King's Perſon, *&c.* And, the next Winter, a Party of deſperate *Fanaticks*, headed by *Venner*, ſallied out of a *Metting-Houſe*, well arm'd, 6 *Jan.* 1660, repulſed the City *Militia*, and were not reduc'd, even by the *Guards*, 'till after many Men were kill'd on both Sides; beſides ſeveral more Attempts of the ſame kind, almoſt every Year.

Q. How long did the firſt Parliament continue?

A. It was diſſolved, 29 *Jan.* 1660, and a new one call'd, to meet, 8 *May*, 1661, more agreeable to the *Conſtitution* of Parliaments.

Q. As how?

A. Not only in their regular Summons by the *King's Writs*, but alſo in the Reſtitution of the *Lords Spiritual* to their eſſential Right, as being *the firſt* of the Three Eſtates in Parliament. For the Defect of which, in the former Convention-Parliament, all their Acts were now thought neceſſary to be *confirm'd* anew, by an Authority unexceptionable.

Q. What other moſt remarkable Particulars paſs'd, on this Recovery of the old *Engliſh* Conſtitution?

A. The rotten Carcaſſes of *Cromwell*, *Bradſhaw*, *Ireton* and *Pride* were taken up, and, after HANGING ſome Hours at *Tyburn*, were buried under the *Gallows*, 30 *Jan.* 1660, and their Heads

Heads ſet up on *Weſtminſter-Hall:* The ſolemn League and *Covenant* of the *Presbyterians* was burn'd by the common Hangman, 22 *May*, 1661, as was alſo the *Independents Engagement*, and ſeveral of the late Uſurper's pretended *Acts*, the 28th. And (for the Confirmation of the true old *Engliſh* Principles) it was now declar'd, by Acts of Parliament, That *neither the Peers, nor Commons, nor People, in or out of Parliament, nor* ANY *other Perſons whatſoever, have any coercive Power over the King:* That *the ſole Diſpoſition of the Militia, and of all Forts and Places of Strength, is the undoubted Right of his Majeſty*; and, That *it is not lawful, upon* ANY *Pretence whatſoever, to take up Arms againſt the King.*

Q. What was done in *Scotland* about the ſame Time?

A, The King having ſettled his Council and Miniſtry there, ſummon'd a Parliament to meet, 12 *Dec.* 1660, and made the Earl of *Middleton* his Commiſſioner. And now the *Covenant* was abrogated, *Epiſcopacy* reſtor'd, *Reſiſtance* condemn'd, and other Proceedings agreeable to thoſe in *England.* Moreover, the Marquis of *Argyle* (who had been the Principal in the late Rebellions and Uſurpations there) was tried, convicted and executed, 27 *May*, 1661, whoſe *Head* was ſet up, in the Place of that of the great *Montroſe*; for whom a magnificent Funeral had been ſolemniz'd, a few Days before *Argyle*'s Execution.

Q. What Biſhops had they to reſtore the Church in *Scotland?*

A. Four of the chief Miniſters, *Sharp, Hamilton, Fairfoul* and *Leighton* (who had been Preachers among the *Presbyterians*) came to *London*; where, having expreſly *diſclaim'd* the Validity of their

their former *pretended Orders*, they were firſt *ordain'd Deacons* and *Prieſts*, and, after that, were rais'd to the *Epiſcopal* Order, to qualify and enable them to confer the ſame on others, for the proper Settlement of that Church. And, of all theſe Dr. *Sharp* was pitch'd upon to be Archbiſhop of St. *Andrew*'s and Primate.

Q. Who was advanc'd to the Archbiſhoprick of *Canterbury?*

A. The moſt unexceptionable Doctor *Juxon*, Biſhop of *London*, (famous alſo for his worthy Adminiſtration as Lord *High Treaſurer*, and for attending the late King on the Scaffold:) But, this Prelate dying, 4 *June*, 1663, was ſucceeded at *Canterbury* by Dr. *Sheldon*, who had alſo before ſucceeded *him* in the See of *London*.

Q. Did not ſome *Alteration* happen about this Time, in Relation to the Rights of the *Clergy?*

A. Yes. Being perſuaded of ſome Inconveniences in their *taxing* their own Body by *their own* Repreſentatives in Convocation, they were drawn in, by the Lord Chancellor *Clarendon*, and others of the Miniſtry, to wave that ancient Right, and ſubmit to be tax'd, in common with the reſt of the People in *Parliament*. From which Time, as their CONVOCATIONS have been leſs *neceſſary* to the Crown, ſo their *ſitting* to do their proper Buſineſs, is thereby render'd *precarious*; tho' there is an expreſs *Proviſo* for reſerving their *ancient Rights*.

Q. What was the next moſt remarkable Tranſaction in the State?

A. A War with the *Dutch*, much promoted both by the Parliament and the City; which broke out in 1664, and was continued, 'till the Peace made at *Breda*, in 1667. In which War the Duke of *York*, Admiral of the *Engliſh* Fleet, highly

highly diſtinguiſhed *his Courage and Conduct*, and gain'd a ſignal Victory over the Enemy, 3 *June*, 1665, wherein *Obdam*, the *Dutch* Admiral, and his Succeſſor, *Cortenaer*, were both kill'd; beſides ſeveral other Engagements, under Prince *Rupert*, *Monck*, (now Duke of *Albemarle*,) and others.

Q. What other remarkable Things paſſed the mean Time?

A. A great *Plague* in *London*, in 1665, which carried off 68,596 (ſome ſay 100,000) Perſons: And a dreadful *Fire*, 2 *Sept.* 1666, which laid the greateſt Part of the City in Aſhes.

Q. Who were ſuppoſed to have been the *Incendiaries* of that Fire?

A. The *Fanaticks*, and their Friends in general, charge it upon the *Papiſts*; and particularly on one *Robert Hubert*, a *French* Youth, who was, too haſtily, hang'd for it: For, after his Death, it was prov'd, that he did not arrive in *London*, *'till two Days after* the Fire began; that he was a poor *Lunatic*, and moreover, not a *Papiſt*, but a *Hugonot*. On the other Hand, one *Rathbone*, and ſeveral others, who had been Officers and Soldiers in the late Rebel Army, were fairly convicted, 26 *April*, (*before* the Fire) for a treaſonable Conſpiracy, to *fire the City*, ſeize the Tower, and kill the King, *&c.* who, at their Execution, declared the City *would be* burn'd 3 *Sept.* following. 'Tis certain, during the *Dutch* War, many of the *Engliſh* and *Scots* Mal-contents held a Correſpondence with the Enemy; whoſe Endeavour it was, by raiſing Confuſions among us at home, to give Diverſion to our Arms abroad.

Q. Were the *Presbyterians* concern'd in any of theſe Conſpiracies?

A. They

A. They boaſted much of their LOYALTY, becauſe ſome of them had *given way* to the King's Reſtoration, when they felt themſelves gall'd with the Yoke of the *Independents* and other *Sectaries.* But, their Loyalty was ſoon diſcover'd, not only by the ſeditious *Libels*, with which they endeavoured to ſeduce the People from their natural *Allegiance*, but even by open *Rebellions*; particularly in *Scotland:* Where a great Body of the Enthuſiaſtic *Covenanters* (taking the Opportunity of our Confuſions *here*, occaſion'd by thoſe great Calamities of War, Plague and Fire) aſſembled in *Arms* on *Pentland* Hills; where they began with their wonted *Exerciſes*, of Sermons, Pſalm-Singing and long Prayers, but deſperately fought the King's Forces, 'till they were happily defeated, 27 *Nov.* 1666.

Q. What was the next moſt Remarkable?

A. During the Treaty at *Breda*, the *Dutch* Fleet, piloted up the River by ſome *Engliſh* Renegado-Fugitives, advanced to *Chatham*, and there burn'd and damaged ſeveral of our Ships, through the Negligence of the Commiſſioner, who was in Command there; beſides other Inſults upon our Coaſt, even *after* the Peace was actually concluded.

Q. What was the Conſequence of this?

A. To appeaſe the Murmurings at home of Miſmanagement (which generally affect the *Prime-Miniſter*) the Earl of *Clarendon* was remov'd, impeach'd and baniſh'd; and the Great Seal put into the Cuſtody of Sir *Orlando Bridgeman.*

Q. What was the next moſt conſiderable Event?

A. The concluding a *Triple Alliance*, between *England*, *Sweden*, and the *Dutch*, for the Security

rity of the *Spaniſh Netherlands*, and the Ballance of Power in *Europe*, in *January*, 1667. And a Peace between *France* and *Spain* at *Aix-la-Chapelle*, in May, 1668.

Q. Was the Nation in Quiet after this;

A. Yes; and in a very flouriſhing State for ſome Time, while a ſtrict Hand was held over the *factious Non-Conformiſts*. But, in 1669, a Scheme was privately form'd, by the Lord Keeper *Bridgeman*, Lord Chief Baron *Hale*, and others, to make ſuch *Conceſſions* as might bring the *Preſbyterians* into a *Comprehenſion* with the Church, and to gratify the other *Sectaries* with a *Toleration* or *Indulgence*. But this was then look'd upon as opening a Door for POPERY to enter, under the *Fanatical Cloke*; and therefore the Parliament quaſhed the Deſign for that Time.

Q. Were any other Attempts yet made againſt the Rights of the Church?

A. The Parliament of *Scotland*, having paſſed an Act, aſcertaining the King's Eccleſiaſtical Supremacy higher than ever, *Lauderdale*, the High-Commiſſioner, took that Occaſion to turn out *Burnet*, Archbiſhop of *Glaſgow*, and to confer it on *Leighton*. But this *Lay-Deprivation* and *Intruſion* ſo alarm'd the Friends of the Church; and the Biſhops of *England*, as well as *Scotland*, repreſented to the King the Conſequences of ſuch a *Stretch* of the *Regale*, in ſo clear a Light, that the Proceedings were revok'd, and Archbiſhop *Burnet* reſtor'd to his See.

Q. What was the next important Affair?

A. Another War with the *Dutch*; which broke out in 1671, and laſted 'till the End of 1673. The Ground whereof is, by the Diſaffected, imputed to ſecret Deſigns of introducing Popery and Arbitrary Power, rather than to any juſt

juſt Cauſe; tho' there were freſh Proofs enough of their Inſolence, too provoking to be borne by any Sovereign Prince. But, whatever was the Deſign, 'tis certain, it was concerted by a CABAL of five Lords, *Clifford*, *Arlington*, *Buckingham*, *Aſhley* and *Lauderdale*; of whom the three laſt (if they had *any* Religion) were *Preſbyterians*, whatever the other two were. 'Twas the ſame Lord *Aſhley* (afterwards Earl of *Shaftſbury* and Lord Chancellor) who, on the 4th of *Feb.* 1672, warmly inſiſted on the Neceſſity of this War againſt the *Dutch*, as the *eternal Enemies of England, both by Intereſt and Inclination*; applying to them the old *Roman* Maxim, *Delenda eſt* CARTHAGO.

Q. What paſſed moſt remarkable in this ſecond *Dutch* War?

A. A ſharp Engagement in *Solbay*, 28 *May*, 1672, between the Duke of *York* and *De Ruyter*; wherein Admiral *Montague*, Earl of *Sandwich*, was blown up, and *Van Ghent*, one of the *Dutch* Admirals, kill'd: Beſides ſeveral other Engagements under the Command of Prince *Rupert*, after the Duke had reſign'd it, 1673.

Q. Was the Nation in quiet at home the while?

A. No. *Shaftsbury* at the Head of the *Cabal*, had taken ſeveral Steps which were very unpopular. By *his* Advice the King did not only enter into this War againſt the *Dutch* by Sea, while *France* was over-running their Provinces by Land; but was prevail'd with to ſhut up his *Exchequer*, and to ſtop Payments out of it for ſome Time; to *diſpenſe* with divers Laws; to grant Liberty of Conſcience to all his Subjects in general; and to iſſue Writs out of Chancery, in the mean Time, to fill up the Vacancies of the Commons. Theſe Proceedings had poſſeſs'd many

many People with various Fears, as to Liberty, Property, and Religion; ſo that, no ſooner did the Parliament meet again, but they entered into Debates and Addreſſes thereon: And his Majeſty, ever ready to redreſs juſt Grievances, cancell'd his Declaration for Liberty of Conſcience, and promiſed them Satisfaction in the reſt. Upon this, *Shaftsbury*, to avoid an Impeachment, preſently revolted, (or rather openly returned) to the diſaffected *Antimonarchical* Party, with whom he had all along been united in Intereſt and Deſign; and, after having himſelf *treacherouſly* promoted the moſt *arbitrary* Counſels, became from thenceforth the moſt inveterate Enemy to the King's Perſon, Crown and Dignity; maliciouſly inflaming the People againſt the Effects of *his own* Advice: And all this, even while he held the Great Seal, which was but one Year.

Q. What particular Schemes are imputed to him after this?

A. The promoting a *Teſt*, to bar Papiſts from all Employments; which was plainly deſign'd againſt the Duke of *York* and his Friends: The ſupporting a Pack of infamous Wretches, to ſwear a *pretended Popiſh Plot*, while himſelf and his Tools were working a *real one*, not only to *exclude* the next Heir from his natural Right of Succeſſion, but even to *murder* him and the King too.

Q. Was the Parliament yet poſſeſs'd with this evil Spirit?

A. Yes. Such a ſurprizing Influence had the Intrigues of that wicked and crafty Stateſman, that now, by Degrees, the Commons became refractory; reſolving to raiſe no more Supplies to the King, 'till they were effectually ſecured againſt *Popery*, and other *Grievances*; (among which

which they voted his *Army* to be one, tho' even in a Time of open War!) and ſhutting their Door againſt the Uſher of the Black-Rod, when he was ſent by the King to command their Attendance, 4 *Nov.* 1673. Which factious Spirit, with other Accidents intervening, raiſed divers Squabbles between the two Houſes, and occaſioned frequent Prorogations; ſo that the King's Supplies were ſtill poſtpon'd, tho' the Party continually preſſed to engage him in a War with *France*, however unprovided.

Q. What Means were uſed to keep up ſuch a Spirit of Diſaffection?

A. Notwithſtanding the King's Care to marry the Lady *Mary* to *their* Favourite Prince of *Orange*, 4th *Nov.* 1677, yet nothing would allay their pretended Fears and Jealouſies of a Deſign to eſtabliſh Popery; tho', at that Time, there was *not one* Papiſt in a thouſand of the People in *England*. However, a PLOT was ſeaſonably projected, or found out, in 1678, to kill the King, to overturn the Government, to extirpate the Proteſtants, and to eſtabliſh Popery; and moſt of the conſiderable Papiſts were, by degrees, charg'd with it.

Q. How was it brought upon the Stage?

A. Firſt, by one Dr. *Tongue*, a projecting, but mean Divine: who, giving the King ſome general Accounts of it, was referred for further Examination to the Earl of *Danby*, Lord Treaſurer. After hearing the Allegations, both the King and Earl looked upon it as a meer *Fiction*: However, the Narrative, drawn up by *Titus Oates*, was by *Danby* laid before the Council, and thereupon many Perſons taken into Cuſtody. Soon afterwards, the Affair became the main Buſineſs of the Parliament; and *Oates* the principal Witneſs,

was

was examin'd before the two Houſes. When he had made his Depoſition, he ſolemnly proteſted, he had diſcovered ALL *he knew of it*; and yet afterwards, from Time to Time, added *freſh* Matter of great Importance. The whole Kingdom having now taken rhe Alarm, and the Diſcoverers of the Plot being exceedingly careſs'd, and ador'd, as the *Saviours* of the Nation! others were not wanting to put in for a Share of the Merit and Reward: And particularly *Bedloe*, ſuch another *vicious* Fellow, guilty of many notorious *Cheats*, came in as a ſecond to *Oates*: After him *Prance*, who, (after being tortur'd and tutor'd, by *Shaftsbury* and his Inſtruments) contradicted himſelf ſeveral times; affirming one Day, and denying the next: And at laſt, *Dugdale*, and others alſo, came in; whoſe Teſtimony, however highly credited by the Proſecutors of *this* Plot, was as much diſparag'd by them, as Perſons of *no Reputation* at all, but *perjur'd Raſcals*, when they were produc'd to diſcover the Conſpiracies of *their own* Party.

Q. What Proſecutions were now ſet on foot?

A. Staley a Goldſmith; *Coleman*, (ſome time the Ducheſs of *York*'s Secretary;) *Ireland*, and *Pickering*, two Prieſts, and *Grove*, a Lay-Brother; *Whitebread*, *Harcourt*, *Fenwick*, *Gawen*, and *Turner*, all Jeſuits, and *Langhorn*, a Lawyer, were all tried and executed as *Traytors*: And every one of them, with his laſt Breath, denied the Crimes ſworn againſt them. But, ſoon after, when Sir *G. Wakeman* and others were brought to their Trials, the *ſame* Witneſſes appeared ſo plainly *forſworn*, that there was no more Credit given to their Teſtimony. For, after the *hot Fit* was ſomewhat abated, and the People, like true *Engliſhmen*, began to relent at

the Blood already ſhed, they ſuffered their Reaſon to recover its Place, and would no longer implicitly ſwallow Abſurdities; ſuch as that the *Duke* was in a Plot againſt his *Brother*, the *Queen* againſt her *Husband*, and even the *King* againſt *himſelf!*

Q. Did any extraordinary Accident happen to inflame this Proſecution?

A. Yes. Sir *Edmund-Bury Godfrey*, a Juſtice of Peace, before whom *Oates* had ſworn to his Narrative of the Plot, had been found kill'd in the Fields. This was immediately pronounc'd Murder; and the *Papiſts*, of courſe, deem'd the Inſtruments. Upon which, it was made a Part of the Popiſh Plot to inflame the Nation; and *Green*, *Berry*, and *Hill*, three Servants belonging to *Somerſet-Houſe*, were condemn'd, 11 *Feb.* 1678, and executed for it: But all three proteſted their Innocence at their Death; and *Berry*, indeed, was *not* ſo much as a *Papiſt*. And *Prance* (the principal Witneſs againſt them) was afterwards convicted of *Perjury*, on his own Confeſſion; with Proofs ſufficient, that if the unhappy Gentleman did not kill *himſelf*, he was (at leaſt) not murther'd by *Papiſts*.

Q. Did all theſe Proceedings meet with no Interruption?

A. Yes. As the Earl of *Danby* had been averſe to the Principles of the *Cabal*, and ſeem'd not to favour the preſent Proceedings on the Plot, it raiſed the Hatred of the Party againſt *him*; who preſently form'd an Impeachment to ruin him. In the mean Time, the King thought fit to diſſolve that Parliament, 24 *Jan.* 1678, which had continued near 18 Years; and ſummon'd another to meet 6 *March* following. Theſe no ſooner aſſembled, but they purſued the ſame Methods againſt

againſt the Earl; who produced and pleaded the *King's Pardon*: Notwithſtanding which, he was committed to the Tower, 16 *April*, 1679. And the Commons proceeded to paſs an unprecedented Vote, That *no Commoner ſhould preſume to maintain the Validity of the Pardon*, tho' the Lords had *appointed* a Day to argue it. In all which Affair, they were ſo *zealous* for the Preſervation of his Majeſty's Perſon and the Proteſtant Religion, that they purſued, with full Cry, to hunt down one of his Majeſty's principal *Proteſtant* Servants, and let the *Popiſh Lords* ſleep quietly in the Tower for a long Time after!

Q. What Spirit had poſſeſs'd the Houſe of Commons in thoſe Days?

A. The Clamour of Popery (artfully rais'd by thoſe of the *Republican Leven*, who had been too unadviſedly taken into Favour at Court,) had ſo ſtupified the Multitude, that now (eſpecially in the Boroughs) they generally had returned *Presbyterians*, or Occaſional Conformiſts, to repreſent them in Parliament; whoſe Proceedings ſeem'd to be copied from thoſe of their Fathers in 1641.

Q. What Steps did they take in that Way?

A. Their *Zeal* was ſo extraordinary, that they choſe to ſit on a *Sunday*, 27 *April*, 1679, (being a Work of *equal* Neceſſity and Chriſtian Charity!) to vote, and on the *ſame* Day-Fortnight reſolved to bring in a Bill to *baniſh* and *exclude* the Duke of *York* from his *Natural* Right of Succeſſion. Beſides which, they had the Modeſty, to vote the *King's Guards* a GRIEVANCE, (as undoubtedly they were, to thoſe who had Deſigns againſt his Perſon;) to demand the *Militia*; to attempt to *deprive* the Biſhops of their Right of ſitting on the Trial of the impeach'd Lords; and to declare, that if His Majeſty ſhould come to a violent

Death, they would *revenge it on the Papiſts!* As if none but Papiſts were of *King-killing* Principles! No wonder therefore, if ſo *flagrant* Proofs of their *Moderation*, induc'd the King to prorogue them, 27 *May*, 1679, and to diſſolve them, 10 *July*; tho' he ſummoned another Parliament to meet 17 *Oct.* following.

Q. Were there no other Proofs of the Spirit of the *Presbyterians* about this Time?

A. Yes. The extravagant Proceedings of the Party in *England*, communicated by a *Signal* (as it were) from a Speech of *Shaftsbury*'s, made in Parliament 25 *March*, 1679, and induſtriouſly tranſmitted into *Scotland*, had preſently inflam'd their Brethren there to that Height of audacious and diabolical Outrage, that they now perpetrated the *Murder* of Archbiſhop *Sharp*, which had ſeveral Years before been attempted, as a Sacrifice to the Covenant.

Q. How was that?

A. In 1668, *James Mitchel*, one of their *Conventicle-Preachers*, had fir'd three Bullets into his Coach in the Streets of *Edinburgh*, but happily miſſed the Primate that time. But now, 3 *May*, 1679, in his Return home from the Council, he was purſued by twelve armed Men on Horſeback, who ſtopped his Coach at Noon-day, and, without any Compaſſion for his venerable grey Hairs, or the moving Entreaties of his Daughter, then with him, barbarouſly murdered him with 22 Wounds, (while he was *praying even for them*) ſtirring his Brains in the Skull with the Points of their Swords!

Q. Was this the concerted Act of the *Party*, or only of a few furious *Zealots?*

A. Of the *Party*. For, on the 29th of the ſame Month (inſtead of ſolemnizing the Anniver-

ſary

ſury of the happy Reſtoration,) 80 *Presbyterians* appeared in Arms; who in a few Days increaſed to a regular Body of 14 or 1500 Horſe and Foot, commanded by *Balfour* and *Hackſton*, (two of the *Aſſaſſins*) with Major *Weir*, much admired for his *extempore* Praying, but a moſt *infamous* Wretch, (ſoon after convicted and executed for Blaſphemy, Inceſt, and Beſtiality,) and others. Theſe, after repulſing a Party of Horſe and Dragoons, and ſtill increaſing in Force, made themſelves Maſters of *Glaſgow*; where they proclaimed the *Covenant*, burned ſeveral Acts of Parliament, and committed divers other Outrages. But, the Duke of *Monmouth*, being ſent with an Army, defeated them at *Bothwell-Bridge*, 22 *June*, killing 800, and taking 1200; tho' he *unaccountably* ſuffered 1600 Horſe to make their Eſcape *untouch'd*.

Q. How did the Faction in *England* now behave?

A. With their wonted Inſolence and Diſaffection; tho' the King had tried to gratify them, by taking *Shaftsbury*, *Eſſex*, *Hollis*, *Ruſſel*, and ſome more of them, into his Council. But this, tho' it raiſed their Credit, did not reduce them to Temper. The Duke of *York*, and all his Friends, muſt be remov'd from Court; the better to enable the Party to procure an Act to EXCLUDE him from the Succeſſion: Nor could all the Expedients propoſed by the King, for the effectual Security of the eſtabliſhed Religion againſt Popery, ſilence the Clamour of thoſe, whom *nothing* would content, but breaking the Line of *Inheritance*, and thereupon rendering the *Succeſſion* to the Crown precarious.

Q. What was the Aim of the Faction in ſo doing?

 A. Whether

A. Whether to ſet up the Duke of *Monmouth*, or they had a *farther* View, ſince the Marriage of the Lady *Mary* to the Prince of *Orange*, or ſome of them had Hopes of reviving (what they called) a *Commonwealth*, is uncertain. But, if they could once have gain'd their Point, to break the Succeſſion, it was thought, the King himſelf would not have been long ſafe in his Throne.

Q. What Title had *Monmouth* to the Throne?

A. None at all by Law: For, he was only a *Baſtard*. But, his Faction endeavoured to perſuade the People, that he was the King's Legitimate Son, born in Wedlock; tho' his Majeſty made the moſt public and ſolemn Declarations to the contrary: As if (contrary to all Law and Reaſon) a Child diſown'd by *either* of his Parents could have a Title to an INHERITANCE, equal or preferable to one whoſe Legitimacy is affirm'd by *both!*

Q. How did the King proceed after this?

A. He removed *Shaftsbury* from the Council, and *Monmouth* from his Poſt of Captain-General.

Q. How came *ſuch* a Man to be truſted with the Command of the Army againſt the *Scots* Rebels, at ſuch a critical Time?

A. By the Artifices of the *Faction* now in Power here. Theſe, having procured their Favourite *Monmouth* to be intruſted with the Army, took care to draw up his Orders with ſuch a Latitude, as to authorize him to fight, or TREAT with, the Rebels, as he ſhould think fit. But, *Lauderdale* (wiſely diſcerning the *Deſign* of the *Faction)* prevailed with the King to iſſue freſh Orders, *poſitively to fight*; which were not to be open'd, but at a Council of War, and in Sight of the Enemy. Thus the Rebels, inſtead of a *Treaty*, (which their Correſpondents here had given them hopes

hopes of) met with a *Charge*, which broke all the Meaſures of the Faction at *Bothwell* Bridge. And now the Duke of *York*, who for ſome Time had retired to *Bruſſels*, was ſent for *Home*, and afterwards to *Scotland*, as High Commiſſioner, where he paſſed ſeveral Acts of Parliament, to the Honour of the *Crown*, and the Service of the *Church*.

Q. Did the new Parliament of *England* meet at the Time appointed?

A. No. The King, perceiving that the *Faction* were preparing to take the ſame Meaſures againſt *him*, as had before been taken, in 1641, againſt his Father, did not think fit to give them the like Opportunity; but, by ſeveral Prorogations kept them off 'till 21 *October* 1680: Which gave an Occaſion to that invidious Diſtinction of *Whigs* and *Tories*; the former preſſing the King with numerous *Petitions* for the more ſpeedy ſitting of the Parliament, and the latter declaring their *Abhorrence* of ſuch an Inſult upon his Majeſty's undoubted Prerogative.

Q. What paſſed in Parliament when they did ſit?

A. The Commons proceeded in the ſame Track: *Popery*, and *Slavery*, and *evil Counſellors*, were the common Cry; and no Conceſſions would put an End to their Fears and Jealouſies, without an utter EXCLUSION of the *Right Heir!* a Repeal of the *Penal Laws* againſt Proteſtant Diſſenters! an Union or *Comprehenſion* of all his Majeſty's Proteſtant Subjects! a general *Naturalization* of all Foreign Proteſtants! the baniſhing or diſarming of all Papiſts, and (thoſe whom they were pleas'd to call) *ſuſpected Papiſts*, and a continual Seſſion of the Parliament, 'till Proteſtantiſm ſhould

be effectually ſecured to *their* Liking! But, not a Word in favour of the *Eſtabliſhed Church!*

Q. How far did they now proceed on the Bill of Excluſion?

A. It was brought in again, on the Motion of Lord *William Ruſſel*, and others; and after warm Debates, paſs'd, and carried up to the Lords: But *there* it dropp'd on the ſecond Reading, by a Majority of 63 againſt 30, all the BISHOPS then preſent (except three) voting againſt the EXCLUSION, as *contrary to the Laws both of God and Man.*

Q. Were not the Biſhops at that Time Popiſhly affected?

A. Far from it: As every unprejudiced Perſon muſt be convinc'd, by the well-known Characters of the then Archbiſhops *Sancroft* and *Sterne*, and the then Biſhops *Morley*, *Croft*, *Ward*, *Rainbow*, *Dolben*, *Sparrow*, *Gunning*, *Crew*, *Wood*, *Carleton*, *Pritchard*, *Mews*, *Pearſon*, *Hum. Lloyd*, *Compton*, *W. Lloyd*, *Barlow*, *Fleetwood*, *Fell*, *Lamplugh*, *Thomas*, *Gulſton*, *Beaw*, and *W. Lloyd.*

Q. Was there no LAW yet made againſt a *Popiſh Succeſſor?*

A. No. If there had been *any* ſuch Law already, there would not have been ſuch a Buſtle now, about making a NEW ONE.

Q. Were therea ny more Proceedings on the Popiſh Plot?

A. Yes. The Viſcount *Stafford* (one of the 5 Popiſh Lords in the Tower) was tried on an Impeachment before his Peers, in *December*, 1680; who, upon the Teſtimony of *Dugdale*, *Oates* and *Turberville*, adjudged him guilty of High-Treaſon; upon which he was Beheaded, 29 *Dec.* proteſting his Innocence alſo with his laſt Breath.

Breath. But the MODERATE Men of that Time were ſo deſirous to have had him *hang'd and quarter'd*, that *Bethel* and *Corniſh*, two noted *Independents* and *Republicans* (then Sheriffs) ſcrupled the King's *Authority* to diſpenſe with *that* Part of the Sentence (as is uſual in Favour of Perſons of Quality) 'till the *Commons* were graciouſly pleas'd to declare themſelves CONTENT that his Majeſty ſhould be obey'd!

Q. How long did the King bear ſuch Inſolence?

A. Not much longer. For, he diſſolved that Parliament alſo 18 *Jan.* but not 'till the Commons had further provoked him, by falling foul upon his Judges and Miniſters of State, and other Loyaliſts; refuſing to *raiſe* him any Money themſelves, and terrifying others from *lending* him any; and even projecting an *Aſſociation*, for the Support of *their* Good Old Cauſe *&c.* In a Word, notwithſtanding all the Clamours of *Arbitrary Power*, imputed to his Majeſty by his malicious Enemies, it is evident, that this factious Houſe of *Commons* actually did exerciſe more of it, in one ſhort Seſſion, than can be fairly laid to the Charge, not only of *this* King, but of the whole Race of the STUARTS, ſince they firſt inherited this Throne.

Q. Did the King call any more Parliaments after this?

A. Yes. One more; which was ſummon'd to meet at *Oxford*, 21 *March* following, that the Party might be at a greater Diſtance from the then Factious City of *London*.

Q. What paſſed in this *Oxford* Parliament?

A. Great Care was taken by the *Faction*, to get *the ſame* Men in general return'd to the Houſe of Commons; who now entered *Oxford*, attended by a numerous Train of well-arm'd Horſemen,

with particular *Cockades* to diſtinguiſh their Party. And, no ſooner was the Parliament open'd, but the PACK took the Scent, and purſued the ſame Royal Game with full Cry. But, His Majeſty, now convinc'd of their real Deſign, coming ſuddenly to the Parliament-Houſe, pronounc'd their Diſſolution, after one Week's Seſſion; and, immediately, taking Coach for *Windſor*, happily eſcaped the intended *Snare*, and broke the Meaſures of the Faction.

Q. How did the King govern, after this Diſſolution?

A. He now began to ſeek for Juſtice againſt *Shaftsbury*, and ſome others, who were indicted: But the Grand-Juries, return'd by the *then* Sheriffs of *London*, were *ſo* carefully ſelected and inſtructed, that they would not find Bills againſt any of *their* Favourite-Party. However *College*, the *Proteſtant Joiner* (ſo call'd) being indicted at *Oxford*, for Treaſonable Practices *there*, (where the *Ignoramus*-Juries had no Influence) the King had Juſtice againſt him. Nor was it long before *London* itſelf, as well as the Kingdom in general, was recover'd to a better Senſe of their Duty, by a condign Puniſhment of ſome notorious Rioters: Upon which, that City being no longer a Sanctuary for Sedition and Treaſon, *Shaftsbury* fled for Protection (to his *Carthage*) among the *Dutch*; where he died ſoon after, very little regarded.

Q. What moſt Remarkable happened next?

A. The Diſcovery of a Conſpiracy of ſome who called themſelves the TRUE-PROTESTANTS, to murder the King and Duke at the *Rye-Houſe*, in their Return home from *Newmarket*. This Diſcovery was made by two of the Conſpirators, named *Keeling*, in *June* 1683; and their Depoſitions ſoon after confirm'd by Col. *Rumſey*, *Weſt*, *Shep-*

pard

pard, *Lee*, *Bourne*, and the Lord *Howard*. Upon which Evidence, Capt. *Walcot*, *Hone*, *Rouſe*, Lord *W. Ruſſel*, and Col. *Sidney*, were convicted and executed; *Holloway* and *Armſtrong*, being outlaw'd, and afterwards taken, ſuffered in like Manner. But, the Earl of *Eſſex* (then in the Tower for the ſame Plot) prevented public Juſtice by *his own* Hands; and *Monmouth* procured his Pardon by a full CONFESSION and fair Promiſes.

Q. Was not the Reality of this *Plot* ſuſpected?

A. It was much diſputed by the Patrons of the *Good Old Cauſe*: But, this is evident, that whereas all thoſe who ſuffered for the *Popiſh Plot*, affirmed their *Innocence* with their laſt Breath, theſe confeſſed *Guilt* enough to warrant Public Juſtice; and ſome of them had the Hardineſs to juſtify themſelves, and *glory* in their Crime!

Q. Did the King enjoy the reſt of his Reign in Quiet?

A. Yes. But it was not long. For, he died of an Apoplexy, 6 *Feb.* 1684, in the 55th Year of his Age, and the 37th of his *de Jure* Reign, tho' but the 25th after his Reſtoration.

Q. What Character is given him in Hiſtory?

A. Various, according to the Affection or Prejudice of the Writers. While one Party paints him like another *Tiberius*, the other deſcribes him more like *Titus*, the Delight of Mankind. The Truth is, he was a Prince of extraordinary *natural* Endowments, of great Quickneſs and Penetration, and admirably *qualified* for the Station he was born to. But, theſe Advantages were not without Abatements in *private* Life; wherein his *Pleaſures* were too ſtrong for him, and expoſed him too much to be manag'd by a *Party* who were no Friends to his Perſon or Authority. However, towards the latter End of his Reign, he

recollected himſelf for Buſineſs, recovered his Ground, and died with the *Faction* at his Feet.

Q. Was he not ſuſpected of being a Papiſt?

A. He has been frequently ſo reputed; tho' the Authors are not agreed among themſelves about the Proof of it. Neither is it eaſy to account for the *Deſign* of thoſe who take Pains to perſwade us, that he was a *Papiſt*, unleſs it were (perhaps) to ſhew, that the CHURCH of *England* might be ſafe and flouriſhing even under a POPISH KING! For, that it *was ſo* in the Reign of King *Charles* II. cannot be doubted, by thoſe who conſider the Perſons promoted by *him* to the higheſt Dignities in it: Among whom (beſides the beforenamed) were *Juxon* and *Sheldon*, Archbiſhops of *Canterbury* and *Frewen* of *York*; together with the Biſhops *Duppa*, *Sanderſon*, *Henchman*, *Griffith*, *Coſin*, *Lucy*, *Laney*, *Walton*, *Nicholſon*, *Monck*, *Hacket*, *Earl*, *Ferne*, *Henſhaw*, *G. Hall*, *Barrow*, *Paul*, *Blandford*, *Davies*, *Fuller*, *Wilkins*, *Creighton*, *Bridgman*, *Brideokes*, *Frampton*, *Lake*, *Turner*, *Womocke*, *Smith*, *Sprat*, *Kenn*, &c. whoſe EPISCOPAL VIRTUES ſet *them* as far above any common Praiſes, as beyond the Reach of Envy or Malice to ſully their known Characters.

xlvii. 27 JAMES. II.

Q. Who ſucceeded King *Charles* II?

A. His Brother and undoubted HEIR, the Duke of *York*, now King *James* II. in Virtue of his then acknowledg'd INDEFEASIBLE HEREDITARY RIGHT.

Q. Did he meet with no Diſturbance in the Beginning of his Reign.

A. Tho'

A. Tho' his Acceſſion was attended with all the outward *Appearance* of univerſal Joy, and Profeſſions of *unchangeable Loyalty*, in a multitude of Congratulatory *Addreſſes*, from all Parts, in the moſt affecting Terms of Courtſhip; yet, His Majeſty had not long enjoy'd his Throne, before ſome Circumſtances were taken notice of, which gave Occaſion for *ominous* Concluſions. For, on the very Day of the *Coronation*, 23 *April*, 1685, the Royal Diadem was ſo ill fitted, that it was obſerv'd, not to *ſit faſt on his Majeſty's Head.*

Q. What was the firſt material Diſturbance?

A. The ungrateful *Monmouth* (whoſe *Pardon* had been lately obtain'd through the preſent King's generous Interceſſion) having met with a kind Reception and Entertainment in a Neighbouring Country, (where ſuch *Renegades* from the *true* Religion and Loyalty were too generally welcome,) was fitted out with Arms, a Fleet and Forces, to make a FORLORN Attempt upon *England*, while his Confederate Rebel, *Argyle*, did the like in *Scotland.* Accordingly, they both landed; and were ſeverally defeated, taken and executed; *Argyle*, 30 *June*, and *Monmouth*, 15 *July*, 1685.

Q. Was there any thing particularly remarkable in *Monmouth*'s Caſe?

A. Yes. In his Declaration he did not only *brand* the King with the *Fire* of *London*, the *Popiſh Plot*, the *Murder* of *Godfrey* and *Eſſex*, and even with *poiſoning* the late King, and every other *Calumny* that the Malice of the Party could ſuggeſt; but alſo (ſoon after his landing) took upon himſelf the ROYAL STILE, charging the *King* with *Uſurpation*, and ſetting a PRICE upon his Head. Notwithſtanding which, on his Submiſſion,

miſſion, when taken, his Majeſty inclined to *pardon* him, and to that End admitted him to his Preſence; but the Effects thereof were prevented, (as 'tis believ'd) through the Influence of a certain *principal Stateſman*, leſt he ſhould have diſcover'd ſome important SECRETS, relating to *another Scheme*, which was not yet ripe for Execution.

Q. What Proceedings were had againſt the other Rebels who had join'd him?

A. Commiſſioners were ſent down to try them; and great Numbers were convicted of Treaſon. And, becauſe many of thoſe notorious Rebels ſuffer'd the Law, great Outcries have been made by *their* Party, againſt the Commiſſioners, (and eſpecially againſt Lord *Jefferies*, who was but *one* of the Five) as if the Sufferers had been ſo many *Saints* and MARTYRS, cruelly butcher'd by bloody Perſecutors! Whereas, ſurely, if the Proceedings againſt them had been ſo unjuſtifiable as is pretended, none of thoſe who concurr'd therein, could have been ſo highly *favour'd* and PREFERR'D, as ſome of them were, immediately after the following *Revolution*.

Q. Were there any other Inſtances of Severity about this Time?

A. Much Noiſe of it; but with little Reaſon. The famous *Titus Oates* indeed, who was now render'd infamous, by two Convictions of *wilful Perjury*, in *May*, 1685, ſuffer'd the Puniſhment appointed by Law, tho' *far ſhort* of the many bloody Sentences formerly paſs'd and executed, on the Credit of his falſe Teſtimony: And Alderman *Corniſh*, (who had been remarkably active againſt the Court,) being convicted of a Share in the late *Rye-houſe Plot*, was Executed, 23 *October*. Some few others were alſo puniſh'd for *ſeditious Libels*, and audacious Inſults upon the King and his

his Government; who were all enroll'd in the Catalogue of MARTYRS, or Glorious *Confeſſors*, for the *Good Old Cauſe!* But, a much greater Number of the like Offenders reaped the Fruits of his Majeſty's *Clemency*; which many of them afterwards requited, with THEIR WONTED Gratitude.

Q. Did not the King meet with other Troubles, after ſuppreſſing theſe Rebels?

A. Yes; but not immediately. He was, for ſome Time, in a very flouriſhing State: His open Enemies being ſubdued; his Parliaments in all his three Kingdoms dutifully attach'd to him; the *Clergy* in general exerting themſelves, to enforce the Scripture Doctrine of OBEDIENCE; and the People reaping the Fruits of it in Peace and Plenty: So that the King was highly renown'd abroad, and held the Balance of Power in his Hands.

Q. What then could diſturb the Felicity of thoſe *Halcyon* Days?

A. Miſconduct undoubtedly; but *where* to lay the Blame of it is the Queſtion. That His Majeſty had *Evil Counſellors* about him, and was hurried on, more by the *treacherous* Advice of *others*, than by his own private Inclination, is not denied. He had now taken ſome into his *prime* Confidence, who had warmly promoted the EXCLUSION of him: And, unleſs he could have been *certain* of their ſincere Change of Principles, it muſt naturally be expected, that *ſuch* Men, would not ſtudy to *ſettle* him in the Throne, of which they had endeavour'd to deprive him. No wonder therefore, that he was *put upon* ſuch Meaſures, as tended to raiſe Miſunderſtandings, and by Degrees to alienate the Affections of his People: Since Princes cannot ſee and hear every thing without the

the Mediation of their *Miniſters*; who therefore have it in *their* Power, to repreſent the Circumſtances of Affairs in ſuch *Colours* as may be moſt ſubſervient to their own *private* Views.

Q. What was the firſt Occaſion of breaking the happy Harmony between the King and his People?

A. The King, having had Experience, in the late Rebellion of *Monmouth*, how little the ordinary *Militia* was to be depended on, had found it neceſſary to increaſe his *Regular* Forces to 15,000 Men; which he was deſirous to keep up, as a ſtanding *Guard* againſt the like Attempts of the Faction for the future. This was warmly debated, even in a Parliament of undoubted Affection to his Majeſty, as the *Maintaining many idle Perſons, to Lord it over the reſt of the Subjects; and to debauch their Manners, Wives, Daughters, Servants, &c.* But, what gave the greateſt Diſguſt, was, that the King had imploy'd ſome few Officers in this Army, not qualified by the *Teſt*: Which, as it rais'd a Jealouſy of the increaſing Power of *Popery* on the one Side, ſo the Diſcovery of that Jealouſy was, by the Court-Incendiaries, repreſented to his Majeſty as a Mark of *Diſaffection.* To ſtrain the Point ſtill farther, a Set of *Judges* were procur'd, to give a Sanction to the King's legal Right of *Diſpenſing* with the Teſt, and Penal Laws: And, becauſe the Parliament alſo could not go the ſame length, they were ſeveral Times prorogued, and afterwards diſſolv'd, 2 *July*, 1687.

Q. What Methods did the *Politicians* now take?

A. Knowing the King himſelf to be *conſcientiouſly* a Papiſt, ſuch of them as affected to gain *his* Favour, thought the beſt way to make their *Court*,

Court, was, to profeſs the *King's Religion:* At the Head of whom was the Earl of *Sunderland*, (the Secretary of State and Prime Miniſter;) who now gain'd the *Aſcendant* in all Counſels and Tranſactions.

Q. What farther Advances were now made towards *Popery?*

A. Some other Popiſh Lords were admitted into the Privy Couucil; *Allibone*, a Popiſh Lawyer, advanc'd to the Bench; *Hales* made Lieutenant of the Tower; and others by Degrees, ſubſtituted into various Imployments. But, none of theſe Promotions was more unpopular than the admitting Father *Petre*, a buſy *Jeſuit*, into the Privy Council, 11 *Nov.* 1687.

Q. Was not this imputed to the Bigotry of the QUEEN, and to her Influence over the King?

A. Yes: But very undeſervedly; if it be true, (as we are credibly aſſur'd,) that She engaged all the Popiſh Lords, then in Town, to attend his Majeſty, in order to PREVENT it: And moreover, ſeconded their Arguments herſelf, even upon HER KNEES, and with a torrent of *Tears*; conjuring him not to hearken to the miſchievous Counſels of thoſe who *adviſed* him to ſuch an unpopular Step, to *exaſperate* his People againſt him. Notwithſtanding which, ſo great an *Aſcendant* had the *Prime Miniſter* then gain'd over the Inclination and Reſolution of his Maſter, that he carried his Point againſt all the Intereſt of the Queen, and the other faithful Counſellors: and immediately *publiſhed* the News of it in the *Gazette*. Under which Encouragement ſeveral *Popiſh* Prieſts (fuller of *Zeal* for their Religion, than of *Affection* to their Sovereign) became TOOLS of the Faction, and began *openly* to exerciſe their Function, as if Popery had been predominant in *England*.

Q. Could

Q. Could any be ſo weak, as ever to think of re-eſtabliſhing *Popery* in *England*?

A. None, but ſuch as were *very weak* indeed. For, conſidering that the Papiſts of *England* were then confeſſedly not the *Thouſandth Part* of the Nation, how could it be thought poſſible to get a *Popiſh Parliament*, or a *Popiſh Army?* without one, or both of which, (as the late King, even in his laſt Agonies, is ſaid to have forewarn'd him,) it could never be effected. The moſt moderate and conſcientious of them might probably hope, by Means of a general Indulgence or *Toleration*, to enjoy, in common with other *Diſſenters*, the Liberty of *their Conſciences* alſo; while others, more ſubtle, might expect, at leaſt, to reap the *private* Benefit, as they had often done *before*, under the various Diſguiſes of PROTESTANT SECTARIES. However, the *wiſeſt* of their Party were apprehenſive, that the Meaſures then taken did directly tend (if they were not even by the Projectors ſo *deſign'd*) to the King's Ruin. Thus, not only the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador, but the *Pope* alſo, as well as the *Queen* herſelf, are ſaid to have ſeriouſly caution'd his Majeſty againſt the Danger; tho' it was *his* Unhappineſs, not to be *convinc'd* of the true Deſigns of his ſecret Enemies, 'till it was too late to prevent them.

Q. To what Lengths did this *Faction* in the Council carry on their Meaſures?

A. Under Pretence of preventing Sedition, the Clergy were forbid to preach upon Points of *Controverſy*. In Conſequence of which, Dr. *Sharp*, who had endeavour'd to ground his Pariſhioners againſt the *Errors* of Popery, was complain'd of: And his Ordinary, Biſhop *Compton*, for not ſuſpending him, was himſelf ſuſpended, by the Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſioners, in 1686; who alſo de-

priv'd

priv'd the Vice-Chancellor of *Cambridge* of his Office, and ſeveral others, of their Free-holds, in both the Univerſities, for not ſubmitting to admit Perſons into their Foundations, who were *not qualified*, according to the Statutes of their reſpective Colleges.

Q. Did the *Proteſtant Diſſenters* diſtinguiſh themſelves at this critical Time?

A. Yes. But after a very *extraordinary* Manner. For, while the moſt eminent *Churchmen* were ſeriouſly imploy'd in confuting all the *Popiſh* Pamphlets, there were BUT TWO Pens drawn, by two obſcure Diſſenters; as if all the reſt of them had been unconcern'd in the Controverſy! Nay further, when the Declaration for a *geheral* Liberty of Conſcience was publiſhed, 4 *April* 1687, His Majeſty was attended by the *Anabaptiſts*, *Quakers*, *Independents* and *Presbyterians*, with Addreſſes of THANKS, in the higheſt Strains of fulſome Rhetoric.

Q. How did the Church of *England* behave on this Occaſion?

A. The true CHURCH-MEN were always PASSIVE in their *Obedience* to their *Lawful Sovereign*, where they found themſelves not at Liberty to be *active*. Accordingly, this Declaration being ſent to the Biſhops, with Orders for *them* to communicate it to be read in the ſeveral Churches of their reſpective Dioceſſes, Archbiſhop *Sancroft*, with ſix other Biſhops then in Town, preſented an *humble Petition* to his Majeſty not to *inſiſt* on the diſtributing and reading the Declaration, which was founded upon ſuch a *diſpenſing* Power, as had been often declared Illegal. This Petition was by their Enemies miſrepreſented as a ſeditious *Libel*: For which the Subſcribers were ſummon'd before the Council; and refuſing to give their *Recogni-*

zances

zances to anſwer it according to Law, were *of courſe* committed to the Tower, 8 *June*, 1688, by *Sunderland*, and the reſt of the Lords in Council, but were ſoon after brought to a *fair Trial*, and acquitted 29 *June*. For this the venerable Confeſſors were at that Time generally applauded as the beſt of PATRIOTS, compar'd to the *Seven Golden Candleſticks*, &c. tho' ſome *later* Writers have treated their Character with unwarrantable Freedom; as if they had been Self-intereſted *Time-ſervers*, and the *Tools* of Popery and Arbitrary-Power! But, the contrary is demonſtrated by their Conduct. For, as they now expos'd themſelves to the Reſentment of their *Sovereign*, in the Defence of the LAWS; ſo *Five* of the ſame *Seven* Biſhops did, ſoon after, actually incur the Loſs of THEIR ALL, rather than renounce their *Allegiance* to Him.

Q. What was the next important Event?

A. The QUEEN, who had already bore ſeveral Children, was declar'd to be again with *Child*, about *Chriſtmas* 1687, and a ſolemn THANKSGIVING was offer'd up to God, throughout the whole Church of *England*, ſuitable to the Occaſion, in *January*. And, 10 *June* following, the BIRTH of a young *Prince* was proclaim'd: Upon which there was not only a like Public THANKSGIVING, together with *Congratulatory* ADDRESSES, from the Prince and Princeſs of *Orange*, and all Parts and Parties Abroad and at Home; but he was daily PRAY'D FOR, as Prince of *Wales*, in all the Congregations of the Church of *England*, as well as in the Prince of *Orange*'s own Chapel, ſo long as the King himſelf was pray'd for there. Soon after which, Rumours being ſpread abroad, as if the *Birth of the Prince* had been ſuppoſitious, a Council Extraordinary was aſ-

aſſembled, wherein more than *Forty Witneſſes* were produc'd: whoſe Evidence, as far as the 'nature of the Caſe would permit, *aſcertained* 'the Queen's Delivery, to the Satisfaction of 'every *Unprejudiced* Hearer.'

Q. Was all quiet yet at *Home?*

A. Seemingly ſo: But it was only a *Political* Quiet, 'till ſuch Time as the Malcontents had concerted their Meaſures, to give a Home-Stroke. That there had been a *Republican* Party continually watching all Advantages to overturn the Government, even, from the Time of the Reſtoration, is not denied: And that the ſame *Zealots*, who endeavoured to break the Line of Succeſſion, by *excluding* the Duke of *York*, had only ſhew'd him a fair Face, after his Acceſſion, that they might have the better Opportunity to run him foul upon the *Rocks* to his Ruin, is not to be doubted. As ſome of *theſe* would have been content to ſee the Crown upon *any* Head but that of the NEXT HEIR; ſo others of them rather wiſh'd to ſee it once again laid at the Feet of their pretended *Common-wealth*, that they might ſhare the Sovereign Power among themſelves: And tho' they had theſe *different* Views, when they combined under *Argyle* and *Monmouth*, they were at leaſt agreed in this common Principle, that the King *himſelf* ſhould not wear the Crown in Peace, whatever might be the Event of a *Revolution*. How ſoon the Prince of *Orange* had taken the Reſolution to engage himſelf, in the behalf of the diſcontented Subjects of *England*, againſt their Sovereign, (who was *his own Uncle* and *Father-in-Law)* it does not certainly appear: But, we have been confidently told, that there were Negociations on foot to *that purpoſe*, ſo early as 1686, when as yet few or none of the GRIEVANCES,

CES, afterwards ſo loudly complain'd of, had been felt or thought of. However, now that a young *Prince* was proclaim'd, whoſe *Birth* would defeat the Preſumptive Right of the Princeſs of *Orange*, in the ordinary Courſe of *Hereditary Succeſſion*, the Prince, her Conſort, felt himſelf too nearly concern'd in INTEREST, not to hearken to the Cries of others, who earneſtly invited him to uſe his *Mediation* for a free Parliament, in order to the effectual Redreſs of *their Grievances*.

Q. How did the Prince proceed thereupon?

A. Having privately concerted Meaſures with ſuch of the *Engliſh* Subjects, as then were with him in *Holland*, and who held a ſecret Correſpondence with ſome of the principal Perſons, even in the Court of *England*, he embark'd on board a *Dutch* Fleet, with about 4000 Horſe, and 10,000 Foot, a Force ſo diſproportionable to his Deſign, as plainly demonſtrated the Aſſurance he had receiv'd of being ſtrengthen'd by many *Deſerters* from the King's Army. Thus he landed at *Torbay*, 5 *Nov.* 1688, and haſtened his March to *Exeter*; and from thence, by Degrees, towards *London*, where he arriv'd, 18 *Dec.*

Q. What was the King doing all this while?

A. Being too late made ſenſible of the TREACHEROUS Counſels which he had follow'd, he diſmiſſed *Sunderland* out of his Council and Service; ordering a *Parliament* to be aſſembled, and *Grievances* to be redreſs'd. After which he prepared to march againſt the Enemy, at the Head of his Army: But, finding himſelf DESERTED by ſeveral principal Commanders and others, who were under the higheſt PERSONAL Obligations to him, he was under a Neceſſity of returning to *London*, to ſecure the *Capital*; not knowing in *whom* to confide, when moſt of the other great Towns

Towns were poſſeſs'd by the Inſurrection of ſeveral Great Men, declaring for the Prince of *Orange* and a Free Parliament.

Q. Did the King call a Parliament upon this?

A. He had actually iſſued Writs in *November*, for them to meet on 15 *January*; and, that their Debates might be *free* from any Influence, propoſed, that both Armies might remain at an *equal* Diſtance from *London*. Notwithſtanding which, the Prince purſuing his March, His Majeſty recalled his Parliament-Writs, that his own Authority might not be made uſe of to his own Prejudice; and for the Security of his *Perſon*, thought fit to withdraw into a more temperate Climate.

Q. When did the King leave the Kingdom?

A. Having firſt ſent away the *Queen* and *Prince* to *France*, 10 *Dec.* 1688, himſelf prepared to follow on the 11th, but was intercepted by the *Mob* at *Feverſham*; where (before they *knew* him) he was treated with great Indignity. After a few days, being invited by a Committee of the Lords, he return'd to *Whitehall* on the 16th, amidſt the loudeſt *Acclamations* of his People. Nevertheleſs (*London* being *too little* for them both;) to make Room for the reception of the Prince at St. *James's*, a Detachment of the *Dutch* was ſent, IN ORDER OF BATTLE, to diſlodge the *King's Guards* alſo at *Whitehall*; which they did on the 17th, at 11 at Night: And, *at One* the next Morning, three *Engliſh* Lords, *Halifax*, *Shrewſbury*, and *Delamere*, awaked their (late) Maſter, with a CIVIL MESSAGE from the Prince, to BE GONE from his own Palace! who now (being actually a *Priſoner*) had no Power left him, but to chuſe *Rocheſter*, rather than *Ham*; and accordingly was convey'd by Water, in a very *tempeſtuous* Seaſon, to *Graveſend*, under a *Dutch Guard*, that very Day,

and

and from thence by Land to *Rocheſter* the next Morning.

Q. What was the Event of this?

A. Moſt of the King's Officers of State now laid down the Badges of their Offices; and ſome of them even ſubſcribed the *Aſſociation*, which was projected at *Exeter*. But, ſo unwilling was the King himſelf yet to leave the Nation, that he is ſaid to have ſeverally offer'd to put himſelf into the Hands of the *City*, or of the *Biſhops*, only on Condition of SAFETY to his Perſon, 'till he had given all reaſonable Satisfaction to his People, in a *free Parliament*; which Offers were refus'd, by the former not being willing, and the latter not able, to undertake for his Protection. Upon which he finally withdrew to *France*, 23 *Dec.* leaving behind him his *Reaſons*, in a Letter; ſignifying his *Deſire to return*, and Reſolution to *redreſs all Grievances*.

Q. Who undertook to govern in the King's Abſence?

A. As, on his Majeſty's firſt withdrawing, the *Lords* who had met at *Guild-Hall*, 11 *Dec.* to preſerve the Public Peace, declared their Reſolution to concur with the Prince of *Orange*, in order to the obtaining a *free Parliament*; ſo thoſe who now aſſembled in the Houſe of Peers, on *Chriſtmas Day*, did addreſs him to take upon *himſelf* the Adminiſtration, 'till the Meeting of a Convention of the Lords and Commons, to be ſummon'd BY HIM. Accordingly, his Highneſs having iſſued out *his own* Letters to that Purpoſe, the Convention met, 22 *January*; the Prince having, in the mean Time ſent for his Princeſs, who arriv'd from *Holland*, 12 *February*.

Q. What Proceedings were had in this Convention?

A. They

A. They immediately addreſs'd to the Prince of *Orange*, as *under God, the* DELIVERER *of the Nation*; and they returned the *King's Letters* (ſent to them, with Promiſes of *Redreſs* of Grievances, and an Act of *Pardon* and Oblivion) UNOPENED! The Lower Houſe, after a few Hours Debate, voted, 28 *January, That the King had broke the Original Contract, and Abdicated the Government, and that the Throne was thereby become vacant:* But, it was not 'till after very long and ſolemn Debates and Conferences, that the Lords were prevail'd with, to agree to this; nor did it paſs at laſt in the Upper Houſe by a Majority of more than two Voices. However, this principal Point being gain'd, the *Throne* ſo declar'd *vacant*, was ſoon fill'd with the Prince and Princeſs of *Orange*; who were Proclaim'd (by the Stile and Title of K. *William* and Q. *Mary*) on ASH-WEDNESDAY Morning, 13 *Feb.* 1688.

FINIS.

POSTSCRIPT.

This Work having already extended to the Length and Size of a convenient Volume, it is thought proper to make a Stop here, at this Grand Æra: *From whence, God willing, (if Health, Leiſure and Opportunity permit) the ſame may be continued in another Volume. In the mean Time, this may ſuffice, to give the Reader a fair View of our* Engliſh Hiſtory, *down to the Times which are freſh in the Memory of many Perſons now living.*

INDEX.

A.

ABBOT, (Archbiſhop) his Moderation, p. 240, 241.

Abdication, a free and voluntary Act, 6, 26, 29, 70, 129, 204.

Abhorrers, why ſo call'd, 319.

Abjuration of the Royal Line, projected by the *Rump*, 293, 297, 299.

Acts of Parliament, *(ſome,)* of no Force, 148, 164, 221. —— Of Uſurpers, null, 122, 126, 305.

Addreſſes, meer Compliments, 295. — 297, 325, 331. — 333, *&c.*

Albemarle (G. *Monck* Duke of) engag'd againſt the *Dutch* Fleets, 307. See *Monck.*

Alfred (K.) his Character and Actions, 13, 18, 20.

Allegiance, due by Nature, 4, 60, 115, 122, 220, 221, 283, 301. —— unalienable from the Right, 39, 99, 126, 135, 179, 221, 223.

Amboyna, a monſtrous Scene of *Dutch* Perfidy, 230, 290.

America diſcover'd, 149.

Anathema, to violate *Magna-Charta*, 60.

Arbitrary Power, moſt commonly the Practice of Rebels and Uſurpers, 27, 28, 36, 58, 66. — 70, 89, 93, 129, 133. — 135, 197, 202, 206, 211, 227, 232, 236, 244. — 248, 251,

251. — 258, 260. — 263, 267, 270, 275. — 279, 293, 311, 321, &c.
Argyle (*Archibald Campbell*, M. of) his Character, Trial, and Execution, 283, 286, 305.
——— (*Archibald Campbell*, E. of) his Son, taken in Rebellion, and executed, 325, 333.
Arms of Subjects againſt their Sovereign, unjuſtifiable, 56, 99, 183, 197, 198, 227, 249, 250, 305.
Army voted a Grievance, even in Time of War, 312, 328.
Arthur Plantagenet (Pr.) his Title, and Death, 46, 47.
——— *Tudor* (Pr.) his Marriage, and Death, 147, 148, 150, 154.
Arundel (Archbp.) his dark Character, 91, 92, 97, 98.
Arundel (*Edm. Fitz-Alan*, E. of) beheaded, 71.
——— (*Rich. Fitz-Alan*, E. of) his Grandſon, beheaded, 89, 91.
——— (*H. Fitz-Alan*, E. of) his Character and Conduct, 180. — 183.
Aſſaſſination of K. *Edmund*, 15. — of K. *Edward* the Younger, 17. — of K. *Edmund Ironſide*, 18. — of K. *Edmund* the Martyr, 20. — of Archbp. *Becket*, 41. — of K. *Richard* I. 46. — of Bp. *Stapleton*, 70. — of King *Edward* II. 75. — of Archbp. *Sudbury*, 87. — of L. Treaſurer *Hales*, 87. — of K. *Richard* II. 95, 96. — of the Duke of *Burgundy*, 109. — of the Duke of *Suffolk*, 115. — of the Duke of *Guiſe*, 200. — of *D. Rizzio*, 201, 202. — of the Earl of *Murray*, 210. — of the Pr. of *Orange*, 213. — of the *French* K. *Henry* IV. 223. — of the Duke of *Buckingham*, 235. — of *Doriſlaus*, 290. — of Archbiſhop *Sharp*, 316.
Aſſembly of Divines; their Character and Proceedings,

ceedings, 260. — 262, 267, 291. *See* General Aſſ.
Aſſociations, againſt *John*, 49. — againſt K. *Edward* II. 68. — againſt the Queen-Regent of *Scotland*, 193, 197. — againſt the Queen of *Scots*, 197, 213. — againſt K. *Charles* II. 321. — againſt K. *James* II. 336.
Athelſtan (K.) his Character, 14.
Attainder of the right Heir, void, 120, 121, 129, 142, 301.
Auguſtine (Archbp.) ſettled in *Canterbury*, 9, 10.
Auſtria (*Leopold* V. D. of) his unworthy Treatment of our King, 44, 45.
Authority, ſupreme, irreſiſtable, 56, 66, 73, 74, 126, 183, 188, 223, 227, 240, 242. — 246, 250.

B.

Baronets inſtituted, 229.
Barons Wars againſt the Crown, frequent, raſh, and ruinous, 37, 49, 54. — 58, 66. — 77, 88. — 93.
Baſtwick (*J.*) a notorious Incendiary, 242, 251.

BATTLES.

Aberdeen, 269.
Adderton, 261.
Agincourt, 108.
Aldern, 272.
Alford, 272.
Alresford, 265.
Bannocks-bourne, 67.
Barnet, 130.
Baſing, 13.
Blore, 120.
Boſworth, 140.
Bothwell, 317.
Bramham, 261.
Brentford, 259.
Chalgrave, 261.
Cheryton, 265.
Creſſy, 79.
Cropredy, 266.
Dunbar, 287.
Durham, 80.

Edge-

Edge-Hill, 258.
Eveſham, 59.
Flodden, 152, 167.
Gladſmoor, 130.
Glaſgow, 204.
Halydown, 79.
Haſtings, 25.
Hexham, 126.
Hopton, 260.
Innerlochy, 269.
Iſlip, 270.
Kilſyth, 272.
Lanſdown, 262.
Lewes, 58.
Lincoln, 53.
Lutzen, 238.
Marſton, 265.
Mortimer's Croſs, 124.
Naſeby, 271.
Northampton, 121.
Orleans, 112.
Pavia, 152.
Pentland, 308.
Pinkey, 172.
Poictiers, 81.
Prague, 227.
Preſton, 277.
Roundway, 262.
St. Albans, 119, 124.
Selby, 264.
Selkirk, 272.
Shrewsbury, 103.
Solway, 168.
Spurs, 152.
Stamford, 128.
Stoke, 143
Stratton, 261.
Tewksbury, 131.
Tipper, 269.
Towton, 125.
Wakefield, 124.
Worceſter, 289.

Bedford (*J. Plantag.* D. of) his Character and Death, 108, 111, 114.
Berwick, annex'd to *England*, 79. — given up to *Scotland*, 125.
Bethel, and *Corniſh*; remarkable Sheriffs, 321.
Birth of our Princes, always deem'd *Engliſh*, 125, 126. — how prov'd, 163. 332. — 334.
Bishops, (*Britiſh*) at a Conference with *Auguſtine*, 10.
——— (*Popiſh*) oppoſe the Papal Supremacy, 159, 188. — depriv'd, 171, 175, 177. — reſtor'd, 184. — depriv'd again, 194, 195.
——— (*Reform'd*) depriv'd, 184, 186. — reſtor'd, 195, 196. — their regular Succeſſion juſtified, 195, 196, 225, 226. — turned out

of Parliament, 254. — ſequeſter'd and aboliſh'd, by rebellious Schiſmaticks, 260, 273. — reſtor'd, by Authority, 303. — their authentic Character, 315, 320, 324.

——— *(Scotch)* reform'd away by Covenanted Rebels 197, 198. — reſtor'd, 218, 223, 224. — inſulted, depos'd and aboliſh'd, 243. — 246. — reſtor'd by Authority, 305, 306.

Booth (Sir *G.*) his Inſurrection, betray'd and defeated, 298.

Bothwell (Ja. Hepburne E. of) his Character, Marriage, Eſcape, and Exile, 203. — 205.

Bothwell-Bridge; the Rebel-Covenanters there defeated, 317.

Bradſhaw the Regicide, buried under *Tyburn!* 278, 279, 304.

Briſtol (J. Digby, E. of) his Character, 228, 233.

BRITONS, their ancient Religion and Government, 3. — 10.

Buchanan (*G.*) his Character, 201, 206. — retracted his Libels on his Death-bed, 201.

Buckingham (Hum. Stafford, D. of) ſlain in the *Lancaſtrian* Quarrel, 121.

——— *(H. Stafford*, D. of) his Grandſon; his Character and Death, 133. — 137.

——— *(G. Villers*, D. of) his Character and Death, 225, 228, 231. — 236.

——— *(G. Villers*, D. of) his Son, his Character, 286, 310.

Burleigh (Capt.) put to death, as a Traytor, for endeavouring to reſcue his Sovereign, 276.

Burnet (Archbp.) depriv'd, but ſoon reſtor'd, 309.

Burton (*H.*) a notorious Incendiary, 241, 251.

INDEX.

C.

Cabal; their Counſels and Character, 310.
Cade, (*J.*) his Inſurrection, 116.
Cæſar, (*Jul.*) his Landing, 3, 4.
Calais, how taken, 80, 83. — how loſt 190.
Canons, how made in 1640, 248, 249. — why not now in force? 250.
Canute, his Character and Government here, 17, 18, 21.
Capel, (*Arth.* L.) a Martyr for Loyalty, 277, 282.
Challenge, to the Papiſts, 196. See *Parker*.
CHARLES I. (K.) his Marriage, 228, 231. — his Succeſſion and Government, 230. — 273. — his factious Parliaments, 230. — 258. — his Wars abroad, 230. — 238. — and at home with the *Scots*, 242. — 247, 250, 254. — and *Engliſh* Rebels, 255. — 271. — his Retreat to the *Scots* Army, 271. — deliver'd up to the *Engliſh*, 273, 274. — their horrid Treatment of him, 274. — his Martyrdom and Character, 278. — 280.
——— II. (K.) his Conduct while Prince, 271, 277. — his Succeſſion *de Jure*, 280. — 283. his Circumſtances Abroad, 283, 284. — his Landing in *Scotland*, and Treatment there, 285. — 288. — his Advance into *England*, 288, 289. ——— his providential Eſcape, 289. ——— his Circumſtances then abroad, 290. — 299. — his glorious Reſtoration, 300, 301. — his Government, Death, and Character, 301. — 324.
Chriſtmas-Day, profaned, 241. — made a ſolemn *Presbyterian* Faſt! 267.

CHURCH *(Britiſh)* very early, 5, 8, 9. — driven into *Wales*, 9, 10.
——— *(Engliſh)* whence deriv'd, 9, 10. — not yet Popiſh, 18, 19. — oppreſs'd by Papal Uſurpations, 27, 33, 34, 41, 42, 48, 96, 156, 208, 209.
——— (of *England)* Reform'd, 157. — 159, 164, 169, 171, 175. — 177. — ſeverely perſecuted, 186. — 190. — held up in private Aſſemblies, 190. — the brighter after Suffering, 190. — happily reſtor'd, 190, 193. — 196. — her diſtinguiſhing Loyalty, 187, 188, 190, 221, 227, 240, 249, 250, 264, 274. — 301. — 306, 320, 324, 327, 331, 332. — overturn'd by ſchiſmatical Rebels, 248. — 280. — reſtor'd again, with the King, 302, 303, 306. — its then flouriſhing State, 309, 324.
——— (of *Scotland)* how deformed, 192, 197, 198, 204. — reform'd, 223, 224, 238. — overturn'd by Covenanted Rebels, 242. — 147, 254, 262, 263, 283. — 286. — reſtor'd again by Authority, 305, 306, 309.
Church-Lands, how alienated, 160. ——— 162, 177, 219. — not reſum'd on the Return of Popery, 187. — but ſold by Rebel-Reformers, 273.
Clarence, his Right, prior to *Lancaſter*, 85, 94, 99, 115, 118, 122.
——— *(G. Plantag.* D. of) his Character, Marriage, and untimely Death, 127. — 132,
Clarendon (Edw. Hyde, E. of) baniſh'd, 308.
Clemency, natural to lawful Princes, 41, 46, 67, 69, 183. — 185, 199, 209, 222, 223, 259, 302, 311, 326.
Coercion of lawful Princes, unjuſtifiable, 73, 98. — 100, 203. — 205, 213. — 215, 219, 305.
Committees, an Inquiſition, 232, 261.

INDEX.

Common-Prayer-Book, authoriz'd, 171. — review'd, 176. — ſuppreſs'd, 184. — reſtor'd, 193, 194. — receiv'd in *Scotland*, 197. — and by the Papiſts here, 208. — how miſrepreſented, 208, 238. — 240, 286. — aboliſh'd, 245, 267. — reſtor'd, and review'd again, 303. — Our only authentic Rule, 303.
Commons admitted to vote in Parliament, 59. — not always truly repreſented, 59, 100, 264, 280, 293. — often factious, 230. —— 237, 242, 247, 257. — ſometimes openly rebellious, 256. — 280.
Commonwealths, not known in antient Governments, 4, 282, 289.
Compliers in all Revolutions, Self-deceivers, 52, 179. — 181, 187, 188, 280.
Comprehenſion an Inlet to Popery, 309, 319.
Compromiſe about the Succeſſion, 18, 21, 31, 33, 37, 109, 123.
Compton (Bp.) ſuſpended, 330.
Conceſſions to Faction, unmerited, ill-requited, 233. — 236, 240, 243. — 248. — 255, 277, 278, 280, 286, 303, 309.
Conference at *Weſtminſter*, 194. — at *Hampton-Court*, 222. — at the *Savoy*, 302.
Conqueſt, a precarious Title, 27, 96. — 99.
Conſecration of Bps. 176, 195, 196, 223, 224, 302, 305, 306.
Conſent of the People, a precarious Title, 97.
Conſtitution of *England*, aſcertain'd, 38, 39, 51, 52, 60, 73, 77, 94, 98, 99, 106, 115, 121. — 126, 135, 148, 163, 179, 183, 191, 120, 221, 227, 264, 281, 301. — 306.
Convention diſtinguiſh'd from a Parliament, 59, 71, 93, 137, 138, 302. — 304, 336.
Convocation, how Eſſential to the Church, 232, 248,

248, 303. — how become precarious, 306. *See* Canons, Synods.
Corniſh (Alderm.) hang'd, 326.
Cornwall, (Rich. Plantag. E. of) K. of the *Romans*; his Character, 54, 55, 58.
——— *(Pierce Gaveſton,* E. of) how put to Death, 66, 67.
——— *(E. Plantag.* D. of) the firſt created a Duke in *England*, 84. See *Edward Plantag.*
Coronation adds nothing to the Title, 123. --- 125, 133, 221, 294.
Covenant *(Scots Presbyterian)* forg'd in Rebellion, 193, 197, 244. — 246. — an *Antichriſtian*-Bond, 244, 316. — how brought into *England*, 262, 263. --- Cenſur'd, renounc'd and burnt, 274, 289, 305. --- Covenanters, how outragious in *Scotland*, 193. 197, 198, 201. — 204, 216, 239, 242. — 246, 273, 283. — 287, 308. — and in *England*, 247, 262, 263, 271. — 275, 277.
CRANMER, (Abp.) his Character and Proceedings, 156. — 158, 164, 165, 167. — his Sufferings, 185, 186, 189, 190.
Creed, how little regarded by *Presbyterian* Covenanters, 244, 262, 263, 267.
Cromwell (Ol.) his Riſe, Character, Uſurpation, and Exit, 270, 271, 275. — 278, 285. — 289, 291. — 298, 304.
——— *(Rich.)* his Riſe and Character, 296, 297.
——— *(Tho.)* See *Eſſex.*
Crown, not alienable, 50, 94, 99, 121. — 124, 179.

INDEX.

D.

Danby (*T. Osborne*, E. of) how profecuted, 312. 315.
Danes; their Character, Government, and Expulſion, 11. — 23.
Daviſon, (Secr.) made the Scape-Goat, for the Execution of the Queen of *Scots*, 215, 216.
De facto, diſtinguiſh'd from *de Jure*, 16, 37, 51, 52, 56, 73, 111, 126, 135, 136, 148, 181, 183, 204, 215. 280.
Deliverers, falſly ſo call'd! 51, 71, 92, 104.
Denbigh (*Baſ. Fielding*, E. of) quitted his Command, 270.
Depoſing lawful Princes, a Popiſh Doctrine, 50. — abjur'd, as *Heretical and Damnable*, 223.
Depriv'd Clergy, exerciſe their Function, 190, 303. — reſtor'd by Authority, 190, 194, 195, 303, 309.
Derby, (*H. Plantag.* E. of) afterwards by creation D. of *Hereford*, and by Succeſſion D. of *Lancaſter*, 89, 92. See *Henry* IV.
—— (*Tho. L. Stanley*, E. of) his Conduct and Character, 134. — 141.
—— (Counteſs of) her gallant Defence of *Latham*-Houſe, 265.
Difference in Religion, no Bar to Right, 191.
Diſpenſations (Papal) ſcandalous, 139, 150, 151, 154, 156, 192, 199, 208, 259.
Diſſenters, the Spawn of Popery, 168, 176, 208, 210. — their Spirit, and Prejudices, 176, 184. — 188, 193, 197, 198, 208. — 210, 216. — 218, 222, 224, 226, 230. — 232, 236, 239. — 250, 254, 259. — 263 267, 268, 275. — 279, 283. — 287, 297, 300, 307,

307, 308, 315. — 317, 321, 326, 330, 331.
Dorſet, (*H. Grey*, M. of) created a Duke, 178. See *Suffolk*.
Druids; their Character and Authority, 5.
Dudley, (L. *Guilf.*) his Marriage and Execution, 178, 185.
Dutch Revolters, aggrandiz'd by *England*, 213. — their Gratitude, 230, 246, 282, 283, 285, 290, 306, 325.

E.

Edgar, (K.) his Character and Succeſſion, 16, 19.
—— *Atheling*, his Hereditary Right, 18, 23. — 29, 34.
Edmund, (K.) aſſaſſinated, 15.
——— (K. of the *Eaſt-Angles*,) a Martyr, 20.
——— *Ironſide*, (K) his Character and Aſſaſſination, 17, 18, 21.
Edred, his Uſurpation, 15, 19.
Edric; his Treaſon rewarded, 18, 21.
Edward, the Elder, (K) his Character, 14, 21.
——— the Younger. (K.) his Character, and Aſſaſſination, 16, 17.
——— the Confeſſor; his Acceſſion and Character, 23, 24.
Edward I. (K.) his Character and Conduct, 58. — 65.
——— II. (K.) his Character, Conduct, Troubles and Murder, 65. — 75.
——— III. (K) his Acceſſion, Conduct, Government, and Character, 70. — 85.
——— IV. (K.) his Title, Succeſſion, Government, and Character, 124. — 132.
——— V. (K.) his Succeſſion, and Murder, 132. — 135.

——— VI. (K.) his Birth, Succeſſion, Settlement, Death, and Character, 163, 170. — 179.
Edward, (Pr.) Son of *Edm. Ironſide*, the right Heir, recall'd from Exile, 23. See *Edgar Ath.*
——— *Plantag.* (the Black Prince) his Conduct, Character, and Death, 79. — 86. See *Cornwall.*
——— (Pr.) Son of *Henry* VI. his Marriage, and Death, 128. — 131. 138.
Edwin, the elder Son of *Edm. Ironſide*, died abroad, 18.
Edwy, (K.) his Succeſſion, and Character, 15, 16.
Egbert, (K.) the firſt Monarch here, 10, 11, 19.
Eleanor, (Pr.) her Title and Death, 51, 52, 56.
Election, in Hereditary Governments, abſurd and null, 94, 99, 135.
Elizabeth, (Q.) her Birth, Succeſſion, Government, Death, and Character, 158, 163, 173, 178, 191. — 220, 222, 241, 242, 248.
Engagement, forg'd by the Independent Rebels, 282. — revers'd by the Preſbyterians, 300. — burn'd by Authority, 305.
Engliſh, their Character, and Diſpoſition, 37, 56, 57, 66, 73, 76, 92, 95, 98, 142, 164, 170, 176, 208, 209, 229, 252, 257, 258, 261. — 263, 276, 279, 284, 288, 292, 294, 296, 301, 313, 314, 327.
Entail of the Crown upon Uſurpers, void and treaſonable, 98, 122, 129, 179.
Enthuſiaſm exemplified, 235, 236.
Eſcape, providential, 288, 289.
Eſſex, (*T. Cromwell*, E. of) his Character, Proceedings and Death, 160, 164, 165.
—— (*Rob. Devereux*, E. of) his Marriage, and Divorce, 224, 225. — General of the Rebels, 257. — 259, 264, 266. — laid aſide, 270.

——— (*Arth. Capel*, E. of) diſpatch'd himſelf, 323.
Ethelbald, (K.) his Acceſſion and Character, 12.
Ethelbert, (K.) his Succeſſion and Character, 12, 20.
——— (K. of *Kent*,) his Converſion and Character, 9. See *Auguſtine*.
Ethelred I. (K.) his Succeſſion and Character, 12, 13, 20.
——— II. (K.) his Succeſſion and Character, 17, 22.
Ethelwulf, (K.) his Succeſſion and Character, 11, 12, 18.
Evil Counſellors, a ſpecious Pretence for Rebellion, 61, 71, 88. — 90, 116, 226, 230, 251, 319, 327. — 329.
Euſtace de St. *Pierre*, a noble Patriot, 80.
Examples, how prevalent, 226.
Exchequer ſhut, 310.
Exciſe, introduc'd by Rebels, 263, 264.
Excluſion of Right Heirs, cenſur'd, 95, 99, 122, 123, 177. — 179, 181, 220, 221, 293, 311, 333.
Exeter, (*J. Holland*, D. of) how baſely impriſon'd and beheaded, 93, 101.
Extempore Prayer, promoted by Papiſts, 208, 209, 239, 317.

F.

Faction, unreſtrain'd, ruinous, 57, 64, 67, 68, 72, 88. — 90, 108, 113, 173, 234. — 237, 242. — 246, 251, 259, 260, 267, 283, 311. — 323, 326. — 334.
Fairfax, (Sir. *T.*) General of the Rebels, 264, 265, 270, 277, 286.
Fanaticks, Tools of the Jeſuits, 209, 210, 309.

Favourites, perſecuted, 55, 66. — 68, 84, 88. — 90, 155, 233. — 236.
Fire, in *London*, 307.
Fiſher, (Bp.) ſuffered Death for the Pope's Supremacy, 158.
Fitz-walter, (*Rob.* L.) chief of the Barons Confederate againſt *John*, 49.
Flattery, how dangerous, 189.
Foreigners how diſagreeable, 17, 26, 30, 39, 52. — 57, 66, 67, 174, 238.
Forgery, abominable, 253, 255.
Frederic, (Elect. *Palatine*) his Marriage, Character, and Death, 224, 226. — 228, 238. See *Palatine*.
French Language and Cuſtoms introduc'd here, 23. — their Politicks, 47, 50, 51, 102, 139, 234, 238, 245, 246, 271, 272, 285, 290, 292.

G.

Gardiner, (Bp.) his Character and Proceedings, 156. — 159, 165, 167, 171, 175. — 177, 184, 188.
Garter, inſtituted, 84.
Gaſcoigne (L. Ch. Juſtice) an exemplary Magiſtrate, 105, 106.
Gaveſton. See *Cornwall*.
General Aſſembly (*Scotch*) unwarrantably outragious, 204, 244. — 246, 273, 283. — 289.
Glendour, (*Ow.*) a *Welſh* Patriot, 102. — 104.
Glouceſter, (*Gilb. De Clare*, E. of) his Character, 59.
——— (*T. Plantag.* D. of) his Character and Death, 89. — 91.
——— (*T. Deſpencer*, E. of) his Character and Death, 101.

——— (*Hum. Plantag.* D. of) his Character and Death, 111. — 114.
——— (*Rich. Plantag.* D. of) his Character, 131. — 135. See *Rich.* III.
——— (*H. Stuart*, D. of) his Character, 295.
Godfrey, (Sir *Edm. B.*) his Death, 314.
Goodman, (Bp.) his Character and Death, 249.
Grey, (L. *Jane*) her Marriage, Character, and Death, 178. — 186.
Grievances how to be redreſs'd, 39, 52, 56, 57, 76, 92. — 95, 118, 150, 199, 233. — 235, 247, 248, 251. — 256, 260. — 264, 311, 315, 316, 334.
Guards, voted a Grievance, 304, 315.
Gun-powder Plot, diſcover'd, 221. — 223.
Guthry, (Bp.) an exemplary Confeſſor, 244.

H.

Hales, (Sir *Ja.*) a ſteady Loyaliſt, 179.
Hamilton (Abp.) barbarouſly hang'd, 211.
——— (*Ja.* D. of) his Character and Death, 244. — 247, 254, 269, 274, 277, 282, 283, 287.
——— (*Will.* D. of) his Chrracter, 269, 283, 288.
Hampden, (Col.) his remarkable Death, 261.
Hardicnute, his Character and Government, 22, 23.
Harold I. his Character and Governmeut, 22.
——— II. his Character and Death, 24, 25.
Haſtings, (*W.* Lord) his Character and Death, 133, 134.
Hay, (Sir *John*) his Character, 243.
Henderſon, (*Alex.*) his Character of K. *Cha.* I. 273.

Henry I. his Acceſſion, Marriage, and Government, 32. — 35.
—— II. (K.) his Pedigree Succeſſion, Government and Character, 29, 33. — 42.
—— III. (K.) his Acceſſion, long Reign and Character, 52. — 60.
—— IV. his Uſurpation, Government, Character, and Death, 89, 92, 93. — 106.
—— V. his Acceſſion, Character, and Death, 105. — 110.
—— VI. his Acceſſion, Character, Troubles and Death, 110. — 131.
—— VII. (K.) his Title, Marriage, Succeſſion, Government, Character and Death, 140. — 149.
—— VIII. (K.) his Title, Succeſſion, Marriages, Government, Character and Death, 148. — 170.
Heptarchy, how founded here, 7. — 11.
Hereditary Right aſſerted, 4, 5, 11. — 18, 23, 24, 38, 39, 51, 52, 56, 60, 99, 115, 118, 122, 123, 125, 126, 134. — 136, 148, 179, 191, 220, 221, 223, 283, 301, 324.
Hereford, (*H. Plantag.* D. of) baniſh'd, 91. See *Henry* IV.
Hertford, (*E. Seymour*, E. of) made Protector, and a Duke, 170. See *Somerſet*.
—— (*W. Seymour*, M. of) a gallant Commander, for K. *Cha.* I. 262.
High Court of Juſtice (ſo call'd!) 278, 279, 282, 293.
High-Treaſon, againſt a King not Crown'd, 220, 221. — or one actually Depos'd, 77. — or to Exclude the Right Heir, 179, 183.
Holland, (*H. Rich*, E. of) beheaded, 282.
Hotham, (Sir. *J.*) juſtly rewarded, 256. 267.

Hubert,

Hubert, (*Rob.*) died innocent of the Fire of *London*, 307.

I.

Jamaica conquer'd, 295.

JAMES I. (K.) his Birth, Inauguration, and troubleſome Reign in *Scotland*, 168, 202. — 204, 210, 212. — 216, 218, 219. — his Succeſſion, Title, Government, Character, and Death here, 220, 230.

——— II. (K.) his Succeſſion, Government, Character, Troubles and Exile, 324. — 337.

Jeſuits Inſtitution and Politicks, 168, 208. — 210, 217, 222, 223, 263, 271, 272.

Ignoramus, Juries, ſo call'd, 267, 322.

Impoſtures, notorious, 112, 113, 143. — 146, 188, 208, 209, 253, 255.

Incendiaries, notorious, 92, 127, 173, 197, 199, 201, 207, 232, 240. — 244, 249, 257, 268, 328.

Independents; their Riſe, Progreſs, and wicked Artifices, 269, 270, 274. — 279.

Indulgences (Papal) ſcandalous, 159.

Infants, not accountable for their Parents mal-adminiſtration, 52, 95.

Innovations, notorious, 232, 236, 254, 255, 260, 261, 267, 294, 315.

Inquiſition, by fanatical Reformers, 261, 274, 282, 287.

Intereſt, often miſtaken, 26, 36, 74, 209, 227, 232, 268, 278, 292.

Interregnum, can never be here, 280.

Intruders, juſtly diſpoſſeſs'd, 194, 195, 309.

Joan d'Arc, her ſurprizing Adventure and Death, 112, 113.

John;

John; his Uſurpation, Government and Death, 43. — 52.
Ireland conquer'd, 40. — erected into a Kingdom, 168. — ſubdued by *Cromwell*, 285, 286.
Ireton, Deputy of *Ireland*, died there of the Plague, 286. — buried at *Tyburn*, 304.
Iriſh Maſſacre, 253, 294, 295. See *Macguire*.
Judias, at Court, 15, 18, 21, 76, 77, 132, 138, 207, 214, 243, 267, 271, 310, 311, 327, 329. —— in the Army, 120, 124, 272, 284, 298, 299, 334. — among the Clergy, 72, 75, 97, 134, 181, 241, 242, 244, 249, 251, 257, 268.
Judgments remarkable, 32, 34, 35, 75, 104, 134, 137, 165, 181, 267, 268.
Juſtice, duly done, 21, 65, 77, 105, 106, 183.
JUXON (Abp.) his Character and Death, 206.

K.

Kent, (*Godwin*, E. of) his Character, 23.
—— (*Edm. Plantag.* E. of) his Character, and Death, 77.
Kings here, in the earlieſt Ages, 3, 4. — Hereditary never die, 280. — can do no Wrong, 279. — the only Supreme, 278, 281. — not one of the Three Eſtates, 281.
King's Evil cured, 24.
Knox, (*J.*) a notorious Incendiary, 197.

L.

Lambert, (Col.) a Rebel-Commander, 277, 297. — 299.
Lancaſter, (*T. Plantag.* E. of) his Character and Death, 67. — 69.

——— (*H. Plantag.* E. of) his Character, 74.
——— (*J. Plantag.* D. of) his Character and Death, 85. — 92.
——— (*H. Plantag.* D. of) his Ambition, Baniſhment, Return and Uſurpation, 89. — 96. See *Henry* IV.
Lanerick, (*W. Hamilton*, E. of) his Character, 269, 283. See *Hamilton*.
LAUD, (Archbiſhop) his Promotion, Character, Troubles, and Martyrdom, 236, 339. — 241, 247. — 251, 253, 267, 268. — his Epiſcopal Succeſſion juſtify'd, 225, 226.
Lauderdale (*J. Maitland*, E. and D. of) his Character, 283, 309, 318.
Lay-Deprivation how invalid, 194, 195, 309.
Legitimacy, how prov'd, 163, 318.
Leiceſter, (*Robt. de Bellomont*, E. of) taken in Rebellion, but freely pardon'd, 41.
——— (*Sim. Monfort*, E. of) his Character and Death, 57. — 59.
——— (*Robt. Dudley*, E. of) his Character, 200, 207, 213.
Leighton, (Dr.) a *Scotch* Incendiary, 241.
Levellers, their Outrages, 86. — 88.
Leven, (*D. Leſlie*, E. of) his Character, 246, 265, 272, 286. — 288.
Lewis (Dauphin of *France*,) invited hither, as a Deliverer, but driven out again, 50. — 53.
Libellers puniſh'd, 217, 218, 241, 242.
Liberties how defenſible, 7, 26, 61, 64. — 66, 100, 181, 214, 227, 331, 332.
Lincoln (*J. de la Pole*, E. of) his Character aud Death, 143.
Lindſey, (*Robt. Bertie*, E. of) his Character and Death, 237, 258.
Liſle, (Sir. *G.*) a Martyr for Loyalty, 277.
Liturgy, Engliſh, reform'd, 171. — review'd, 176.

176. — revers'd, 184. — review'd and re-eſtabliſh'd, 194. — aboliſh'd by Schiſmatical Rebels, 267. — reſtor'd by Authority, 303. — the *only* authoriz'd Rule for public Worſhip, 303.
Loans, to the King, voted a Grievance, 231, 233, 242, 251, 264.
—— to Uſurpers, extorted as a Duty, 257, 258.
Lollards, their Character, 91, 104, 109, 110.
LONDON, a *Roman* Colony, 5. — incorporated, 45. — Bridge, 32, 42 — Mobb, outragious, 70, 71, 87, 90, 249, 251, 253, 254, 256, 267, 275, 278. — Gates broken down, 299.
Londoners, generally for the Stronger Party, 24, 70, 92, 336. — their Lecturers influenced, 181, 257. — roaſt the Rump, 300.
Lords Houſe no competent Judges of their King's Right, 122, 123. — declare it Hereditary and Indefeaſible 123. —— propoſe an Expedient, 123. —— comply with the factious Commons, 251. —— 253, 260, 262, 267, 270, 278, 280. —— voted out by them, as uſeleſs, 278, 280.
Love (*Chr.*) a memorable Pulpit-Incendiary, 268,
Loyalty, highly eſteem'd by the truly Great, 42, 43, 243, 265, 267, 268, 276, 277, 279. — ſometimes unfaſhionable, 70, 244, 249, 264, 273, 274, 283. —— 285, 292.
Lucas (Sir. *C.*) a Martyr for Loyalty, 277.
Lucius (K.) a *Briton*, the firſt *Chriſtian* Prince, 5.

M.

Macbeth, a *Scotch* Uſurper, deſtroy'd, 23.
Macguire, (Lord) and others, clear the Forgery, concerning the *Iriſh* Maſſacre, 268.

INDEX.

Magna Charta, its Original, and Authority, 49, 53, 60.
Malcolm III. (K of *Scotland*) his Reſtoration, Marriage and Death, 23, 29, 31, 33, 34.
Malignancy, compar'd to the Sin againſt the Holy Ghoſt, 261, 289.
Mancheſter, (*E. Montague*, E. of) his Actions and Character, 265, 270.
March, (*Rog. Mortimer*, E. of) his Character and Death, 70. —— 77.
—— (*Rog. Mortimer*, E. of) his Grandſon, next Heir to K. *Rich.* II. 94, 115.
—— (*Edm. Mortimer*, E. of) the next ſurviving Heir to both, 94, 97, 99, 103, 107.
—— (*Rich. Plantag.* E. of) his Nephew and Heir, 114. —— 116. See *York*.
—— (*Edw. Plantag.* E. of) his Son and Heir, 116, 121, 124. See *Edward* IV.
Margaret, (Siſter to *Edg. Atheling*) married to K. *Malcolm* III. of *Scotland*, 29, 33, 34, 178, 220. See *Maud*.
——— *Tudor*, (Elder Siſter to K. *Henry* VIII.) married to K. *James* IV. of *Scotland*, 147, 152, 200. See *Stuart*.
Mary (Q.) her Birth, Title, Succeſſion, Government, Marriage, Character and Death, 154, 177. —— 191.
—— (Q. of *Scotland*) her Birth, Title, Succeſſion, Marriages, Troubles, Character, and Death, 168, 172, 191. —— 193, 197. —— 207, 210. —— 216, 219. See *James* I.
Maud, (Pr. of *Scotland*) married to *Henry* I. 33. —— 35. —— united the *Saxon* and *Norman* Lines, 35, 38. See *Henry* II.
Merks, (Bp.) his memorable Speech againſt Uſurpation, 98, 99.
Mitchel, a deſperate Aſſaſſin, 316.

Mobb Revolutions, ruinous, 70. —— 72, 86, 87, 188, 193, 197, 198, 243, 249, 251. —— 254, 261, 267, 275, 335.
Moderation miſtaken, 241, 316, 321.
Monaſteries diſſolv'd, 160. —— 162.
Monck (G.) his Character and Conduct, in accompliſhing the Reſtoration, 289, 290, 298. —— 301, 307. See *Albemarle.*
Monmouth, (*Ja. Scot*, D. of) his Popularity, Character, Rebellion and Execution, 317. —— 319, 323, 325. —— 327, 333.
Montague, (*J. Nevill*, Ld.) a Commander for K. *Edw.* IV. created a Marq. Revolting, was ſlain, with his Brother *Warwick*, 126, 130. See *Warwick.*
——— (*Edw.*) Commander of the *Engliſh* Fleet, at the Reſtoration 300. See *Sandwich.*
MONTROSE (*Ja. Graham*, M. of) his glorious Actions in *Scotland*, for K. *Charles* I. 269, 272. —— on the King's Surrender, retired abroad, 273. —— returns again to ſerve K. *Charles* II. 283, 284. —— was betrayed, taken, and barbarouſly executed by the Covenanters, but triumphant even in Death, 284, 285. --- his Funeral magnificent, 305.
More, (Sir. *T.*) a Martyr for the Papal Supremacy, 158.
Morton, (*Ja. Dowglas*, E. of) his Character and Death, 201, 202, 205, 208, 211, 212.
Murray, (*Ja. Stuart*, E. of) his Character and Aſſaſſination, 199, 202. ---- 210.

N.

Nag's-head Fable, a Popiſh Impoſture, ſelf-condemn'd, 195, 196. *See* Challenge.

Naturalization of foreign Proteſtants, how dangerous, 176, 319.
Newcaſtle, (*W. Cavendiſh*, E. M. and D. of) his Character and Conduct in the Royal Cauſe, 261, 264, 265.
New Foreſt, made by *Will.* I. fatal to his Family, 29, 32.
New-River, brought to *London*, 229.
Next Heir, undiſputable, 191, 220. — 223, 280, 283, 301, 324.
Non-Conformity, how introduc'd, and promoted here. — 176, 208, 209, 222, 238. — 245, 249. —— 251, 254, 255, 260. — 262, 267, 303, 309, 319, 330.
Non-Reſiſtance. *See* Paſſive Obedience.
Norfolk, (*T. Mowbray*, D. of) died in Exile, 91.
——— (*T. Howard*, D. of) narrowly eſcaped Death, 166, 167.
——— (*T. Howard*, D. of) treacherouſly put to Death, 206, 207, 211, 212.
Normans; their Original, and Government here, 23. — 38.
Northampton, (*Spen. Compton*, E. of) his Character and Death, 260.
Northumberland, (*Rob. Mowbray*, E. of) his Character, 31.
——————— (*H. Percy*, E. of) his Character and Death, 89, 92, 93, 102. — 104.
——————— (*J. Dudley*, D. of) his Character, Trial, Plea, and Execution, 173. — 184.
——————— (*T. Percy*, E. of) his Character and Death, 207, 208.
Nottingham, (*T. Mowbray*, E. of) his Character, 89. — made a Duke, 91. See *Norfolk*.

O.

Oates (Titus) his Plot, Character, Perjuries and Proſecutions, 312. — 314, 320, 326.
Oaths, too little regarded by meer Politicians, 36, 53, 117, 209, 223, 259. — if unlawful, not to be kept, 122, 194. — much leſs to be repeated, 194. *See* Abjuration; Allegiance; Covenant; Engagement; Supremacy.
Obedience, to whom properly due, 56, 57, 187, 188, 204, 223, 240, 241, 250, 255, 274, 282, 292, 294, 296, 301, 305, 309, 318, 321, 324, 327, 331, 332. *See* Paſſive.
O'Neale, (Sir *Phelim.*) See *Macguire.*
Orange, (Prince of) his Marriage, Invaſion, and Proclamation, 312, 318, 332.
Original Contract, how broken, 221, 292, 337.
Orthodox Worſhip maintain'd, under Perſecution, 190, 303.
Overbury (Sir *T.*) how poiſon'd in the Tower, 225.
Oxford Univerſity, founded, 13. — eminently loyal, 258, 263, 264, 274.

P.

Palatine (Fred. V. Elect.) how choſen K. of *Bohemia*, 326. — 228.
——— *(Cha. Lodow.)* his Son, deſerted his Uncle K. *Cha.* I. and baſely courted the Rebels, 267.
Papiſts, in a Fanatic Cloke, 176, 184, 208, 259. — promoted the Rebellion, againſt K. *Cha.* I. 259. — triumph on the Martyrdom of Abp. *Laud*, 268. — clear the King of all Scandal, as to the *Iriſh* Maſſacre, 268, 269. — not the *only* King-killers, 316, 321. — 323.

PARKER (Abp.) his Conſecration juſtified, 195, 196. *See* Challenge.
Parliament, new modell'd, 59. — complaiſant to Power, 71, 72, 93, 97, 120. — 123, 129, 137, 138, 142, 164, 169, 178, 179, 213, — 215, 293, 294, 297. — idoliz'd by the Populace, 118, 142, 257, 258. — all ſubject to the King's Authority, 281. *See* Acts; Commons; Three Eſtates.
Paſſive Obedience, the expreſs Scripture Doctrine, 240, 250, 327 — and of all true Churchmen, 98, 187, 188, 331. — how miſunderſtood, 56, 57, 92, 181, 250, 294.
Patriots how diſtinguiſhable, 237. See *Euſtace*; *Merks*; *Monck*; *Montroſe*; *Wallace*; *Walworth*.
Peace, dearly bought, and precarious, 17, 76.
Pembroke (*W. Mareſchal*, E. of) his Character and Death, 52, 53.
——— (*Aymer de Valence*, E. of) his various Encounters with the *Scots*, 64, 65.
——— (*Jaſp. Tudor*, E. of) his Character, 124.
——— (*Anne Boleyn*, Marchs. of) married to K. *Henry* VIII. her Character and Death, 157, 158, 162, 163.
Penance, ſubmitted to by a great King, 41. — monſtrouſly impos'd! 234.
Penry, a notorious Incendiary, hang'd, 242.
Percy (Ld. *Henry*) his Character and Death, 103.
Perfidy, rewarded, 21, 38, 104.
Perkin Warbec; his Character and Death, 144. — 147.
Permiſſion and Providence, diſtinguiſh'd, 47, 288.
Perſecution, how provok'd, 184. — 188, 241, 242.
Petition of Right (ſo call'd) 235. — of the *Scotch* Covenanters, againſt the Liturgy, 243. — of the

the Apprentices and Porters &c. againſt Epiſcopacy, 251, 254. — of Rebels, to bring their King to a Trial, 98, 278. — to *Oliver*, to accept of the Crown, 294 — for the ſitting of the Parliament 319. — of the ſeven Biſhops to the King, 331, 332.

Petre, (*Fa.*) how made a Privy Counſellor, 329.

Philip of *Spain*; his Marriage, Character and Conduct, 185. — 187, 190, 192, 199, 216, 217. See *Mary*.

Plague, in *London*, 231, 307.

PLANTAGENETS; their Name, Title and Succeſſion, 38. — 141.

Plenty of Proviſions, 35.

Plots, of Papiſts and Puritans, frequent, 209, 210, 217, 220. — 223, 311. 322, 323.

Pole (Card.) reconciled this Kingdom to the Pope, 184, 286. — his Conſecration and Death, 195, 196.

Politicians chiefly guided by Intereſt, 36, 101, 114, 117, 142. — 159, 164, 165, 169, 173, 177. — 179, 184, 192, 193, 196. — 198, 208, 212. — 216, 219, 226. — 228, 234, 238, 239, 243 — 245, 253. — 255, 259, 260, 263, 272, 276. — 278, 283, 289, 290, 292, 294. — 297, 300, 309. — 315, 318, 319, 326. — 330, 333. — 337. — often defeated by their own Schemes, 114, 181. — 186, 196. — 199, 279, 280, 282, 287, 292, 301, 305, 306, 318, 319, 322.

Pope, a Promoter of Uſurpations, 26, 33, 96, 92, 220. — his Encroachments, 34, 48. — 50, 82, 150, 151, 154, 196, 199. — his prevarications, 50, 154, 155, 158. — his immenſe Extortions check'd, 57, 88, 96, 156, 157. — actually made a Priſoner, 153. — his

Juriſdiction aboliſh'd, 156, 159. — revived, 186. — again aboliſh'd, 194. — his Offers towards a Reconciliation, 199. — his artifices to increaſe our Diſſentions, 176, 196, 197, 208, 209.

Popery, not the Religion of Old *England*, 19. — propagated under a Puritan Veil, 176, 208, 209, 238. — 240, 259, 309. — how impoſſible to be recover'd here, 330.

Popiſh Plot, how proſecuted, 311, 315, 320, 321.

Poſſeſſion, no Title againſt Right, 38, 39, 111, 117, 118, 148, 181, 294.

Preachers, time-ſerving, ſcandalous, 72, 97, 134, 181, 197, 204.

Preſbyterians, co-eval with *Jeſuits*, 168. — their Temper, Principles and Practices, 176, 192, 193, 197, 198, 204, 208. — 210, 216. — 218, 235, 239. — 245, 249. — 255, 259. — 263, 267, 273, 284. — 288, 300, 302, 303, 308.

Printing, when firſt us'd here, 132.

Privilege abus'd, 59, 232, 236, 237, 247.

Proteſtants, not properly diſtinguiſh'd, 176, 177, 186. — 188, 192, 193, 197, 198, 208, 209, 215, 227, 238, 248, 279, 319, 322.

Providence manifeſt, 32, 34, 35, 38, 45, 75, 114, 134, 137, 141, 225, 282, 289, 294, 301. — ſometimes prophanely miſapplied, 27, 72, 97, 284, 287, 288. — our ſureſt Confidence, 181.

Prynn, (*W.*) a notorious Incendiary, 241, 251.

Public Good, the common Pretence in all Revolutions, 36, 76, 93, 258.

Puritans, in concert with *Papiſts*, 207. — 209, 217, 222, 271, 272.

Q.

QUEEN's Pregnancy and Delivery, how prov'd, 163, 332, 333.

R.

Rathbone, and others, in the Conſpiracy to fire *London*, 307. See *Hubert*.
Rebellion, unnatural, unwarrantable, and deteſtable, 41. — 43, 46, 56, 57, 92 98, 99, 104, 133. — 136, 179. — 184, 193, 197, 198, 201, 206, 212, 226. — 228, 243. — 245, 255. — 279, 282. — 289, 292. — 294, 297. — 300, 316. — 323, 325. — 327.
Recuſants, who, 223. *See* Oaths.
Reformation of Religion, in *England*, regular, and authoritative, 156, 159, 171, 175. — 177, 190, 193. — 196, 209, 210, 217, 218, 222, 225, 226, 229, 239 — 242, 248. — 250, 279, 280, 302, 303, 306, 320, 324, 330. — 332. — in *Scotland*, tumultuous and irregular, 192, 193, 197, 198, 204, 216, 218, 243. — 246, 254, 262, 263, 271. — 273, 283. — 287, 316. — 319, 325.
Reformers, falſly ſo call'd, 177, 184, 248, 25[illegible]. — 255, 258. — 263, 267. — 276, 282, 308. — 312. — 324.
Regicide, juſtly puniſh'd, 46, 75. — 77, 205, 212, 302.
Religion of the antient *Britons*, 5. — of the antient *Saxons*, 8. — 10, 19 — of the antient *Danes*, 21, 25. — never ſecured by Rebellion, 177, 181, 188, 197, 198, 226. — 228, 232, 236, 245, 261.
Republic; never heard of in early Ages, 4, 282.

Reſentment, ſtronger than Principle, 37, 92, 104, 127, 130, 136.
Reſignation, forc'd, void, 49, 72. — 74, 94, 99, 204.
Reſiſtance of Authority, condemn'd, 50, 98, 99, 186. — 188, 197, 198, 240, 249, 250, 253. — 258, 264, 273, 274, 281, 305, 308, 315. — 323, 325. — 327, 331, 332.
Reſtitution a neceſſary Duty, 106, 107.
Reſtoration, a Public Bleſſing, 26, 38, 95, 131, 301. — 306. — providentially effected, 114, 282, 294, 301.
Reſumption of Uſurpers Grants, 39.
Revolters, cenſur'd, 20, 51, 120, 185.
Revolutions, unnatural and ruinous, 15, 17, 26, 36. — 38, 46. — 56, 69 — 75, 92. — 98, 101, 133. — 140, 177. — 186, 200. — 206, 210. — 216, 226. — 228, 271. — 280, 282. — 297, 325, 326. — bravely oppos'd, 61, 64, 98, 99, 179, 181, 204, 269, 272. — 274, 277, 283. — 285.
Richard I. (K.) his Conduct and Government, Character and Death, 40. — 46.
——— II. (K.) his early Succeſſion, troubleſome Reign, and tragical End, 85. — 96, 101, 102. See *Henry* IV.
——— III. his Uſurpation, barbarous Character and Death, 131. — 141. See *Glouceſter*.
Richlieu (Card.) in concert with the Rebel-Covenanters here, 234, 245.
Richmond (*H. Tudor*, E. of) his Title, Conduct and Character, 135. — 149. See *Henry* VII.
Ridley (Bp.) his Character and Death, 181, 186, 189.
Right, not always ſucceſsful, 23, 24, 29, 28, 26, 33, 34, 36, 46, 47, 51, 52, 56, 94, 97, 103, 107, 114. — 124, 135, 146, 203.

203, 204, 270. — 272, 277, 283. — 285, 288. — nor acquired by Rebellion, 99, 106, 117, 118. — nor loſt by Time, 122, 123. *See* Conqueſt; Succeſs.

Riots in the Houſe of Commons, 236, 237, 312. — in *Edinburgh*, 242. — 244. — in *London*, 249, 254, 275. See *London*.

Rivers (*Ant. Woodville*, E. of) beheaded, 134, 135.

Rizzio (*Dav.*) barbarouſly aſſaſſinated, 201, 202.

Robbers carefully ſuppreſs'd, 13, 29.

Robert, Duke of *Normandy*, his Character, 29. — 35.

Rocheſter (*Rob. Carr*, Viſc. of) 224, 225. See *Somerſet*.

Rochford (*G. Boleyn*, Viſc. of) beheaded with his Siſter Q. *Anne*, 157, 162, 163.

Rolfe (Maj.) deſigning to aſſaſſinate K. *Cha.* I. ſet free by a vile *Ignoramus*, 276.

ROMANS, their Dominion here, 3. — 6.

Rump of a Parliament; their due Character, *&c.* 260, 278. — 280, 286, 291, 297. — 300.

Rupert (Pr.) a Commander in the Service of his Uncle K. *Cha.* I. 258, 259, 261, 262, 265. — blam'd for his Loyalty, by his elder Brother! 267. — diſcharged the King's Service for Miſconduct, 270, 271. — afterwards imploy'd by K. *Char.* II. againſt the *Dutch*, 307, 310. See *Palatine*.

Ruſſel (Lord *Will.*) his Character, Trial and Execution, 317. — 323.

Rutland (*Edm. Plantag.* E. of) baſely butcher'd in cold Blood, 124.

Rye-Houſe Plot diſcover'd, and proſecuted, 322, 323.

S.

Sacrilege, compared with Idolatry, 179. — too com-

common, 28, 160. — 162, 169, 177, 197, 219, 261.
St. *Alban*, the firſt Martyr here, 5.
St. *Paul*, our Apoſtle, 5.
St. *Paul*'s Cathedral built, 10.
Saints (ſo call'd) an Army of them, 287.
Saliſbury (*J. Montague*, E. of) ſurpriz'd and beheaded, 89, 101.
——— (*T. Montague*, E. of) ſlain at the Seige of *Orleans*, 112.
——— (*Rich. Nevill*, E. of) a zealous *Yorkiſt*, taken and beheaded, 119, 124.
SANCROFT (Abp.) his Character and Sufferings, 320, 324, 331, 332.
Sandwich (*Edw. Montague*, E. of) his Character and Death, 300, 310.
Saviour of the Nation! (blaſphemouſly ſo call'd) 313. *See* Deliverers.
SAXONS, their Character, Settlement and Succeſſion here, 3, 6. — 18, 23, 24. — not yet under the Papal Supremacy, 19.
Schiſm, promoted by Popiſh Inſtruments, 195. — 197, 208. — 210.
SCOTS, converted early, 10. — the Succeſſion to their Crown, conteſted, 61. — 63. — its Independency aſſerted, 63.—65, 78, 79.—their Proceedings about the Reformation, 192. — 194, 197. — 206, 210. — 212, 216, 223, 224, 238, 239, 242. — 245. — their concert with the Rebels in *England*, 246, 247, 250. — 254, 260. — 263. — their Treatment of the King, 273, 283. — 288. See *Argyle*; Covenanters; General Aſſembly; *Mary*; *Montroſe*; *Preſbyterians*; Reformation; *Sharp*; *Stuarts*.
Scripture prophanely wreſted, 97.
Settlement upon Uſurpers, null, 122, 179, 183

Seymour (*T.* Lord) his Character, Marriage, Attainder, and Execution, 173, 174.
Shaftſbury (*Anth. Aſhley Cooper*, E. of) his Character, Conduct, Diſgrace, Proſecution and Flight, 310. — 323. *See* Arbitrary; Aſſociation; Cabal; Excluſion; Faction; *Ignoramus*; *Monmouth*; *Oates*; Plots; *Scots*; Teſt; Toleration; *York*; Zeal.
SHARP (Abp.) his Conſecration, Character, and barbarous Aſſaſſination, 305, 306, 316, 317.
SHELDON (Abp.) his Promotion and Character, 306, 324.
Shrewsbury (*J. Talbot*, E. of) taken Priſoner in *France*, and ſlain, 113, 117.
Sidney (*Alg.*) his Character and Execution, 323.

SIEGE of

Acon, 43, 44.
Banbury, 258.
Bolton, 265,
Bouloign, 167, 172, 173.
Briſtol, 262, 271.
Calais, 80, 114, 190.
Cirenceſter, 260.
Colcheſter, 277.
Compeigne, 113.
Edinburgh, 244, 287.
Exeter, 262.
Glouceſter, 262.
Harfleur, 107, 108.
Hull, 262.
Latham, 265.
Leiceſter, 270.
London, 18, 53.
Marlborough, 259.
Nantwich, 262.
Newark, 298, 262.
Newcaſtle, 265.
Orleans, 121, 113, 200.
Oxford, 274.
Pavia, 153.
Plymouth, 262.
Rochel, 237, 238.
Terouenne, 152.
Tournay, 152.
Vernevil, 45.
Worceſter, 103.
York, 265,

Simnel (*Lamb.*) an Impoſtor, defeated and taken, 143, 144.
Somerſet (*Edm. Beaufort*, D. of) a zealous *Lancaſtrian*, ſlain, 116, 119, 120.

Somerſet (Edm. Beaufort, D. of) his Son, taken and beheaded, 131.

——— (*Edw. Seymour*, D. of) Protector, his Character and Death, 170. — 175.

——— (*Rob. Carr*, E. of) his unhappy Marriage and Conviction, 225.

Southampton (T. Wriotheſley, E. of) his Character, 171. — 173.

SPALATO (*Ant. de Dominis*, Archbp. of) conformed to the Church of *England*, and aſſiſted in ſeveral Conſecrations here, 225. — decoy'd to *Rome*, and died in the Inquiſition, 226.

Spaniſh Armada defeated, 216, 217.

Spencer (Bp.) ſuppreſſed the Levellers in *Norfolk*, 88. See *Wincheſter*.

Spirit in the Wall, an Impoſture, 188.

Sports, how far indulg'd on *Sundays*, 226, 240.

SPOTSWOOD (Abp.) his Conſecration, 223, 224.

Stafford (W. Howard, Viſc.) his Trial and Execution, 320, 321.

Standing Armies, encourag'd by Uſurpers, ſometimes prove their Ruin, 282. — a great Grievance, 311, 312, 328. *See* Guards.

Stanley (T. Lord) his Character and Conduct, 134, 135, 139. — 141. See *Derby*.

——— (Sir *William*) ungratefully put to Death, 139, 140, 145, 146.

Stapleton (Bp.) torn in Pieces by the Mob, 70.

Star-Chamber aboliſh'd, 252.

Stephen, his Uſurpation and Character, 36. — 39.

Stigand (Abp.) his Character and Deprivation, 27.

Strafford (Tho. Wentworth, E. of) his great Character, Attainder and Death, 237, 247, 251. — 253.

STUARTS, their Hereditary Right, Succeſſion, Government and Character, 102, 147, 167, 168,

168, 197, 199. — 204, 209, 213. — 215, 218. — 220, &c.
Subjects arms againſt their Sovereign, condemn'd, 56, 73, 74. — 98. — 100, 183, 197, 198, 221, 247, 257, 325. *See* Arms; Authority Obedience; Reſiſtance; Uſurpation; Zeal.
Subſcriptions, moſt forward to promote Rebellions, 257, 258. *See* Loans.
Succeſs the only Sanction for Rebellion, 74, 120, 121.
Succeſſion of the Crown, Hereditary, 4, 11. — 18, 23. — 25, 33, 34, 39, 46, 51, 52, 56, 94, 95, 99, 118, 122. — 126, 135, 221, 280, 283, 301. — and indefeaſible, 123, 179, 320, 324. *See* Hereditary.
Suffering for a good Cauſe, an Honour, 98, 99, 244, 285, 331, 332.
Suffolk (*W. de la Pole*, D. of) exiled, intercepted, and murder'd, 115.
——— (*C. Brandon*. D. of) his Marriage with the Queen Dowager of *France*, 152.
——— (*H. Grey*, D. of) his Marriage, Character and Death, 178, 180. — 185. See *Grey*.
Sunday, how variouſly reſpected, 226, 240. *See* Sports.
Sunderland (*Rob. Spencer*, E. of) his great Influence, Character and Diſgrace, 326. — 329, 332. — 334.
Supplies, how obſtinately refus'd to the Crown, heretofore, 230. — 234, 242, 247, 255, 311, 312. *See* Commons; Faction; Loans; Subſcriptions; Taxes; War.
Supremacy, Eccleſiaſtical, where ſettled, 19, 32, 40, 41, 156. — 159, 184. — 186, 193, 194, 196, 199, 223, 281, 309.
Surry (*T. Holland*, D. of) beheaded, 101.
——— (*T. Howard*, E. of) General againſt the *Scots*, 152.

Surry (*H. Howard*, E. of) beheaded, 166.
Synodical Acts of Convocation in 1640, how authorized, 248.—250.

T.

Taxes, immenſe, by Rebels and Uſurpers, 27. 30, 32, 257, 258, 293, 294.
Teniſon (Dr.) ordain'd Prieſt, by a then depriv'd Bp. 203.
Teſts of Religion and Loyalty, 223, 277, 279, 280, 311.
Thanſgivings (ſome) blaſphemous, 284, 288. *See* Providence.
Three Eſtates, who, 221, 280, 281.—Nothing, without the King their Head, 95, 135, 198, 304.—the Biſhops the firſt and eſſential, 246, 254, 304.—a third pretended, in their Place, 246.
Throne, Hereditary, how *vacant*, 70, 337.
Time-ſervers, ſcandalous, 134, 135, 181, 187, 232.
Tithe, confirm'd to the Church, by the old Law of the Land, 18.
Toleration advantageous to Papiſts, 222, 309, 310, 330.—never granted by the Preſbyterians, when in their Power, 269.
Tournament, ſolemniz'd to honour the City of *London*, 84.
Tower of *London*, built, 29, 32.
Traquaire (*John Stuart*, E. of) his Character and Conduct, 243, 246, 272.
Traytors, deſervedly hated, 21, 22, 51.

TREATIES.

Aix la Chapelle, 309.
Berwick, 76.
Breda, 306, 308.
Bretigny, 81, 82, 107,
Dover, 49.
Edinburgh, 198, 202.

Holy-

Holy-Land, 44. *Rippon*, 247, 250.
London, 250, 251. *Troye*, 109, 111.
Newport, 277, 278. *Uxbridge*, 268.
Pyrenees, 298.

Trent, a Council call'd there, 168.
TUDORS, their Title, Characters and Succeſſion here, 135. — 219.

V. U.

Vacant Throne, how! 70.
Venner's Enthuſiaſtic Inſurrection, 304.
Uniformity in Religious Worſhip, a Grievance to Fanaticks, 176, 238. — 240, 242, 244, 262. — rigidly exacted in their own Impoſitions, 232, 236, 240, 245, 246, 255, 260. — 263, 277, 282, 287, 302, 203. *See* Common-Prayer; Moderation; Toleration.
Union of the *Saxons* and *Normans*, 29, 33. — 39. — of *York* and *Lancaſter*, 141. — 143, 149 — of *England* and *Scotland*, 147, 152, 200, 202, 220.
Vox Populi, often miſapplied, 72. *See* Providence.
Uſurpation, its ruinous Effects, 6, 7, 24. — 28, 31. — 35, 36. — 39, 47. — 56, 92. — 101, 114 — 131, 133. — 140, 177. — 186, 203. — 206, 210. — 216, 226. — 228, 242. — 247, 251. — 263, 265 — 268, 270. — 279, 282 — 289, 325, 326. — promoted by the Pope, 26, 33, 96, *&c.* — will blacken the faireſt Character, 38, 104, 185, 219, 220. — baſely varniſh'd over, 15, 97, 134, 135, 181, 296 — bravely oppos'd, 98, 99, 179, 181, 185, 264, 269, 272. — 274, 283. — 285.
Uſurpers, magnified by Time-ſervers, 15, 97, 134.

134, 135, 181, 294. — their Acts null, 126, 183, 305. — their wicked Artifices, 47, 95, 96, 138, 177 — 179, 201. — 207, 276. — 280, 282, &c. — jealous of their Power, 106, 138. — conscious of their Demerits, 106, 182, 293.

W.

Wakeman (Sir *G.*) his Trial, discredited *Oates*'s Plot, 313.

WALES possess'd by the antient *Britons*, 7, 9. — submitted to *England*, 60, 61. — the Prince's Title, 65. — incorporated with *England*, 168.

Wallace, (Sir *W.*) a gallant *Scotch* Patriot, ungenerously put to Death, 64.

Walworth (Sir *W.*) kill'd *Wat* the Tyler, 87.

Warbeck (*Perk.*) his Character and Death, 144. — 146.

WARHAM (Abp.) oppos'd the Pope's Dispensation, 151.

Wars, a Pretence of Taxes, 57, 144, 147.

Warwick (*T. Beauchamp*, E. of) banish'd, 89. — 91.

——— (*Rich. Nevil*, E. of) a zealous *Yorkist*, — revolting was slain, 119. — 121, 124, 126. — 130.

——— (*E. Plantag.* E. of) Heir to Clarence, beheaded, 143, 146, 147.

——— (*J. Dudley*, E. of) created a Duke, 175. See *Northumberland*.

——— (*Robt. Rich*, E. of) Commands the Fleet for the Rebels, 257. — how quitted, 270.

Watson and *Clarke*, &c. their Plot and Execution, 220, 221.

Wat the Tyler, his riotous Insurrection, and Death, 86, 87.

Weir (Maj.) a Monſter of Impiety! 317. See *Extempore* Prayer, *Sharp*.
Welſh, the antient *Britons*, loyal and brave, 3, 7, 37, 101. — 103, 116, 119, 120, 139, 258, 271, 277.
Weſtmerland (*Ra. Nevil*, E. of) Promoter of the *Lancaſtrian* Uſurpation, 92.
——— (*Cha. Nevil*, E. of) died in Exile, 207, 208.
Weſtminſter, once a Biſhop's See, 162.
——— Abby built, 24, 60.
——— Hall built, 32.
White-Hall, forfeited to the Crown, 155.
White Roſe, denotes the better Title, 117. 120.
Wickliffe, his Character and Principles, 85, 91, 109.
William I. his Deſcent, Invaſion, Government, Character and Death, 25. — 30, 34.
——— II. his Acceſſion, Government, Character and Death, 30. — 32.
——— Son of *Henry* I. drown'd, 34, 35.
——— Son of *Stephen*, made no Pretenſion, 38, 39.
——— Pr. of *Orange*, proclaimed K. 337.
Willis (Sir *Rich.*) corrupted by *Oliver*, 298.
Wiltſhire and *Ormond*, (*Tho. Boleyn*, E. of) his Character, 157.
Wincheſter (*Hugh de Spencer*, E. of) He and his Son both purſued to Death, by Q. *Iſabella*, and her Rebel-Barons, 68. — 71.
Windſor-Caſtle rebuilt and improv'd, 84.
Witneſſes, enough to convict a Perſon prejudg'd 162. — of the Birth of a Prince, 163, 332, 333. — on the Popiſh Plot, 312. — 314, 320. — on the *Rye-houſe* Plot, 322, 323.
Wolſey (Card.) his Riſe, Fall, Character and Death,

Death, 51, 152, 154. —— 156. See *Henry* VIII. Pope, Reformation.
Woodstock-Park, the first in *England*, 35.
Worcester (*T. Percy*, E. of) defeated, taken and beheaded, 103.
Wyat (Sir *Tho.*) his Rebellion and Execution, 185, 186.

Y.

York (*Edm. Plantag.* D. of) his Character, 85, 92.
—— (*Rich. Plantag.* D. of) his Character, Title, Claim, Compromise and Death, 114. — 124.
—— (*Rich. Plantag.* D. of) his Grandson, murder'd in the Tower, 132. — 135, 144. — 146.
—— (*Cha. Stuart*, D. of) created Pr. of *Wales*, 224. See *Charles* I.
—— (*Ja. Stuart* D. of) his Son; his Character, Conduct, Troubles, Succession and Exile, 295, 306, 307, 310, 311, 315, 317, 319, 320, 324, &c. See *James* II.

Z.

Zeal, without Judgment, mischievous, 188, 193, 197, 209, 238. — 249, 261, 287, 297, 306, 327, &c. — often a meer Disguise for Self-interest or wicked Policy, 173. — 184, 197. — 220, 226, 228, 230. — 234. — 246, 255, 259. — 263, 267. — 272, 275. — 279, 310. — 323, 328, &c. See Associations; Constitution; Covenant; Difference; Grievances; Moderation; Privilege; Protestant; Public Good; Reformation; Resistance; Right; Succession; Uniformity.

BRITISH MUSEUM 14 NOV 89